



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

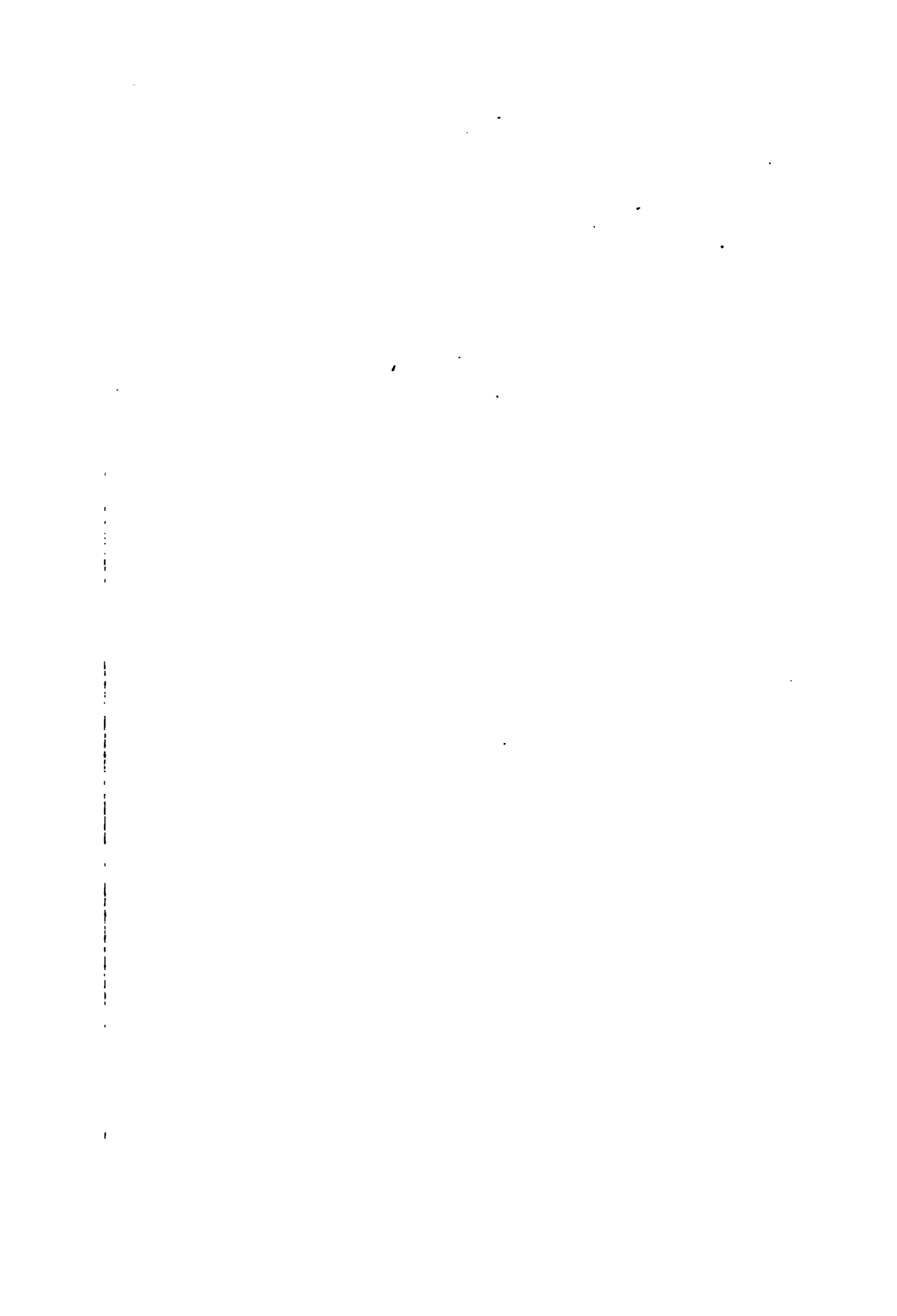
NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 06728669 4





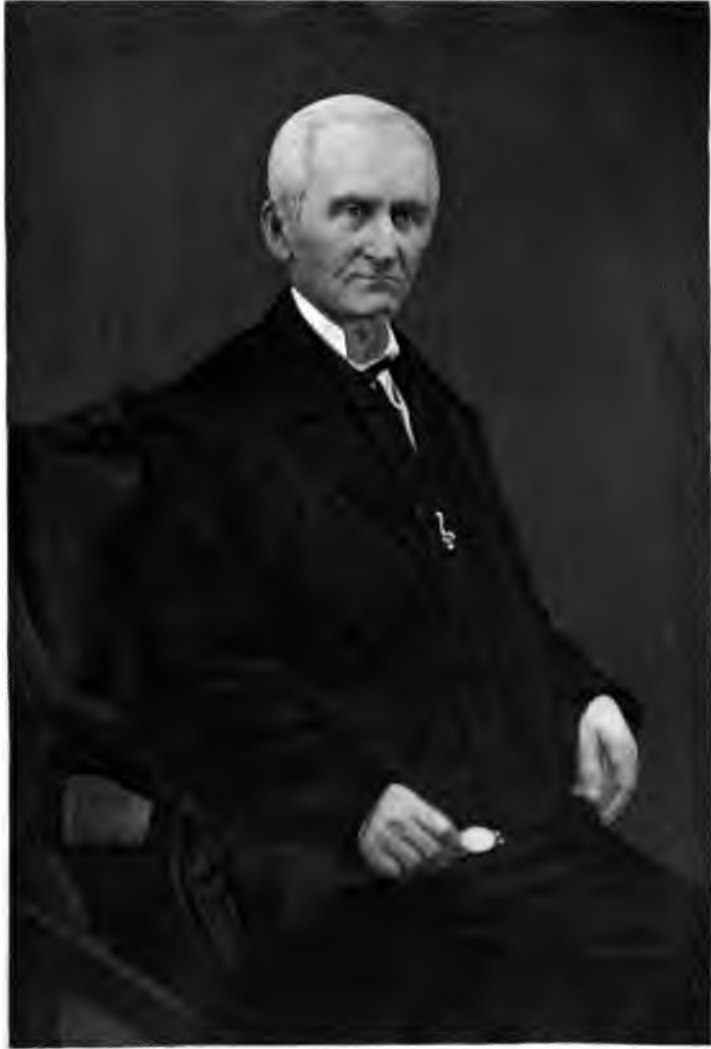


THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

R

L



Jonathan Worth

Biographical History of North Carolina

From Colonial Times
to the Present

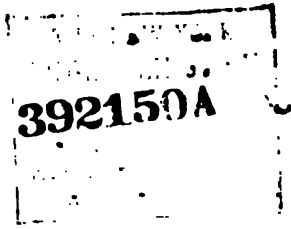


Editors

Samuel A. Ashe
Stephen B. Weeks
Charles L. Van Noppen

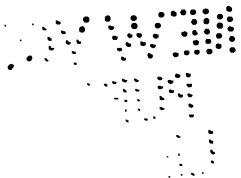
VOLUME III

Charles L. Van Noppen
PUBLISHER
Greensboro, N. C.
MCMVI



COPYRIGHT, 1906
BY CHARLES L. VAN NIPPEN

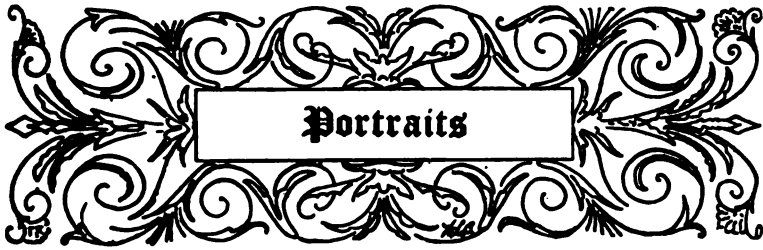
All rights reserved





| | |
|----------------------------|---------------|
| KEMP P. BATTLE | Chapel Hill |
| JOHN C. BUXTON | Winston-Salem |
| THEO. F. DAVIDSON | Asheville |
| JUNIUS DAVIS | Wilmington |
| RUFUS A. DOUGHTON | Sparta |
| THOMAS J. JARVIS | Greenville |
| JAMES Y. JOYNER | Raleigh |
| CHARLES D. McIVER | Greensboro |
| WILLIAM L. POTEAT | Wake Forest |
| JAMES H. SOUTHGATE | Durham |
| CHARLES W. TILLET | Charlotte |

10-1-11



| | | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------|-----|
| WORTH, JONATHAN | <i>Frontispiece</i> | |
| ALEXANDER, EBEN | <i>facing</i> | 1 |
| ANGIER, MALBOURN A. | " | 6 |
| BLAIR, WILLIAM ALLEN | " | 10 |
| BRADSHAW, WILLIAM GASTON | " | 28 |
| BRODNAX, JOHN GRAMMER | " | 32 |
| CAMERON, DUNCAN | " | 43 |
| CAMERON, PAUL CARRINGTON | " | 48 |
| CAMERON, BENNEHAN | " | 56 |
| DUKE, WASHINGTON | " | 84 |
| DUKE, BENJAMIN NEWTON | " | 94 |
| DUKE, JAMES BUCHANAN | " | 102 |
| ERWIN, WILLIAM ALLEN | " | 114 |
| FRIES, FRANCIS | " | 129 |
| FRIES, HENRY WILLIAM | " | 135 |
| FRIES, JOHN WILLIAM | " | 138 |
| FRIES, FRANCIS HENRY | " | 141 |
| FRIES, HENRY ELIAS | " | 152 |
| GOLD, PLEASANT DANIEL | " | 157 |
| HOLDEN, WILLIAM WOODS | " | 184 |
| HUFHAM, JAMES DUNN | " | 225 |
| KENAN, THOMAS STEPHEN | " | 248 |



| | |
|-------------------------------------|------|
| ADVISORY BOARD | vii |
| CONTENTS | ix |
| PORTRAITS | xiii |
| CONTRIBUTORS | xv |
| ALEXANDER, EBEN | 1 |
| ANGIER, MALBOURNE A. | 6 |
| BLAIR, WILLIAM ALLEN | 10 |
| BLOODWORTH, TIMOTHY | 15 |
| BLOUNT, WILLIAM | 25 |
| ✓BRADSHAW, WILLIAM GASTON | 28 |
| BRODNAX, JOHN GRAMMER | 32 |
| BURTON, ROBERT | 39 |
| CAMERON, DUNCAN | 43 |
| CAMERON, PAUL CARRINGTON | 48 |
| CAMERON, BENNEHAN | 56 |
| CASWELL, RICHARD | 65 |
| DOBBS, ARTHUR | 80 |
| DUKE, WASHINGTON | 84 |
| ✓DUKE, BENJAMIN NEWTON | 94 |
| DUKE, JAMES BUCHANAN | 102 |
| ERWIN, WILLIAM ALLEN | 114 |
| FARRAGUT, GEORGE | 122 |
| FRIES, FRANCIS | 129 |

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-----|
| FRIES, HENRY WILLIAM | 135 |
| FRIES, JOHN WILLIAM | 138 |
| FRIES, FRANCIS HENRY | 141 |
| FRIES, HENRY ELIAS | 152 |
| GOLD, PLEASANT DANIEL | 157 |
| HAYWOOD, JOHN | 164 |
| HAYWOOD, WILLIAM | 168 |
| HEWES, JOSEPH | 172 |
| HILL, WHITMEL | 181 |
| HOLDEN, WILLIAM WOODS | 184 |
| HOLMES, GABRIEL | 207 |
| HOWARD, MARTIN | 210 |
| HOWELL, REDNAP | 216 |
| HUFHAM, JAMES DUNN | 225 |
| JOYNER, ANDREW | 236 |
| KENAN, JAMES | 241 |
| KENAN, THOMAS STEPHEN | 248 |
| KENAN, WILLIAM RAND | 253 |
| LANE, JOEL | 258 |
| LILLINGTON, ALEXANDER | 261 |
| MARTIN, JOSIAH | 269 |
| MARTIN, ALEXANDER | 274 |
| MOORE, WALTER WILLIAM | 281 |
| MURRAY, JAMES | 288 |
| NASH, FRANCIS | 292 |
| O'BRIEN, WILLIAM THOMAS | 303 |
| PAGE, ALLISON FRANCIS | 308 |
| PAGE, WALTER HINES | 315 |
| PAGE, HENRY ALLISON | 320 |
| PAGE, ROBERT NEWTON | 325 |
| QUINCE, PARKER | 331 |

CONTENTS

xi

| | |
|---|-----|
| REYNOLDS, RICHARD JOSHUA | 334 |
| ROCHESTER, NATHANIEL | 341 |
| RODMAN, WILLIAM BLOUNT, SR. | 344 |
| RODMAN, WILLIAM BLOUNT, JR. | 355 |
| RODMAN, JOHN CROOM | 362 |
| ROUNTREE, GEORGE | 365 |
| ROWAN, MATTHEW | 372 |
| RUMPLE, JETHRO | 376 |
| SAUNDERS, ROMULUS MITCHELL | 386 |
| SCHWEINITZ, EMIL ALEXANDER DE | 394 |
| SPENCER, CORNELIA PHILLIPS | 401 |
| STEDMAN, CHARLES MANLY | 406 |
| TURNER, JAMES | 412 |
| TURNER, JOSIAH, JR. | 415 |
| WILLIAMS, JOHN | 427 |
| WORTH, JONATHAN | 435 |
| WORTH, JOHN MILTON | 454 |
| WORTH, JOSEPH ADDISON | 461 |
| WORTH, BARZILLAI GARDNER | 466 |
| WORTH, DAVID GASTON | 473 |
| WORTH, WILLIAM HENRY | 478 |

| | | |
|---|---------------|-----|
| KENAN, WILLIAM RAND | <i>facing</i> | 253 |
| MOORE, WALTER WILLIAM | " | 281 |
| O'BRIEN, WILLIAM THOMAS | " | 303 |
| PAGE, ALLISON FRANCIS | " | 308 |
| PAGE, WALTER HINES | " | 315 |
| PAGE, HENRY ALLISON | " | 320 |
| PAGE, ROBERT NEWTON | " | 325 |
| REYNOLDS, RICHARD JOSHUA | " | 334 |
| RODMAN, WILLIAM BLOUNT, SR. | " | 344 |
| RODMAN, WILLIAM BLOUNT, JR. | " | 355 |
| RODMAN, JOHN CROOM | " | 362 |
| ROUNTREE, GEORGE | " | 365 |
| RUMPLE, JETHRO | " | 376 |
| SCHWEINITZ, EMIL ALEXANDER DE | " | 394 |
| SPENCER, CORNELIA PHILLIPS | " | 401 |
| STEDMAN, CHARLES MANLY | " | 406 |
| TURNER, JOSIAH, JR. | " | 415 |
| WORTH, JOHN MILTON | " | 454 |
| WORTH, JOSEPH ADDISON | " | 461 |
| WORTH, BARZILLAI GARDNER | " | 466 |
| WORTH, DAVID GASTON | " | 473 |
| WORTH, WILLIAM HENRY | " | 478 |



| | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| SAMUEL A. ASHE | CLEMENT MANLY, A.M. |
| JOHN SPENCER BASSETT, PH.D. | EDWIN MIMS, M.A., PH.D. |
| CULLEN A. BATTLE | JAMES H. MYROVER |
| WILLIAM A. BLAIR, A.M., LL.D. | FRANK NASH |
| EUGENE C. BROOKS, A.B. | WILLIAM S. PEARSON, A.B. |
| JAMES O. CARR, PH.B. | THOMAS M. PITTMAN |
| REV. JOHN N. COLE | CHARLES H. ROBINSON |
| WILLIAM E. DODD, PH.D. | RT. REV. E. RONDTHALER, D.D. |
| R. M. DOUGLAS, A.M., LL.D. | STERLING RUFFIN, M.D. |
| WILLIAMSON W. FULLER | JOHN B. SHEARER, D.D., LL.D. |
| EDWARD J. HALE, A.B. | E. W. SIKES, PH.D. |
| REV. JOHN H. HALL | JOHN H. SMALL |
| J. G. DE R. HAMILTON, A.M. | MRS. GEORGE T. WINSTON |
| MARSHALL DE L. HAYWOOD | CORNELIA P. SPENCER, LL.D. |
| ROBERT P. KERR, D.D. | RICHARD T. VANN, A.B., D.D. |

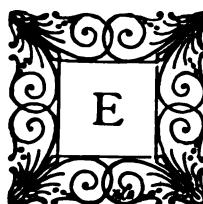




Yours very truly,
Eben Alexander.



EBEN ALEXANDER



EBEN ALEXANDER was born in Knoxville, Tennessee, on the 9th day of March, 1851. His father, Ebenezer Alexander, son of Adam Rankin and Leah Reagan Alexander, a man of singular justice, kindness and thoughtfulness for others, was for fifteen years judge of the second Circuit Court of Tennessee. Adam Rankin Alexander was a man of influence in his section, which he represented in the United States Congress from 1822-27.

His mother, Margaret McClung, was admired by all who knew her for her fine judgment, and was beloved for her gentle manners and wide charities. Although she died when her son was only fourteen years old, her influence has profoundly affected his whole life. She was the daughter of Charles McClung, an able young surveyor, who laid off the streets of the new town, married the daughter of the founder, became a member of the constitutional convention of Tennessee and left a large estate. Her mother's brother, Hugh Lawson White, represented Tennessee in the United States Senate, and received the electoral vote of several States for the Presidency in 1836. Her grandfather, James White, was a native of Iredell County, North Carolina; located land grants received for services in the Revolutionary War near the mouth of the French Broad River, was the founder of Knoxville, took a prominent part in the movements that led to the formation

of the State government, was a member of the third United States Congress and a general in the Creek War.

In boyhood young Alexander showed such fondness for books that his guardian determined to put him in the path that leads to a literary life. Accordingly, after thorough preparation at home, in the fall of 1869 he was sent to Yale College at New Haven, Connecticut. And, indeed, Yale has well served North Carolina through the training she gave George E. Badger, Elisha Mitchell, W. N. H. Smith, Denison Olmstead, Thomas P. Devereux, Edwin A. Anderson and Eben Alexander. The opportunities, the associations, the traditions of this great institution charmed the young student and fired his ambition. His popularity is attested by his election to the Psi Upsilon and Skull and Bones societies, and his high rank in class is shown by his election to Phi Beta Kappa, membership in which is restricted to men of the highest grade in scholarship. His alma mater has never had a more loyal son, and to this day no one watches with greater eagerness every contest in which her representatives engage, and no one hails with greater joy the triumph of the dark blue pennants of Yale.

The year in which he was graduated, 1873, he returned to his old home to become tutor of ancient languages in the University of Tennessee. The writer of this sketch remembers that it fell to the lot of the young teacher to take charge of a Greek class whose members had been pupils of Frederick D. Allen. Some of the students were as old as their teacher. It must have been a trying time for the young collegian, but his victory was as quickly won as Caesar's over Pharnaces. Every man realized that there stood before him not

"A tutor rough to common men,
But honeying at the whisper of a lord."

Each one recognized, instead, the gentleman, the scholar and the born teacher, who had come like Edith in Aylmer's Field,

"With a voice of comfort and an open hand of help."

He was married to Miss Marion Howard Smith, the daughter of the Rev. J. Howard Smith, the rector of the Episcopal Church at Knoxville, and subsequently pastor of the Reformed Episcopal Church at Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Four children have been born to them: Eleanor, the wife of Professor A. H. Patterson of Athens, Georgia; Eben, a physician of Knoxville, Tennessee; John Howard, who died in 1899 while a student at the University of North Carolina, and Margaret McClung.

At the age of twenty-six Dr. Alexander was elected professor of ancient languages in the University of Tennessee, and a few years later was made chairman of the faculty. However, feeling that his tastes were essentially literary rather than administrative, he resigned his position in the Tennessee University to accept the professorship of Greek in the University of North Carolina. He began his work in this State in the fall of 1886. How skillfully and faithfully that work has been done is known by all who have come under his tuition.

It is not alone in his department that he endeavors to be of real service to those about him. The college library claims his attention next to his class-room work. In an address at the Carnegie Library at Charlotte, 1904, he stated that there had scarcely been a day in thirty years in which he had not spent an hour's time in a college library. Among those who have long been laboring to build up the great library now at the University, no one is entitled to greater praise, and no one rejoices more at the prospect of the speedy culmination of the plans which have been formed for a new library building.

He has shown in many ways his deep interest in college athletics and in all that tends to develop physically, mentally and spiritually the young men around him.

In April, 1893, he was appointed by President Cleveland envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to Greece, Roumania and Servia. The *Charlotte Observer* said at the time: "Dr. Alexander will be in entire sympathy with Greek feeling, thought and traditions." The *Raleigh News and Observer* compared the appointment to that of Hawthorne, Irving, Bancroft, Motley and

others who had received similar recognition because of scholarship and literary ability. Securing leave of absence from the trustees of the University, he sailed for Athens in May, 1893, and remained abroad four years. These were fruitful years for the Greek professor and useful to his country. It is safe to say that at no foreign port were American interests more honestly and zealously guarded, and at no court in Europe were American courtesy and dignity more delicately shown than at the court of Greece by our minister and his charming wife and daughter. He entered heartily into the plan for the revival of the Olympic games, which took place in Athens in 1896, and were the most splendid athletic exhibitions of modern times. *Harper's Weekly*, September 28, 1895, said :

"The first subscription that reached the committee's hands was not from a born Greek, but from Mr. E. Alexander, United States Minister to Greece, who, nevertheless, is looked upon and claimed as a true Hellene, both by his wide acquaintance with the Greek language and literature and his whole-hearted sympathy with the country and its people."

The *Acropolis*, the leading newspaper of Athens, contained the following reference to the American minister and his work :

"The Athenian people have heard with sorrow of the proposed departure of the American Minister, Mr. Alexander. Greece is indeed losing a highly valued friend, and Athens especially will miss one of her most sympathetic personalities. A scholar in the widest significance of the word, but not, for all that, the less of a diplomat, although the diplomatic activity of the American legation at Athens is limited; deeply learned in Greek language and literature, he has loved Greece not with the soulless interest of an archæologist, but with the warm love of a man interested in the prosperity of Greece of to-day. He has let no opportunity pass of showing this interest practically. The success of the Olympic games, through the coming of the American athletes, who gave such life to that athletic meeting and insured its success, was due to Mr. Alexander. A genuine representative of a democratic people, he has maintained a charming simplicity of manner without petty diplomatic affectation, and his house has been open with the utmost hospitality to every Greek who sought an interview with the American Minister, and to all of his compatriots, who have carried away the same good impressions of their diplomatic representative. It is a pity that we are losing such a friend."

Meanwhile, recognition of his worth had come in the form of the degree of Doctor of Laws from institutions in his native State and in the State of his adoption.

It is a far cry from the *Acropolis* to a professor's chair at Chapel Hill, but when his term of office expired, the diplomat gladly put aside the business of the nation to take up again his work for the young men of North Carolina.

At home again among the cedars, in the midst of his books and pictures and pets, he spends in the spirit of service a life whose law is the Golden Rule.

"We live in deeds, not years;
In feelings, not in figures on a dial."

Edward P. Moses.



Raleigh and Salisbury stage road, until he owned the store, he had developed in himself and impressed upon the hard common sense of his neighbors his mastery of accuracy, painstaking wisdom and just judgment. Insensibly they made him the man to take up the difficulties of others. If the interest was to be calculated on a note, or settlement made of a question of wages or values, the final appeal was generally made to "Squire Angier," as he began to be called. Usage enlarged the title by abbreviating it into "The Squire." There were squires and squires, but in the Pratt store country of that day and in the great city of Durham of to-day there was but one Squire. Judge and colonel and major sound quite commonplace in such good old English company. Back of this intuitive faith of his neighbors in him was, of course, the quality of unselfishness. Never too busy selling his wares to stop and untangle the business skeins of those who had neither the knack, the knowledge nor the diligence to do it for themselves, he composed the differences growing out of bad blood and checked with a firm hand the broils of a population often violent, untrained and always impatient of restraint. To those who had his friendship it would not be necessary to bring proof of this characteristic, but to the stranger reader a single incident will suffice to show the unbounded confidence in his integrity.

A wild, reckless blade who had been defeated in a suit before the "Squire" was abusing him to others on the street. A common friend silenced him with this question: "If you were told that you were going to die, and had no time in which to make a will, whom would you choose to take care of your family and estate?" After evading the question, he finally with an oath replied, "The Squire, of course, but it isn't fair to make me say so."

Not only was the sense of justice strong and inborn in him, but he had the unusual power of applying its rules not only to others, but to himself, in such a manner as to convince and satisfy.

In politics he was a partizan Democrat; his convictions on governmental questions were arrived at by earnest thought and became part of the man himself. A genuine pity was his feeling

for those who had not been able to keep the faith, and he could not understand why those who had been brought up in another school could not conclude as he had done. If he had applied himself to the literature of politics, he would have made a senator the State would have been proud to have represent it.

The vexatious restraints of office were not suited to his disposition, and honors of this sort, when placed upon him, were accepted by him through a conscientious desire to shirk no duty; so in the revival of factional opposition to his party, led by the able and restless Josiah Turner, he was turned to by his party, in the year 1878, to save its power in Orange, and after a fierce campaign waged particularly against him, he was elected to the legislature by the greatest vote given any candidate for the office, on account of confidence and affection for him as the man and not the candidate. His service was honorable to himself and his constituency and valuable to the affairs of the State.

Governor Scales, in making selections for able business men to sit in the directorate of the North Carolina Railroad, the largest property owned by the State, invited Mr. Angier among the first to a seat on the board, and he exhibited a capacity for this new business which justified the high opinions of him.

Although he was now nearly three-score years of age, responsibilities were heaped upon him that might have sat heavily on the shoulders of a younger man. While he presided for years as chairman of the Board of County Commissioners, devising ways and means for governing a new county, as Durham was then laying the foundations of a broad growth, he was also president of the Fidelity Savings and Trust Company. When not of the Board of Aldermen of the young city, fast becoming the admiration of the State, and known around the world, he was its mayor. To catalogue the positions of trust he held would only be redundant proof of the confidence of his fellow-citizens and would show not what he might have for the asking, but what positions the electorate persuaded him to occupy.

Mr. Angier was never a member of any church organization, and there is much reason to believe this was because he could not give

his assent to all the doctrines of any one of them. His sturdy sense of right and loyalty would have required this of him, but that religion which "puffeth not up" and gives quickly and abundantly of solid comforts to the needy and sweet pleasure to the giver he practiced during a lifetime.

The governing quality of his character was honesty—not merely honesty of action, but of thought and speech. Scrupulously exact and punctual in the fulfilling of all pecuniary obligations, he would no more have taken what was not his own or withheld what was another's than he would, even in the heat of controversy, have advanced an argument or given a reason which he did not fully and in every detail believe to be not only sound, but fair and just. Earnest a partizan as he was, positive in all things, he would have no advantage which did not come by just and direct methods and through transparent channels. Rigid in his adherence to his promises, whether direct or implied, he lived and acted up to the mark that others had reason to expect him to touch. His word once given was irrevocable. He was literally "he that sweareth to his own hurt and changeth not."

There should hang in the public hall of the city he loved so well a portrait of his sturdy, square-built figure, clad in his simple garb, with his ruddy, wholesome complexion and honest eyes and amiable expression, to let those who come after him know how this man, out of whose mouth nothing common or unclean ever came, looked to those who knew him. In doing his duty he was a Roman of the best traditions; in practicing private and gentle virtues he seems like one of those men who come to mind when we speak of "that other disciple."

W. W. Fuller.



WILLIAM ALLEN BLAIR



WILLIAM ALLEN BLAIR, son of S. I. Blair and Abigail Hunt Blair, was born in High Point, Guilford County, North Carolina, a little more than forty years ago.

He is of Quaker lineage for generations back, both on his father's and mother's sides, his ancestors, the Hunts and Blairs of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, having been among the original settlers of those States, and who were all consistent and devoted members of the Society of Friends. The Blairs originally came from Scotland, and the Hunts were an English family. Nathan Hunt, the great-grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was the most celebrated Quaker preacher of his time, and was greatly beloved in Philadelphia, where he preached, as well as in London and other points beyond the seas. He was largely instrumental in founding Guilford College, and was an eloquent speaker and a man of wonderful influence.

Mr. S. I. Blair was educated at Guilford College, and in his early days was a teacher of note. He was known everywhere throughout his life as a man of the highest character and of the strictest integrity. He was also noted for his broad views, his rare intelligence, his scholarly tastes and his strong, hard common sense. His wife, who is still living, is a minister of the Society of Friends, and her active life of gentleness and goodness, of charity and kind deeds, has left its imprint on the entire com-

munity about her. These devoted parents were deeply interested in the moral, religious and intellectual development of their seven children, and gave much time and thought to their education and training.

The eldest son, William A. Blair, grew up on his father's farm in the edge of High Point, a strong, vigorous, active boy, interested in the work of the garden, the orchard and the field. He was exceedingly fond of books and reading, and as a mere lad announced his intention of taking a college course, and even then named the institutions from which he afterward graduated. At the age of four years he was able to read, and when only a child began to attend the school near his home, which was conducted in the schoolhouse standing near the quaint little Quaker church called Springfield. One of his early teachers says of him that he was a fine declaimer, had a remarkable memory and that he learned rapidly and thoroughly, and that though sometimes in mischief, he always knew his lessons.

He prepared for college at Guilford, the alma mater of many a Quaker boy, and then graduated with honors from Haverford College, Pennsylvania, and later, in 1882, from Harvard University, receiving from both the degree of A.B. While yet in college he became correspondent for newspapers, and at Haverford was one of the founders of the college magazine. He was president of college societies, took prizes as a speaker and debater, and was interested in athletics and physical development, bowled on the Harvard cricket team and entered heartily into the best of college life. Immediately after leaving Harvard he visited the schools of New England and Canada, made a careful study of their machinery and methods and returned to High Point, where he had been offered the principalship of the high school, to put into practice what he had learned. Before he had returned to his home he had also been elected a professor in the State Summer Normal School, and had declined work in Boston, Massachusetts. He was successful from the beginning, but desiring to spend more time in preparation, in 1885 he entered Johns Hopkins University in Baltimore, in the post-graduate department,

taking work leading to the degree of Ph.D. While engaged here he was elected lecturer on the Science and Art of Teaching in Swarthmore College, Pennsylvania, which position he resigned the next year upon receiving a call to return to his native State and take up graded school affairs in Winston-Salem, additional work in the State Normal School and to conduct county institutes, deliver lectures and addresses and do other work in which he was interested. During the year he was elected superintendent of the State Normal School in Winston-Salem, and was soon afterward superintendent of the city schools and editor and owner of *The School-teacher*, one of the largest and best educational magazines ever published in the South. This magazine was successful from the beginning, both from a literary and financial point of view. About this time came the remarkable period when the great educational awakening and revival began. Mr. Blair contributed to the work with an energy and zeal second to no other man. With active work through lectures and addresses, through newspapers and magazines, through institutes and mass meetings, he helped bring about the good results.

In addition to this he worked in other fields as well. From childhood he has been interested in Sabbath-school work. He entered the infant class at the Springfield Sabbath-school, passed through every succeeding class, became a teacher and finally the superintendent of this same school. He was also State superintendent of Sabbath-schools for the Friends, and more than once has been chairman of the State Sunday-school Convention. He has also served as president of the Winston Y. M. C. A., as the president of the State Y. M. C. A. Convention and has delivered many addresses on both good works. It is no wonder that his services were in demand, and that he was offered professors' chairs in colleges, and was actually elected president of a college in an adjoining State. His native State and his own chosen work, however, appealed to him, and here he remained, taking an occasional vacation in Europe or in some interesting part of the United States, but for the greater portion of his time working steadily twelve months in the year.

His intention on leaving college had been to study in Germany and devote his life to literature, language and the lecture platform. Circumstances prevented his carrying out his design; and his business ability caused a rather unusual thing to happen. While he was delivering a public lecture before a State normal school a committee waited on him to offer him the presidency of a national bank which was being organized. At first he declined the offer, but later it seemed best to accept it, and thus he began his business life in 1890. He had always been interested in the study of law, having two uncles in that profession, one of whom was a judge in California, and he read law for a number of years as a matter of interest and self-improvement. Though he never attended a law school, he was admitted to the bar in 1894, and began the practice in connection with banking and other work. In politics Mr. Blair is a Democrat, but his sound-money views caused him to refuse to support Mr. Bryan for the Presidency, and he has published an interesting and valuable series of articles on financial affairs. Among his other writings may be noted a little book on Banks of Issue, The History of Banking in North Carolina, forming a part of Knox's "History of Banking in the United States," Historic Banks and Bankers of North Carolina, chapters on several subjects in a book called "Western North Carolina," many magazine and newspaper articles, several poems and a number of lectures and addresses delivered in New England, New York, Philadelphia and elsewhere. He served as president of the State Bankers' Association, secretary and treasurer of the Winston-Salem Chamber of Commerce for eleven years, has been for fourteen years a member of the State Board of Public Charities, was State commissioner to the Paris Exposition, delegate to the World's Sunday-school Convention in London, delegate to the National Association of Charities and Corrections, and has served in many other capacities.

In 1895 Mr. Blair was happily married to Miss Mary E. Fries, daughter of the Hon. John W. Fries of Salem, and three bright, attractive children have blessed their union. The son is named for his distinguished grandfather, and the beautiful and attractive

- home, filled with books and pictures, seems a source of inspiration and encouragement for all who come beneath its roof.

This is but an imperfect account of a full, busy and happy life. Taking him all in all, few men in the entire South have been more active and have accomplished more. He is an energetic man of business, a student, an excellent speaker, ever willing to lecture or to write for some good cause or on some subject which interests the public mind, a man of culture and refinement, of wide acquaintance in the North and in the South, and withal a "modest and kindly man."

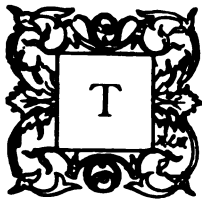
At the inauguration of President Roosevelt, he was appointed special aide with the rank of colonel.

At the present time he is connected with a large number of corporations as officer or director, is president of one bank and vice-president of another, treasurer of the Conference for Education in the South, chairman of the Finance Committee of the Security Life and Annuity Company, vice-president of the Fries Manufacturing and Power Company, chairman of the State Board of Public Charities, president of the Wachovia Historical Society, vice-president for North Carolina of the Sound Money League, treasurer of the Slater Industrial and State Normal School for Colored Youth, and holds various other positions of honor and trust. He is a member of the Masons, Elks, Southern Historical Society, Shakespearian Society, Art Collectors' Club, Audubon Society, Twin-City Club, Winston-Salem, North Carolina, and the Reform Club, New York.

S. A. Ashe.



TIMOTHY BLOODWORTH



TIMOTHY BLOODWORTH is not put down as one of North Carolina's important men. A street in Raleigh named in his honor is the only popular recognition of the work of this unique figure of the Revolutionary struggle. And this memorial perpetuates only one of the smallest acts of his eventful life—his vote for Raleigh as against Fayetteville as a proper site for the State capital.

Bloodworth was born in New Hanover County in the year 1736; he was educated at his own expense, and was a school-teacher just before the outbreak of the war, and had been a cobbler at an earlier date, which facts afforded his later rivals and political adversaries—William Hooper, Samuel Johnston and others—excuse for unceasing ridicule and abuse.

At the beginning of the Revolutionary struggle Bloodworth was most pronounced in his views against what he deemed the tyranny of the British Government, and he joined John Ashe of Wilmington in the meeting which gave out to the people of North Carolina probably the most important appeal for active resistance known to the history of the war. He was a co-worker with John Ashe in the formation of the Wilmington Committee of Public Safety, which during the early years of the revolt played such a significant part in the organization of resistance. It is no exaggeration to say that but for the activity and courage of Ashe and

his helpers this region of the State up to Fayetteville would have adhered to the King and thus dealt the cause of independence a severe blow. The committee meetings were attended regularly, and every suspicious act of the supposed friends of Great Britain was closely watched. When evidence of intended support of the mother country was obtained or any overt act committed, the responsible parties were placed under arrest, and they were required to give security for future good behavior. New Hanover County was brought under the jurisdiction of the Wilmington Committee on the recommendation of Bloodworth and his brother, Thomas, who was also an influential Revolutionist. The action of the committee was sometimes declared to be despotic, and Bloodworth made himself an object of intense hatred to all who, despite all precautions, gave in their allegiance to the Crown. Bloodworth was charged with injustice and even brutality, but he never swerved from his course.

When a temporary government was formed, and in 1776 Willie Jones was president of the province, Bloodworth became one of his staunch supporters. He was appointed an official of the new government for the Wilmington district, the province having been divided into administrative sections for the closer supervision of the eternal enemy and the better co-operation of the patriots. Bloodworth was called the entry taker for New Hanover. He was also appointed a commissioner to obtain supplies for the army, to purchase and repack them for preservation. In 1778 he was elected to the General Assembly as a member of the House of Commons, but his accounts as commissioner for the purchase of supplies were out of balance, and he was not allowed to take his seat. The next year, however, he was again elected, and regularly thereafter until 1783. During that period he was very active as a legislator, and in 1780, on the retirement of John Ashe as treasurer for the Wilmington district, he was chosen by the Assembly to that post; and he held that office until 1783, proving himself as efficient as in his former employment. Still, his methods of administration, like those of most other Revolutionary leaders, were so crude that at the end of his period of service it

was found that several sheriffs of the counties in his district had imposed upon him worthless paper. The Assembly, however, was quick to recognize his position, and passed acts staying process against him until he could secure the property of the men who had been guilty of forgery. This was the more readily done because Bloodworth had repeatedly advanced money from his private purse on behalf of the common cause, and at times when public confidence was at the lowest ebb.

Mr. Bloodworth had had wide experience. It is said that he was a minister of the Gospel, and he was a practical mechanic. There is a tradition that seems well authenticated that when General Lillington, in 1781, held the great bridge and sent a detachment to hold the negro head road between the two rivers, Bloodworth concealed himself in a tree at Point Peter, above Wilmington, and would pick off the British troopers in the town, using a conical ball in his rifle. The distance was so great that the British were long in discovering the hiding place where he concealed himself. He successfully eluded their efforts to capture him.

Toward the end of the war party lines began to be drawn very closely. Samuel Ashe, Thomas Person, John and Nathaniel Macon and Griffith Rutherford believed in the simple but extremely democratic system of government which had been inaugurated at Halifax in 1776. Samuel Johnston, William Hooper, Allen Jones, Joseph Hewes and their supporters thought the democratic régime of 1776 ought to be made more conservative, ought by all means to be counteracted by a central and more powerful government, which should in a measure take the place of the British authority recently destroyed. This cleavage of parties was but natural, and it marked social and class distinctions which, with some notable exceptions, continued until after 1800.

The first great dispute which arose, however, centered in the Tory question. The "men of 1776," the patriots as they were called, were almost unanimously opposed to any concessions being made for the benefit of those who had taken up arms against the cause of independence; they were almost as severe on those who

had given comfort to the enemy without actually taking up arms. The vast amount of property which had been confiscated and used by the Revolutionists should not be restored, said Jones and his party. The Conservative Party were willing to grant a very liberal amnesty and to restore much property which their opponents had caused to be confiscated. In 1782 and 1783 this question was foremost in the public mind; it caused much bitterness of feeling. The Jones party prevailed, and not only were the former confiscatory acts sustained, but new laws were passed, which required still further seizures of the property of the Tories, who were now formally forbidden to return to their estates. William Hooper became the champion of the exiles, which was unfortunate in one respect—all Hooper's brothers had been Tories, and they were now suing for restoration to the bosom of the State they had deserted. Hooper's brother-in-law, Archibald Maclaine of Wilmington, who had been offered a handsome fee by British agents to desert the American cause, was also a champion of the Tories. As a rule, the trading and other wealthier colonists of antebellum days now joined Hooper and his party. It is needless to say Bloodworth was on the side of the extremists, as they were designated. He was made one of the commissioners of confiscated property by the Assembly, which met in Hillsboro in May, 1783. The next Assembly elected him a delegate to the Congress of the Confederation, though Samuel Johnston was chosen at the same time as one of his colleagues.

How well Bloodworth performed the duties of his office of commissioner there is no way of determining. But the fact that both himself and his brother Thomas were returned to the House in 1784 for New Hanover shows that the people of his county at least endorsed his conduct. Indeed, it was in this year that his ablest opponent, William Hooper, moved from Wilmington to Hillsboro, probably for political reasons. From this time forward Maclaine was sent from Wilmington as a delegate to the Assembly; Hooper was constantly returned from Hillsboro, except one year, when he was chosen as one of the Orange County delegates to the House.

The second issue on which North Carolinians divided was the status of the State in the Confederation. This question became acute in 1784, when the treaty of peace of the previous year was submitted for ratification. The Conservatives had the influence of Washington behind them. Yet the treaty was rejected. The vote in the House, of which both Bloodworths were members, was 32 for ratification and 37 against. The New Hanover delegates' names were recorded under the nays. The reason for this rejection of a treaty which was the cause of great rejoicing everywhere else was the nature of the fourth and sixth clauses, which provided for indemnifying British subjects who lost debts due from American colonists before the war and for restoring the Tories to their former homes. Parties lined up on this issue in almost the same way as on the Tory question. The subject of "British debts" was not finally settled until 1793, when Jefferson persuaded Southern members of Congress to help remove obstacles in the way of the collection of these claims in the courts.

In 1785 Bloodworth took his seat in the Congress of the Confederation. Not receiving Governor Caswell's warrant on the treasury in time for his departure by sea for New York, where Congress was in session, he bought up a cargo of pitch at 21 shillings a barrel, with the aim of selling at a profit and thus paying his expenses as a delegate for the State of North Carolina! He sold the cargo at 11 shillings per barrel! Bloodworth continued a member of Congress until August 13, 1787, when he sent his resignation to Governor Martin, intending probably to return to the Assembly to do what he could to defeat the new national Constitution.

The one problem before Congress during the two years of Bloodworth's membership was how to strengthen the embryo nationalist government and at the same time not weaken the State governments, to which the people of the country were attached. Bloodworth opposed every measure taken to this end. He had no fears at all for the outcome of the prevailing tendency to anarchy. But he was jealous even at this early date of the power of the

Eastern States. He felt and thought as a Southerner, not in the least as an American. When the treaty with Spain which John Jay had negotiated, and which failed to secure the free navigation of the Mississippi, came up, he manifested no small degree of excitement. In September, 1786, he said the jealousy of the New England States, which denied men the right of free migration to the West, the tendency of Congress to encroach upon the rights of the States and the indifference of the people had made the Confederation a "rope of sand." The discontent about the proposed yielding of the right to navigate the Mississippi on the part of the Confederation reached North Carolina before his return for a short season in the fall of 1786, and he was invited to meet with the General Assembly and present to them his view of the crisis. This he did, though we know not in what form or whether his advice was effective.

What he did and thought in the year 1787 can only be guessed from his acts. As already said, he retired from Congress, but he did not appear in the North Carolina Assembly of 1787, which called the all-important convention of 1788.

The people of New Hanover did not disappoint him. Both he and his brother, James Bloodworth, were elected to the convention. However, the town of Wilmington chose Archibald Maclaine as its delegate. So that the two determined and able opponents renewed their long-standing political contest on the floor of the Assembly.

Timothy Bloodworth joined Willie Jones and his coterie of brilliant and uncompromising Democrats in their plan of immediate rejection of the new national Constitution. Failing in this, they permitted the proposed scheme of government to be read and debated clause by clause. And on the reading of any doubtful phrase or uncertain grant of power they challenged the friends of adoption—Davie, Johnston, Iredell and Maclaine—to show that it was unobjectionable. Jones rarely spoke, this being left, so far as his side was concerned, to Bloodworth, Spencer, McDowell and Person. The contest was enlivened with personalities and with some aspersion of the motives of leading men. Davie declared

that Jones and his party opposed the new Constitution because it would weaken their hold on the people and leave them outside the pale of public affairs. Jones retorted that Johnston and his party might with equal justification be charged with seeking snug places for themselves in a new government, not being able to obtain favor in their own State government.

Maclaine declared that Bloodworth opposed any kind of national establishment; Bloodworth retorted that while the charge was not true, yet any national government not strictly limited by State authority would certainly usurp powers not granted and become dangerous to the liberties of the States. He cited acts and votes of the Continental Congress, weak as it was admitted to be, to prove his contention. His argument, as well as the facts cited, was irrefutable. Maclaine lost his temper, as he was prone to do, and Johnston and Iredell rallied again and again to his and their cause.

Bloodworth declared that the treaty-making power should not be lodged with the President and Senate, but that it should depend also upon the vote of the House of Representatives, a contention which Jefferson and Madison made most staunchly in 1795-96, when the famous Jay treaty was before the country. Again Bloodworth contended that unity of interest lies at the bottom of all government; he thought the diversity of interest between the East and South so great that the Southern States should hesitate long before putting the political fortunes of their section beyond their own control. The Susquehanna River marks a line of cleavage which cannot be bridged, he said, and his language forcibly calls to mind to-day the fearful contest of later years, with almost the same line of separation between the North and the South.

A point which has seldom been pointed out in the study of North Carolina history was the claim earnestly put forth at Hillsboro by the Federalists that the new Union was to be based on the people of all the States, not on the State governments. That being the case, said Bloodworth, why do you not offer a bill of rights to protect the people against every possible encroach-

ment or usurpation. "Every possible precaution should be taken when we grant powers; rulers are always disposed to abuse them."

Davie admitted that the proposed change in national relations would amount to "a revolution in our Federal government;" but that North Carolina had done much to make it necessary by refusing to pay her share of the common burden. And now (1788) North Carolina, with an income from impost duties of only £10,000 (\$25,000) per year, and with her debts to the Confederation unpaid, proposes to dictate the terms of a Constitution for the whole thirteen States. To him this would be like the action of a clerk who should, on being admitted into a large business establishment as a principal, demand the rearrangement of the whole establishment to suit his fancy.

There was much of cogency in the reasoning of both sides. But Jones and his friends carried the day. The convention rejected the Constitution by a vote of 184 to 84, and adjourned *sine die* on August 4th. A little over a year later the Assembly, of which Bloodworth was a leading member, called another convention, which met in Fayetteville and accepted the national Constitution, with amendments amounting in principle to a bill of rights, thus formally entering the Union on November 20, 1789. But some time after the meeting of the legislature of 1789 at Fayetteville it was fully believed in North Carolina that a new national convention would be called. In fact, delegates to such a body had been elected by this legislature, and Bloodworth headed the list. Thomas Person, William Lenoir, Matthew Locke were other members of the proposed delegation—all good Radicals, "Whigs of 1776," as they called themselves. But the new State convention, as already stated, closed the long struggle by its vote of November 20th. There was nothing more for Bloodworth and his fellows to do. The fight which they had made had had much to do in the securing of the first ten amendments to the national Constitution; it had been amply worth while.

He was again in the State Senate in 1789, and was a candidate for the United States Senate. William Lenoir and Benjamin

Hawkins were the competitors. After a contest of twelve days Lenoir withdrew and Hawkins was chosen.

During the same session of the Assembly he asked for the repeal of the law of a former Assembly which permitted certain classes of Tories to return to their former homes! His influence did not wane as a result of his defeat for the Senate, and his interest in the new national government was so great that we find him a member of the House of Representatives the next year. He at once took sides with Madison against Hamilton's schemes for the treasury, and spoke briefly several times on behalf of the State Rights programme. Early in 1792 he returned to North Carolina, where he held the position of lieutenant-colonel of the militia in the Wilmington district, an office of no importance just then but for the peculiar events of the following year.

President Washington's proclamation of neutrality of 1793 concerning the wars then waging in Europe seemed to Bloodworth a base surrender to England of the former American ally, France; and there were many others in North Carolina who were displeased with the decision of the administration. Governor Richard Dobbs Spaight, however, accepted the instructions of the President in good faith, and a little later, when a French privateer, commissioned and named in the United States, brought a prize into Wilmington for sale, he ordered the Wilmington militia to seize the privateer and detain its crew until they could be disposed of according to law. Bloodworth declined to lead the militia, resigned his commission and made open protest against the neutrality policy of the country, criticising the governor for his share in enforcing a measure so repugnant to the feelings of the friends of France. The authority of the State was rendered of no avail; and privateers were fitted out in Wilmington and sailed the neighboring seas to suit their own fancy.

Bloodworth was immediately chosen to the Assembly, where he was elected speaker of the House on the first day of the session—this in the face of the governor's earnest protest. It was clear that the national administration had no strong hold on North Carolina in this crisis. Bloodworth was re-elected the following year.

He at once entered the contest for the United States Senate against his former successful rival. The contest continued seven days, ending in Bloodworth's election to the place he had desired in 1789 by a majority of one vote. Ex-Governor Johnston exclaimed on hearing the news of his victory, "*O tempora, O mores!*"

Bloodworth entered the United States Senate as the successor of Benjamin Hawkins, President Washington's most intimate friend in North Carolina, and against the wishes of the first President; he was one of the few timorous senators who voted against the over-adulatory address of Congress to Washington on the occasion of his retirement. Generally he co-operated with his colleague, ex-Governor Martin, and with the senators from Virginia, Stephens Thompson, Mason and Littleton W. Tazewell. He remained in the Senate until March 4, 1801, when he saw the chief of his party inaugurated. But he did not greatly distinguish himself as a member of the national legislature, and at the close of his term he was permitted quietly to retire from active public leadership to the snug position of collector of customs for the port of Wilmington. He died August 24, 1814, while on a visit to Washington City, at the age of seventy-seven. His name and fame had been eclipsed by the more glaring virtues of his younger contemporaries. His services to his State had been rendered when he entered the Senate, excepting possibly his efforts to defeat the alien and sedition laws. He was a faithful follower of Jefferson, and he co-operated with Macon in 1800 to carry the State for their party. His last years were spent as a sort of beneficiary of the national government. He resided near Burgaw, now in Pender County.

William E. Dodd.



WILLIAM BLOUNT



AN eminent authority on the early annals of Tennessee and on Southern history in general, after much time spent in the preparation of a biography of William Blount, sums up the conclusions reached concerning him as follows: "After a careful study of his life and character, I do not hesitate to say that in breadth of intellect, deep thought, untiring activity, intrepid perseverance and broad patriotism he had few equals and no superior among his colleagues. He united in his character the gentleman, the soldier, the statesman and the citizen; and all in the most perfect harmony of those qualities which challenge admiration in both public and private life. Defamed and traduced for a brief time in his life by the followers of a strong partizan administration, under which his service as senator commenced; expelled from his seat in a manner so hasty and on evidence so slight that its reading now excites wonder, he never failed to retain the fullest confidence of the people of Tennessee, who demonstrated it by placing him afterward in the highest position of trust in the State."

The above we quote from the preface of the "Life and Services of William Blount," written by General Marcus J. Wright and published in 1884.

Though his closing years were spent in Tennessee, William Blount was born in North Carolina, and the earlier part of his

public career (including military services in the Revolution) properly comes within the scope of North Carolina history. The date of his birth was March 26, 1749. He was the son of Captain Jacob Blount, later of Pitt County, where the latter's country seat, Blount Hall, was located. Notices appear elsewhere in this work of Major Reading Blount and General William Augustus Blount, both members of this ancient colonial family. William Blount and also his father, Jacob Blount, fought under Governor William Tryon at the battle of Alamance on May 16, 1771, and both were paymasters in the Continental Line during the Revolution, William being commissioned in the Third North Carolina Regiment on December 11, 1778. Early in 1778 (February 12th) Mr. Blount married Mary Granger, a daughter of Colonel Caleb Granger of New Hanover County. To this marriage were born six children who reached maturity, as follows: Ann Blount, who was married first to Henry Irwin Toole, a son of Captain Henry Irwin Toole, and secondly to Weeks Hadley; Mary Louisa Blount, who married Pleasant M. Miller; William Blount, member of Congress, etc., who died unmarried; Richard Blackledge Blount, who married Catherine Minor; Barbara Blount, who married Major-General Edmund Pendleton Gaines; Eliza Blount, who married Surgeon Wyatt of the United States Army. Excepting William Blount, Jr., who died unmarried, all of the above children of William Blount and his wife, Mary Granger, left descendants.

In addition to frequent service as Craven County's representative in the General Assembly of North Carolina, William Blount was delegate from Pitt County in the State convention of 1789, which adopted the Federal Constitution, and also represented North Carolina in the Continental Congress for quite a number of terms, among them being the session of 1782-83 and 1786-87. He was also a member of the Federal Convention at Philadelphia in 1787. When North Carolina had been admitted to the Union, he was an unsuccessful candidate for senator in 1789, Benjamin Hawkins and Samuel Johnston being chosen. On August 17, 1790, President Washington appointed Blount governor of "the

Territory south of the Ohio River." He reached Tennessee in October, 1790, and was one of the founders of the city of Knoxville, which he named in honor of General Henry Knox, secretary of war. Blount was president of the convention which formed the constitution of the State of Tennessee. In 1796 he was elected to represent Tennessee in the United States Senate. From the Senate he was expelled for participating in a plan to take possession of the Spanish domains along the Mississippi for the benefit of Great Britain. The ascendancy of the English in that quarter would have greatly benefited the people of Tennessee, and hence the treatment accorded Blount by the United States Senate greatly increased his popularity at home. When his approach to Knoxville was announced, he was met by a distinguished delegation, headed by General James White, speaker of the Senate, and the Hon. William Stuart, speaker of the House of Representatives, and thus accompanied, he was carried in triumph, under the escort of a troop of cavalry and files of admiring civilians, into Tennessee's capital city. He was soon elected to the State Senate, and became speaker thereof in consequence of the resignation of General White, the presiding officer of that body, for the express purpose of making place for him. There seems little doubt that he would have been the choice of the people for governor but for his sudden death. This event occurred in March, 1800.

The county of Blount and town of Blountville, in Tennessee, are named for William Blount, while the town of Maryville and county of Granger are named for his wife, whose maiden name, as heretofore stated, was Mary Granger.

A handsome etching of Governor Blount will be found in the first volume of Hampton L. Carson's "History of the Celebration of the One Hundredth Anniversary of the Promulgation of the Constitution of the United States." There is also a likeness of him in the biography by General Wright, heretofore quoted. To the latter work we must also refer the reader for information more extensive than the limited nature of the present sketch will allow.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.

angelic spirit never passed through this world. When the storm of 1861 broke in its fury and engulfed the country in the fathomless depths of war, this queenly mother, bereft of a husband, gathered into her arms of love this boy and four more of her own offspring and tenderly nursed them through the long days and dark nights of that bloody drama of four years.

Her husband, William Saurin Bradshaw, the father of the subject of this sketch, had been summoned to the fields of carnage, where, as captain of the Senior Reserves of Alamance County, he fought and bled and suffered until the echo of the last gun of that deadly conflict at Bennettsville, North Carolina, in April, 1865, had died away. In this last battle Captain Bradshaw, after the death of his colonel, was promoted for gallantry and placed in charge of his regiment, which he commanded during this engagement.

After the war, Captain Bradshaw, like the average Southerner, had nothing left save his lands, on which he placed himself and surviving boys, and out of which, by strenuous toil, he accumulated in a few short years a surplus sufficient to enable him to give to each of his children a collegiate education. In 1872 the father of our subject moved to old Trinity College, in Randolph County, where William Gaston Bradshaw was graduated in 1877 with distinction.

The habits of work and the training on the farm were potent factors in the development of his future life and in the achievements which have marked his successful career. Not less potential were the uplifting influences of a saintly mother and the fine traits which marked the sturdy manhood and the exalted character of a noble father. This was the rich fountain from which came the guiding forces in his life.

It was partly in deference to his father's preference that Dr. Bradshaw chose a professional career and entered on the study of medicine. After the completion of his course of study in medicine, he was graduated and granted a diploma in 1881 by the Baltimore College of Physicians and Surgeons. The practice of his profession did not prove attractive, for the reason largely

that in this country at that time its emoluments were not commensurate with its exactions.

When the Commercial National Bank of High Point was organized in 1890, Dr. Bradshaw was unanimously elected cashier of the same, which position he held for seven years, and during these years his cool head, clear judgment and diligent attention to duty contributed greatly to the strength and success of this institution, of which he is still vice-president. It was the clean record of his success in this institution which induced the Globe-Home Furniture Company, the largest furniture company in the South, to tender to him its management at a greatly increased salary. The real work of his life has been with these two institutions, and their history comprises no small part of the history of the Grand Rapids of the South. In the wondrous strides of High Point since 1889 along industrial and manufacturing lines and in the marvelous thrift which has transformed a hamlet of a few hundred into a city of several thousand he has been one of the sturdiest and steadiest spirits.

While eschewing politics, and steadfastly rejecting the proffer of political honors, his public spirit has twice asserted itself in the acceptance of the office of mayor for two terms. It is needless to write that his administrations were conservative and progressive. Neither the false idea of the old fogy nor the wild fancy of the visionary swept him from the course of stern duty and strenuous work in the promotion of all movements projected for the up-building of his town.

His marriage in 1884 to Miss Sarah B. Johnson, a daughter of Mr. J. H. Johnson, one of the foremost and best citizens of Guilford County, was the crowning event of his life and the crowning evidence of his sound sense and good taste. The issue of this marriage was six children, and of this number only two survived.

His fine record as a successful business man has subjected him to calls other than those in the legitimate line of his business. In the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, whose creed was law under his parental roof, he has been honored with various positions

of trust and honor. He is now and has been for many years one of the trustees of Trinity College, North Carolina. He is also president of the Alumni Association of his alma mater. No draft upon his high character has ever been dishonored. His resources have been equal to every obligation imposed by position or sense of duty. Safety and sanity spell the strength of his leadership in every field of activity in which he has been engaged. No reverses have ever curbed or checked the daring spirit of his ambition.

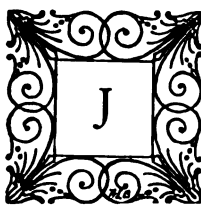
In the brilliant galaxy of the young industrial and commercial leaders who have wrought so wondrously and so well along all lines in this goodly Southland for two decades, he has won a place in the forefront. He has had no small part in the upbuilding of his section of this State and in the making of High Point the most genuinely enterprising, progressive and substantial city of its size between the Potomac and the Rio Grande. With its growth he has grown and with its thrift he has prospered until to-day he ranks in all circles as one of its most trusted and respected leaders. He, too, is a typical representative of that type of coatless Carolinians of this generation who, by dint of their matchless grit and dauntless pluck, are creating and making out of the bounteous materials of this old commonwealth in name and in fact one of the greatest States of the American Union.

S. A. Ashe.





JOHN GRAMMER BRODNAX



JOHN GRAMMER BRODNAX was born in Dinwiddie County, Virginia, April 14, 1829. His earliest known ancestor in this country was William Brodnax, who married Mrs. Travis in the settlement of Jamestown, Virginia. John G. Brodnax's father was General William Henry Brodnax, a lawyer and statesman held in high esteem for exalted virtues and high Christian character. His public services were identified with the history of Virginia, stimulating an honorable ambition and illustrating integrity and truth as the crowning virtues of our civilization. He held many positions of honor and trust. For many years he was a prominent member of the legislature of Virginia, and he was also an active member of the African Colonization Society, which was organized by Southern statesmen in 1817, having for its object the gradual emancipation of the slaves and their deportation to other communities. Henry Clay was the president of this association, which was born of the desire of Southern men to put an end to African slavery in some way that would not be harmful to the whites.

On Sunday night, August 21, 1831, a negro insurrection was begun in the county of Southampton, Virginia, by a band of some sixty slaves, under the direction of Nat Turner, who claimed to be a prophet. That night they murdered fifty-five unsuspect-

ing victims, and the white inhabitants fled in haste to the town of Murfreesboro, North Carolina, for safety. This insurrection caused great apprehension, and speedy efforts were made to arrest it, both in North Carolina and Virginia. General Brodnax was the brigadier-general of the Virginia troops called out for that purpose. At the succeeding session of the Virginia legislature a proposition to establish gradual emancipation came within a few votes of being adopted.

At the time when South Carolina proposed to secede, in 1833, General Brodnax, being a member of the Virginia legislature, was appointed chairman of a select committee to consider the situation, and on the 20th of December he reported resolutions denouncing President Jackson's proclamation and South Carolina's nullification, and appealing to the President to withstay the arm of force, and to South Carolina not to enforce her ordinance, and to Congress to repeal the obnoxious tariff law; and recommending to send two commissioners to South Carolina to present the remonstrance of Virginia. The policy outlined by General Brodnax was pursued, and South Carolina having heeded the voice of Virginia, that fact was made the strong basis of Henry Clay's argument in the Senate in favor of his compromise measure, he declaring that Virginia was by her action aligned with South Carolina, and that unless Congress gave the relief demanded and heeded Virginia, civil war would necessarily ensue. Clay's measure was adopted, and civil war was then averted, this consequence following closely on the decided and bold action recommended by General Brodnax and adopted by the State of Virginia.

General Brodnax held many posts of honor and of trust, and in every official position he magnified his office. The domestic virtues were no less cherished and cultivated by him; a devoted husband, a kind father and a generous friend, he exemplified the beauties and excellencies of our holy Christianity.

The mother of John Grammer Brodnax was Miss Ann Elizabeth Withers, a lady of such high character as became the wife of such a man. Her home was a temple in which all the Graces

met to rejoice and bless its inmates. Thus her son had nothing to regret on the score of parentage and ancestry. He was born and reared in the country, but did no manual labor—it was not necessary. In out-of-door sports and congenial companionship he acquired a robust and vigorous constitution. Of school-days after the usual kind he knew nothing, as he was prepared for college by private tutors. How well they discharged the trust committed to them is shown in the fact that he finished the four years' college course at the Virginia Military Institute in three years, graduating with distinction in 1848. He chose the medical profession for his life work. It suited him; its labors and anxieties were compensated by the pleasure experienced in ministering to the relief of others. How well he was prepared for his high mission was evidenced by the fact that he graduated with honor in the Medical College of the University of Virginia in 1849, having finished that course in one year; and then took a post-graduate course at Jefferson College, Philadelphia; and was resident physician of the Baltimore Almshouse during the greater part of 1850. But determined to be at the head of his profession, he studied in Paris, France, during 1851, 1852 and 1853, and was greatly benefited by his life abroad.

In May, 1851, Dr. Brodnax sailed from Philadelphia to Liverpool, the voyage requiring fifteen days. After viewing the Crystal Palace Exposition in London he intended studying medicine there, but after a comparison between the advantages of London and Paris, found those of the French capital vastly superior, as was attested by the large number of English, Scotch and Irish students in Paris. He entered the School of France (Medical), where he had, among other instructors, the celebrated Dr. Trousseau. The private clinics were usually given to classes of ten, but Dr. Brodnax preferring these clinics alone, arranged to have them so given to him, even though the cost was several times more than it would have been otherwise. This was of slight moment, as the doctor was plentifully supplied with money.

He studied surgery under Joubert and Roux, and medicine under Louis, Rostan and Chomel of the Hotel Dieu Hospital;

also under Velpeau and Nelaton of La Charitie and Velliex of La Pitie and Malgaine of St. Louis Hospitals, the latter being particularly expert in the treatment of fractures.

His study of percussion was under Piorry of La Charitie Hospital, under whom he became very proficient.

Ten months of his time was given to the study of skin diseases, and he also took special courses on the eye under Sichel and Desmarres.

At the end of his three years' course, feeling the need of rest and change, he determined on a short walking tour through France, which proved both interesting and instructive.

One of the chief peculiarities he noticed was the hanging of a bush over the door instead of a sign to denote that accommodations could be had. This gives us an insight into Shakespeare's expression when he says good wine needs no bush, meaning good wine needs no advertisement.

During Dr. Brodnax's residence in Paris, William C. Rives of Virginia was United States Minister to France, at whose home he was a frequent guest, and his son, A. L. Rives, was his most intimate friend.

It was during his stay in Paris that Napoleon III. made his *coup d'état*, and Dr. Brodnax was an interested observer of the many exciting scenes which transpired.

Thus he fully equipped himself for every branch of his profession before entering upon general practice. Dr. Brodnax commenced the regular practice of medicine in November, 1853, at Petersburg, Virginia, and was at once accorded an enviable position in his profession as an eminent practitioner.

When the war came on, his superior capabilities led to his being employed as a surgeon in the Confederate army and assigned to hospital duty. At Petersburg, as convenient to the army of Northern Virginia, there were established hospitals for the different States, and in 1862 Surgeon Brodnax was placed in charge of the South Carolina Hospital in that city. He also was given direction of five general hospitals, and his fine abilities were well displayed in their management. In 1863 he was transferred

to the North Carolina Hospital, and labored faithfully and efficiently in his work among the North Carolina boys, his services being frequently commented on by the papers of that day as being so tenderly solicitous and efficient.

For two years he was also on duty as president of the examining board for furloughing and discharging the sick and disabled Confederate soldiers, a service that required the highest intelligence and an exact sense of justice. In his work for the wounded he was especially proficient, and his superior surgical skill proved a great blessing to many of those committed to his care. In 1864 he was detailed by the government to supervise the exchange of prisoners, a service of the most delicate nature, and to which he brought a heart and mind imbued with a deep loyalty to the cause of his country and a sympathy for his unfortunate countrymen unsurpassed by any of his fellow-officials. At length, however, it became the policy of the United States Government to discontinue the exchange. To secure the continuance of the exchange of prisoners, the Confederate Government, through Dr. Brodnax, delivered 310 Federal prisoners at Harrison's Point, on James River, Virginia, without ever receiving a Confederate prisoner in return, and made every effort to relieve the sufferings not merely of their own soldiers confined in Northern prisons, but of the Federal troops that were held in captivity at the South, but all their negotiations failed. At last, as a final effort, the Confederate Government sent a delegation of Federal prisoners to Washington City to beg President Lincoln to rescue them from captivity by making an exchange, or in some way to relieve their necessities, but President Lincoln refused to see them, and their request was denied. The expectation was that General Lee could only be conquered by the gradual diminution of his forces through the incessant ravages of a protracted war, and the Federal Government would not release from prison its own unfortunate soldiers at the price of restoring to liberty an equal number of Confederates, who, as General Grant said, "were only as dead men" when confined in Northern prisons. Another Northern idea was that the Federal soldiers in Southern prisons

were aiding their cause immensely by consuming the supplies of the Confederacy.

When the exchange of prisoners entirely ceased and Dr. Brodnax's services were no longer required in that connection, he was assigned to duty in charge of General Hospital No. 14, established at Wake Forest, North Carolina; and later he was transferred to Greensboro, where at the time of General Johnston's surrender he was in charge of two hospitals.

The services of surgeons during the war were of the highest importance, for the number of soldiers who died from sickness and wounds was appalling; and none excelled Dr. Brodnax in usefulness in that field of mercy and of allaying the sufferings of humanity.

His work in detail can never be fully known or adequately appreciated, but his record lives in the hearts of thousands of those to whom he brought needed relief.

After the war, Dr. Brodnax located in Rockingham County, North Carolina, and successfully followed his profession for twenty-seven years, his practice being the most extensive of any physician in that county, and his reputation gaining him high rank among his professional brethren throughout the State. In 1887 he located in the town of Greensboro, where he entered upon a lucrative practice. He was a member of the board of examiners appointed by the United States Government during 1886 and 1887 to pass upon the applications of disabled soldiers for pensions. He has been examiner for various insurance companies and surgeon for the Southern Railroad for fifteen years. Before the war, Dr. Brodnax was a Whig; since the war he has been a Democrat. He has long been a member of the Episcopal Church. He is a member of the State Medical Society, the International Association of Railway Surgeons and the Association of Southern Railway Surgeons. He is literary in his tastes, and in response to the question, "What books have you found most helpful?" replies, "The Bible and Shakespeare."

On the 1st of October, 1856, he was married to Mary W. Brodnax, who, after bearing three children as pledges of their happy

love, passed to the better world. On the 24th of April, 1866, he was married to Ella Preston Burch, who became the mother of one child—a son now living in Greensboro, North Carolina. It was not the privilege of the writer to know the first Mrs. Brodnax, but if the testimony of those who knew her most intimately is to be relied on, all excellencies met in her charming personality. Of the present Mrs. Brodnax it may be truly said, she is worthy of her husband. Caring little for the gayeties of social life, she reigns a queen among women, exerting her gentle sway by no artificial laws of conventionality, but by virtue of intrinsic worth and unaffected piety.

Gentle of spirit, Dr. Brodnax is ever a defender of the oppressed and a champion of the right. He could easily have shone in the world's galaxy of illustrious men, but *Duty* was the star that led him on, and all the allurements of ambition compared to it were as glow-worms to the meridian sun. He prizes his diplomas from the world's great universities, but infinitely more does he cherish the consciousness of having relieved the suffering and brought back the rose to beauty's cheek. As a priest he has stood at the altar of science while the incense of grateful hearts has filled all the temple of life.

Politeness is a priceless virtue—not that which is exhibited in the drawing-rooms of the fashionable or amid the enchantments of the dance, but that which in the humble byways of life acknowledges the presence of true worth undecked by the tinsel that shines only to decoy. An officer of Johnston's army said at the surrender that General Lee and Dr. Brodnax were the only two officers in the Confederate army who went through the war without losing their politeness. Kindness and Politeness are twins of noble parentage, born to bless mankind and make the highways of life bloom and blossom as the rose. As a churchman, Dr. Brodnax is orthodox after the highest standard of orthodoxy. Reverencing the church, his creed embraces the brotherhood of man, and inculcates the sublime truth that "a knowledge of Jesus is the most excellent of the sciences." Long may he live to adorn society and bless the world.

Cullen A. Battle.



ROBERT BURTON

ROBERT BURTON was born in Mecklenburg County, Virginia, in 1747; settled in Granville County, North Carolina, about the year 1775. He soon acquired a high standing among his new neighbors, and was successful as a farmer and planter. He is put down in the census of 1790 as the owner of fourteen negroes, 2405 acres of land in Granville County, 5934 "in the mountains" (Tennessee), nine acres in the town of Williamsboro and six carriage wheels—a very considerable property for the time.

But Robert Burton's rôle in the making of North Carolina is not indicated by this inventory of his worldly goods. He was a faithful soldier in the Revolution, rising, in 1781, to the important position of quartermaster-general with the rank of colonel. This position he held till the troops of the State were finally disbanded a year after the surrender at Yorktown. From the letters and reports which he made to the governor one may easily judge of the nature of the difficulties of his office. For example, the Warren County justices of the peace refused, August, 1781, to give him permission to impress supplies for the army; and the State government was in such financial straits at times that he was not furnished with the money to hire a courier. Governor Burke loaned him two horses from his private stables; but it was found that some private soldier had deserted, taking the horses with him!

Before the close of the war he became involved in a controversy with General Thomas Person of his own county of Granville about the enlisting of troops. Happily, the treaty of peace put an end to the army embarrassments and complications connected with the duties of his position. No doubt he was heartily glad to escape the almost unbearable worry of an office rendered thankless because of the feeling of security which prevailed long before the end.

Though Burton was, so far as the record shows, never in the Assembly, he was chosen, along with the Marquis of Britigney, in 1783, to a seat in the governor's council, a position of much more importance than the similar one to-day. In 1784 he was re-elected, Nathaniel Macon being one of his colleagues. He was at the same time an unsuccessful candidate for the treasurer's office of the Hillsboro district against Memnecan Hunt. A year later, he was chosen a delegate to the Continental Congress in 1785 at a salary of \$1600 per annum; but he did not appear to take up his work as a national legislator until early in 1787. He seems to have been averse to the Continental service. Both he and Macon, his colleague in this work, were reluctant to set out for their posts of duty until the Assembly passed resolutions calling on the governor to order them to set out for the North. This Governor Caswell did, December 2, 1786. Macon resigned the position, and Burton only reached New York, the place where the Congress met during the last years of its existence, on May 22, 1787.

Colonel Burton was thus in Congress at the time of the assembling of the famous Philadelphia convention, which drew up the national Constitution. Feeling that nothing could be effected by his stay in New York during the summer of 1787, especially since some of the leading members were in Philadelphia attending the more important body (besides, no quorum could be obtained), he returned home to watch events in his section of the country, where opposition to nationality was stronger, perhaps, than anywhere else in the thirteen colonies. He notified the governor of his readiness to take up his work in New York again

whenever there should be need of his presence. This did not occur, and he never again sat in the Continental Congress.

On January 28, 1789, Mr. Burton addressed a letter to Governor Johnston as follows:

“As those men who have fought and bled for us in the late contest cannot be held in too high esteem, and as Chevalier John Paul Jones is among the foremost who derived their appointment from the State, that deserves to be held in remembrance to the latest ages, I take the liberty of offering to the State as a present, through you, its chief magistrate, a bust of that great man and good soldier, to perpetuate his memory. If you do me the honor to accept it, you will please inform me by a line.”

To this communication Governor Johnston replied from Edenton on the 19th of February, 1789:

“I have had the pleasure of receiving your letter of the 28th of January respecting the bust of Chevalier John Paul Jones. I will readily accept it on behalf of the State, and will communicate your letter to the next General Assembly, that they make such order as they may think proper respecting it.”

This letter is evidence that Paul Jones received his appointment from North Carolina, and the spirit it manifests indicates the excellence of Mr. Burton. In 1801 Mr. Burton was employed by the State in the settlement of the long-disputed boundary between North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia.

Mr. Burton was very successful in his farming operations, and was a man of affluence and high consideration. He married the only daughter of Judge Williams, and left nine children surviving him at his death in 1825. Two of his sons, Alfred M. Burton and Robert H. Burton, both of whom were educated at the University, moved to Lincoln County. The latter, who was born in 1781, having studied law, married the daughter of John Fulenwider, and became connected with the important families of that region. He rose to the head of the bar, and in 1818 was appointed a judge of the Superior Court. After riding one circuit, however, he resigned. In 1830 he was elected treasurer of the State, but

declined that office. His daughter Frances married Colonel Michael Hoke, who had studied law under him, and who made the brilliant campaign for governor in opposition to Hon. William A. Graham in 1844. A son sprung from that union was the distinguished Confederate general, Robert Frederick Hoke.

It is said that Noel Hunt Burton was a barrister of Kingsbridge, London, and had in Virginia three sons, Hutchings, Benjamin and John Pleasants; and that Hutchings Burton had three sons, one of whom was Hutchings, who became governor of North Carolina, and another was Robert Burton, the subject of this sketch.

W. E. Dodd.



burg County; and in 1784 he removed to Blanford, and from there to Lunenburg, Cumberland Parish. He was a fine scholar, and taught a classical school, and William and Mary College conferred the degree of D.D. upon him. In 1789, there being no bishop of the American branch of the church, the diocese of Virginia was laid off into districts, and the clergy of each district chose one of their number with the title of "Visitor," whose duty it was to visit each parish in the district, to see that the canons of the church were observed, to inspect the morals of the clergy and report the state of each parish to the convention, and Dr. Cameron was chosen the "Visitor" of his district, being the country south of the James River.

When the movement was made in Virginia to deprive the churches of their glebe lands as being the property of the public, in 1790, Dr. Cameron was appointed by the convention chairman of the committee to prepare a memorial to the legislature asserting the right of the churches to their glebes, a duty which he performed thoroughly; but the legislature not taking favorable action, the constitutionality of the statute was made the subject of appeal to the Court of Appeals, where an opinion in consonance with Dr. Cameron's views was prepared by the Chief Justice, Edmund Pendleton, whose sudden death, however, the night before the delivery of his opinion caused a halt in the proceedings. The successor of Judge Pendleton concurred with the dissenting judge, thus producing a divided court; and hence the question of the constitutionality of the Virginia statute depriving the churches of their glebes has never been finally determined by the Court of Appeals.

In 1777 Duncan Cameron, the eldest son of Dr. Cameron, was born in Mecklenburg County, Virginia. He studied law, and, removing to North Carolina, was admitted to the bar in 1798; and located at first in Martinsville, the county seat of Guilford, but subsequently removed to Hillsboro; and in 1803 he married Rebecca, the only daughter of Richard Bennehan, a wealthy merchant and planter of Orange County.

In the year 1800 he served as clerk of the Court of Conference,

then established, and reported the cases decided in conference, the earliest reports published in this State. He was frequently a member of the Assembly, and in 1814 was elected judge of the Superior Court, a position he held, however, only two years, when he resumed the practice of the law, while managing his extensive agricultural interests. He was a progressive man in public affairs as well as in the administration of his large plantations. In 1829 he became president of the State Bank of North Carolina, and for twenty years conducted its affairs with unparalleled ability and success. He served as a member of the Board of Internal Improvements, and such was the estimate of his judgment and capacity that he was selected as chairman of the committee to build the present State Capitol, and also chairman of the committee to build Christ Church, and the admirable manner in which those important works were accomplished attests the value of his supervision and direction. He adorned his fine plantation at Fairtosh with a residence which has ever been the admiration of his friends, and he conducted the operation of his great estate with sagacity and a strict adherence to the principles of a sound political economy. His own looms converted his wool and cotton into clothing for his slaves, and his shoemakers, carpenters, blacksmiths and other artisans combined to make the diversified work on the plantation a development of practical industry that was no less profitable than interesting.

In his relations to the State and to society, to politics, to the law, to finance, to education and to measures of internal improvements, he was always conspicuous and foremost among the most useful and eminent of his contemporaries; and he was a devoted churchman, exercising great influence not only in the diocese, but in the general convention as well. The General Theological Seminary was first established in New York in 1817, and then moved to New Haven. In 1821 it was proposed to move it back to New York. At that time the Virginia clergy and lay delegates strongly urged that there should be established a theological professorship in the college of William and Mary, and, fearing the overpowering influence of New York, they opposed the location

of the seminary in that State. Judge Cameron preferred that it should not be located in New York, but there were reasons which led him to advocate that location rather than some alternative proposition. Says Bishop White: "All the members of the committee concurred in giving praise to Judge Cameron of North Carolina for the ability and good temper manifested by him in the progress of the business." And Bishop Meade says: "I remember well how he applied the prophetic words of the patriarch Jacob, that 'the scepter should not depart from Judah until Shiloh come; and unto him should be the gathering of the nations;'" and the good bishop continues: "Whether Judge Cameron, with all of his purity of motive and strength of mind and practical wisdom was in this instance right, or those so greatly his inferiors in all respects, let subsequent events and the present controlling influence of New York in the conduct of the General Seminary declare." Says Bishop Meade: "Of him it may be said, as of Sir Matthew Hale, 'A light, saith the pulpit, a light, saith the bar.'" And it was largely through his influence that Bishop Atkinson was made the bishop of North Carolina. These references indicate the high position accorded to Judge Cameron in the general convention.

The brothers of Judge Cameron who came to North Carolina were Hon. John A. Cameron, a lawyer, a fine writer and an accomplished gentleman, who represented Fayetteville in the House of Commons from 1810 to 1812. He was appointed United States Consul to Vera Cruz, and while Florida was a Territory he was appointed a member of the Supreme Court of that Territory by the President of the United States, and served as such until his death. He perished on the unfortunate steamer *Pulaski*, on the 14th of June, 1838, on his passage from Savannah to Charleston.

Dr. Thomas N. Cameron, who also located at Fayetteville, and who represented Cumberland County in the State Senate from 1844, 1846 and 1850, dying June, 1851, loved and respected by all who knew him.

And Mr. William Cameron, who, coming to North Carolina

about 1825, located in Orange County, where he became an extensive planter.

A daughter of Judge Cameron married Mr. George W. Mordecai, who succeeded him as president of the Bank of the State of North Carolina, and who enjoyed the reputation of being a man of the highest financial ability. During the uncertainties of the war Mr. Mordecai saved much gold of that bank, and proposed to convert the bank into a national bank, but was deterred from doing so by the advice of the bank's attorney, Hon. B. F. Moore. There were no children born to Mrs. Mordecai, and Judge Cameron's other children died unmarried, except Mr. Paul Carrington Cameron, who has left descendants.

S. A. Ashe.



student at Washington College, now Trinity, at Hartford, Connecticut, where he graduated in 1829.

Returning home about the time that his father had become president of the State Bank, there devolved upon him duties in connection with the management of the vast and varied interests of the family. His inclination was for the bar, but the necessities of the situation drew him to agriculture. He studied law with his father, and was admitted to the bar, but did not engage in the practice except for a short while. A more useful career was in store for him than that of a mere professional character. His conception of an intelligent and progressive agriculturist was embodied in an address delivered by him before an agricultural society at Hillsboro, in 1830, when he was just entering on the activities of life; and in its scope and character, no less than in its language and sentiment, it was one of the most remarkable addresses ever delivered in the State. It was replete with practical wisdom and adorned with literary excellence, and was worthy of a man of mature years and judgment ripened by the reflections of an extended experience. He saw in agriculture the great main-spring of commerce, of prosperity and of social happiness, and the foundation upon which was laid the great superstructure of human advancement and enlightenment; and he regarded it as an industry that should be advanced by the highest skill and intelligence and elevated by all the appliances that could be drawn from science. In his view the vocation called for the highest capacity, and he addressed himself to it with all the earnestness of his nature. For more than a half century Mr. Cameron excelled as a planter and a business man, and exhibited an administrative and financial ability and an energy that excited admiration, while his character, manhood and unbending integrity secured to him the highest respect and the confidence of all with whom he came in contact.

When twenty-four years of age, on the 20th of December, 1832, Mr. Cameron married Anne, daughter of Chief Justice Ruffin, and enjoyed a wedded life extending through nearly sixty years. Hillsboro has ever been noted for the superior excellence of its

society, and the home of Mr. and Mrs. Cameron was the center of a refined and cultivated circle not excelled elsewhere in the Southern States.

On the death of his father, in 1853, Mr. Cameron succeeded to the entire management of his vast estate, and at the outbreak of the war was in control of some 1900 slaves; and as the head of a family, as a citizen and as a manager of such extensive interests, embracing the care, comfort and happiness of so many human beings, his career becomes a study of particular interest. He was always controlled by the strictest sense of honor and justice and by an unflinching adherence to what he deemed right. An independent thinker, he was governed only by the principle of duty. Possessed of a great, strong mind, with views broadened by large experience and much association with men of the first water, like his revered father and father-in-law and other connections of no less admirable characteristics, he had the habit of forming his own opinions and acting upon them with resolution and determination. Indeed, he was a man among men, remarkable for his force, his energy, his wisdom and character. In his views of life he was not wedded to old things, but sought development and advancement and to keep abreast of the best thought of the day. While conservative in his action, he was still for progress.

When the North Carolina Railroad was to be built, Mr. Cameron was instrumental in procuring the last \$100,000 of the \$1,000,000 to be taken by individuals. This last tenth seemed more difficult to procure than the other nine-tenths. After the Salisbury meeting, at which Mr. William Boylan brought the figure up to \$900,000, there was great rejoicing, and greater still when Mr. Cameron secured the remaining \$100,000 at the Hillsboro meeting. He also set the example of undertaking a large contract for the construction of a portion of the line, and he was the first contractor to finish his work. For a number of years he was a director of that company, and when its president, Colonel Fisher, resigned in July, 1861, to take command of the Sixth North Carolina Regiment, Mr. Cameron succeeded him in the presi-

dency, and administered its affairs under the trying and difficult circumstances of that period with great ability.

He had managed his private affairs so successfully that his estate had annually increased in magnitude, and in 1861 he was the wealthiest man in North Carolina.

The results of the war swept away the greater part of his large fortune, and he found himself embarrassed because of the disorganized labor; but by his energy, prudent management and fine business abilities he succeeded in repairing the ravages of the war, and re-established himself as the wealthiest citizen of the State.

He extended his interest in other lines than agriculture, and became a stockholder in railroad properties, and for many years was a director of the Raleigh and Gaston Railroad, and also of the Raleigh and Augusta Air Line Railroad. He also invested in banks, and was a stockholder in the Raleigh National Bank, and he was one of the principal organizers of the Citizens' Bank at Raleigh. He also invested in manufacturing enterprises, and he became a large stockholder and director in two of the factories at Rockingham, in Richmond County, and in the Cotton Mills at Rocky Mount, and also in two of the largest mills in Augusta, Georgia. Thus he used his means to aid in building up the industries of the State, and the influence of his example, because of his well-known ability and capacity and the confidence felt in his judgment, was highly beneficial to the enterprises he engaged in.

As interested as Mr. Cameron was in his agricultural and other business, which largely claimed his attention, he still found time to concern himself with the great questions that appealed to the intelligence of the community. His interest in education was unflagging. It had happened that on the failure of the Episcopal School for Boys, established in Raleigh in 1833, the school property, when sold, was purchased by his father, Judge Cameron, who arranged for the establishment there of St. Mary's School for Girls; and in a measure Mr. Cameron was interested in that school from the beginning as the owner of the property. After

his death the property was sold to the diocese of North Carolina for the same use. Later, when the Tew Military Academy near Hillsboro fell into decay by reason of the death of Colonel Tew and a sale was made of that property, Mr. Cameron purchased it and sought to establish there a school of the highest grade, with a military feature in connection with classical, literary and business training. To that end he secured the services of Mr. Ralph H. Graves and James H. Horner, educators of long experience and of the first repute. Unhappily, Mr. Graves died suddenly, and Mr. Horner's health failing, he was forced to abandon the work. Although the school was continued for some time, eventually the institution was closed. His grandfather, Mr. Richard Bennahan, was one of the founders and earliest benefactors of the University; his father was a faithful trustee, and Mr. Cameron himself manifested the deepest interest in the welfare of this institution. In the dark days which came to the University after the war, and when ruin menaced its existence and seemed inevitable, Mr. Cameron lent his aid with readiness, and no one was more earnest or more efficient in restoring it to its prestige of usefulness. It was his cherished mission in the latter days of his life to perform the work of encouragement, of counsel and of supervision. One of the faculty has said by way of tribute to his memory that he was "a friend and counsellor under Swain and a father and guide under Battle." His judicious and liberal pecuniary advancement to the work of repair resulted in the renovation of dilapidated buildings and in securing to the University structures ample for existing needs. He grew to watch the institution with a solicitude with which a fond father regards the destiny of a loved child. His visits to it were frequent, often on business, more often from an affectionate wish to observe it gaining in strength and power and enlarged usefulness. He was never absent from any meeting of the Board of Trustees, nor ever failed to respond to an invitation to attend a meeting of the faculty, to which, in the capacity of an adviser, he was frequently called. At the annual festivals he was often called upon to speak, and he performed this duty with cheerfulness, with dignity and

with power, for he had fine gifts as a public speaker. At the commencement of 1885 he delivered the oration on the dedication of Memorial Hall, being then in his seventy-seventh year, and his address was no less remarkable for its scholarly diction and deep feeling than for the vigorous thought that pervaded it. He had generously supplied the funds to complete the structure, and his address was in thorough accord and harmony with the deep interest he felt in the completion of the building. Although not a graduate, for many years he was unanimously elected chairman of the Alumni Association, and apparently he felt more interest and solicitude in the growth and prosperity of the institution than in the promotion of the success of any other matter with which he was connected.

Mr. Cameron, like most of the other gentlemen of the State, in early life espoused the doctrines and policies of Henry Clay, and he clung tenaciously to his party principles and zealously supported Whig measures until, as the portentous questions of sectional import began to overcast the political sky, and the Northern wing of his party gave unmistakable token that it had become sectionalized, imperilling the peace of the country and menacing the institutions of the South, he and many others of the Whigs of North Carolina unreservedly surrendered their old convictions and ranged themselves in line with the Democratic Party, to which he undeviatingly adhered until the day of his death. He had no desire for political preferment. Public station could add nothing to the dignity of his character or to the power which his station in life, his wealth and strong intellect conferred upon him. However, yielding to the wishes of his friends, in 1856 he represented Orange County in the State Senate as a Democrat. In that body he took high rank as a laborious, useful and able member. Of his career as senator Wheeler says: "Wherever an important committee could procure Mr. Cameron as its chairman, the public felt secure that the business in hand would be done and well done." At the succeeding election the issues were such that Josiah Turner, Jr., who had been his former opponent, however, carried the district against him by a small majority, free suffrage

being then in operation, and Mr. Cameron not being popular with the floating and unstable vote. His interest in public affairs was always keen, and after the war he was an earnest party man, and sometimes attended the Democratic conventions. He was the life-long friend of Governor Seymour of New York, who had been his classmate at college, and when Governor Seymour was a nominee for the Presidency he wrote to Mr. Cameron that "in the event of my election I will depend upon you as one of my chief advisers in the South." In 1876 he was chairman of the North Carolina delegation to the Democratic convention which nominated Mr. Tilden for the Presidency, and although not in politics, he exerted a great influence on the political actions of others.

In the dark days of Reconstruction he was pronounced in his course, and in the crisis of affairs, in August, 1870, when Josiah Turner was arrested at Hillsboro by a detachment of Kirk's soldiery, his indignation was without bounds. On the return of Mr. Turner to Hillsboro after being liberated by Judge Brooks, Mr. Cameron was one of the leaders in giving him the ovation at Hillsboro, manifesting on that occasion the most patriotic spirit. Indeed, he stood out in bold relief, an unobtrusive man, yet a man of great force, dominating others by his large powers and strong characteristics. He watched the course of public affairs with intelligent solicitude; he scanned the newspapers with eagerness, and often indulged in sharp criticism or warm commendation, and with keen discrimination he reviewed the course of public men and discussed the measures proposed by them from a standpoint of a citizen largely interested in the public welfare.

With advancing years there was no decline in his mental vigor or in his faculties, which were ever worthy of his illustrious lineage and in accord with the dignity of his imperious nature. At the age of eighty-three he passed away at his residence in Hillsboro, greatly lamented; and the governor of the State and other State officials and many public men of note, the president and a deputation of the faculty and student body of the University, together with a vast concourse of citizens, attended his funeral, paying him the last tribute of their respect at the grave.

Such is the outline of the life of one whose impression upon his times will not soon be effaced, whose strong personality is stamped on features not to be forgotten, whose influence for good will long act upon those who fell within its sphere.

The lines of the poet Armstrong furnish of him an illustration so apt as to have been quoted by one who knew him very intimately :

“Though old, he still retained
His manly sense and energy of mind;
Virtuous and wise he was, but not severe;
He still remembered that he once was young;
His easy presence checked no decent joy;
Him even the dissolute admired, for he
A graceful looseness, when he pleased, put on,
And, laughing, could instruct.”

S. A. Ashe.



course, he entered the Eastman Business College at Poughkeepsie, New York, and after a year there became a student at the Virginia Military Institute at Lexington in 1871, the University of North Carolina not being then open for students. He graduated on the 4th of July, 1875, taking distinction both in academic studies and in military proficiency. Indeed, on the day of his graduation, so thorough was he in his studies and so excellent was his bearing and character, that he was tendered the position of commandant of the corps of cadets and of professor of tactics, ordnance and gunnery in the Kentucky Military Institute at Bolling Green.

His purpose, however, was to seek a professional career as a lawyer, a vocation more in accord with his taste and capacity and offering a broader field of usefulness and more in consonance with his laudable ambition, and therefore he declined this flattering offer of the Kentucky Military Institute, and returning home, he became a law student of his uncle, William K. Ruffin, who possessed a great legal mind and was an excellent instructor, and who, indeed, was thought by some to excel even his eminent father, Chief Justice Ruffin.

Admitted to the bar in 1877, well prepared and equipped for his profession, Mr. Cameron entered upon the work of mastering the details of professional life in the office of the law firm of Messrs. Graham & Ruffin at Hillsboro, but circumstances led him to relinquish his purpose to practice the law, and he took charge of the plantation at Stagville, near Fairntosh, and devoted himself to agriculture, following in the footsteps of his admirable father. Mr. Paul Cameron was now well advanced in years, and was nearing the close of his active career, and needed the aid of his son in the management of his large and varied interests. In this field of activity, which called for the application of a very high order of intelligence, Mr. Cameron found ample exercise for his best capabilities, and he addressed himself zealously to the details of the important work committed to his charge. He became an excellent farmer, versed in the practice of handling and planting the products of his fields, and in his career as an agriculturist he met with gratifying success; and continuing it, he

has taken a special pride in his stock farm, where he bred fine horses and elegant herds of Jersey cattle.

Possessed of both Fairintosh and Stagville, which for a period of one hundred and forty years has been the property of his ancestors, forming one of the most important and interesting estates in North Carolina, Mr. Cameron has had ample means and sufficient leisure to enter upon other fields of usefulness and engage in other enterprises. He has taken a prominent part in many affairs of importance, his fine ability, capacity, executive talent and energy leading to his employment in business positions of high consequence. He was instrumental in the organization of the First National Bank of Durham and of the Morehead Banking Company, of which he was one of the original directors. He also became interested in phosphate lands and in the cultivation of orange groves in Florida, being a director in the company controlling the affairs with which he was concerned in those branches of business. He also organized and is still a director of the Rocky Mount Mills.

His prominence as an agriculturist has been recognized on many occasions. When the Cotton Growers' Protective Association was formed, he became one of the vice-presidents, and has been constantly continued in that position. He has been president of the North Carolina State Fair Association, and conducted the affairs committed to his charge with great sagacity and signal ability. He attended the meeting of the Farmers' National Congress in 1901, and received prompt recognition by his election as second vice-president of that body, and in 1903 he was elected first vice-president. Indeed, he has been active, energetic and zealous in all matters that have had a bearing on the advancement of the agricultural interests of the South and the industrial development of that region.

In such matters but few, if any, others have been more useful to his fellow-citizens engaged in agricultural pursuits. In railroad circles he has likewise been of influence and of singular usefulness. He was a director of the North Carolina Railroad, and made successful opposition in the courts against the surrender of the

tax exemption, which was secured by the charter of the company, but which the State administration proposed to relinquish. And he was also active, energetic and influential in maintaining before the courts and the legislature the lease of the North Carolina Railroad to the Southern Railway, which has had the effect of giving much additional value to the shares of stock in that company. He was one of the committee that built the Union Depot at Raleigh and the Caraleigh Railroad branch. But as important as his work in connection with the North Carolina Railroad has been, that in regard to the Seaboard Air Line has largely excelled it in beneficial results. He was also a promoter of the Oxford and Clarksville Railroad, of the Lynchburg and Durham Railroad and of the Durham and Northern Railroad, and, indeed, the Oxford and Coast Line Railroad was built in his name. He strongly urged the construction of the Richmond, Petersburg and Carolina Railroad, which connects with the old Raleigh and Gaston at Norlina, and he introduced the resolution in the stockholders' meeting of the Raleigh and Gaston under which that important connection was constructed. But his greatest service to that system of railroad lines, which was also a distinct benefit and advantage to the agricultural section tributary to that system, was his successful effort in influencing the consolidation of all those railways into the great Seaboard Air Line system. It had been committed to him to secure a great part of the legislation necessary for the organization of the consolidated companies; and he was most successful in the accomplishment of the purpose, and he presided at a number of the meetings that resulted in the formation of that great railway line of 2600 miles; and this consolidation has resulted in great benefits to the agricultural communities served by that railroad system.

His services in other departments of usefulness have likewise been remarkable. Well trained at the Virginia Military Institute, a year after his graduation it was his distinguished privilege to introduce at the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia, in 1876, the speaker of the House of Representatives of Congress, Hon. Samuel J. Randall, to the corps of cadets of the Military Institute

of Virginia, whom Mr. Randall welcomed to Pennsylvania soil in terms of patriotic eulogy. In 1877, while a law student at Hillsboro, he organized the Orange Guards, one of the few volunteer companies of the State, and which was one of the original companies forming the nucleus of what became the State Guards, and Mr. Cameron became captain of that company. On changing his residence to Stagville, however, he resigned his office of captain, but was at once appointed assistant inspector-general by Governor Vance, a position for which his admirable training and fine military carriage well fitted him, and he continued to serve the State in this capacity under the administrations of Governor Jarvis and Governor Scales, through a term of ten years; and on the inauguration of Governor Fowle he was commissioned as inspector-general of rifle practice with the rank of colonel, and continued to perform those duties during the administrations of Governor Holt and Governor Carr, and was thus in continuous service from 1871 to 1897, twenty-six years. In his military capacity Colonel Cameron has not only been an efficient officer, but has on several occasions represented the State of North Carolina with high credit. He represented the State in his official capacity on the brilliant occasion of the Yorktown Centennial, and during Governor Scales's administration he represented the State at the centennial of the adoption of the constitution, serving on the staff of General Phil. Sheridan, who, as the commanding general of the army, reviewed at that time 80,000 troops. Similarly, he was appointed by Governor Fowle as an aide to represent North Carolina on the staff of Major-General Schofield at the Inauguration Centennial of President George Washington at New York on April 30, 1889, when 100,000 troops were in line. Again he represented North Carolina on the staff of General Clinton Payne, who was commander of the Maryland troops in the military review and sham battle and bombardment of Fort McHenry on the occasion of the Maryland Exposition at Baltimore. By appointment of Governor Holt he represented North Carolina on the Military Committee of the Columbian Exposition at Chicago. By the selection of Senators Vance and Ransom, he represented

North Carolina on the staff of the chief marshal at the inauguration of President Cleveland after his second election. His familiarity with public men and pleasant relations with them have led to his being very useful in securing legislation. In particular, he was appointed by the Society of Cincinnati, of which he is a member, to secure the passage through Congress of a bill providing for the erection of monuments to General Nash and to General Davidson, those devoted patriots who fell on the battlefield during the Revolution; and although it was a difficult matter to succeed, yet he interested so many influential senators and representatives that finally the appropriation was made and the monuments erected in the Guilford Battle Grounds. General Fitzhugh Lee, with whom he had the most pleasant relations, being the president of the Jamestown Exposition, placed in his charge the bill asking aid from North Carolina for that exposition, and Colonel Cameron managed that matter so well that General Lee was invited to address the legislature, and he secured the passage of the measure. Indeed, he has often appeared before the legislatures of this and other States, and he has invariably produced a good impression for the measures he has advocated, among his characteristics being thoroughness in detail, frankness of statement and a pleasant and interesting manner of presenting his views and enforcing them. As a speaker he is agreeable and attractive, and on every occasion where he has been called on to participate in a public function he has borne himself with credit to the State and with advantage to the cause he represents. One of his happiest efforts was his response, as first vice-president of the Farmers' National Congress, to the address of welcome of the governor of Missouri at St. Louis during the Louisiana Purchase Exposition; another was before the committee to urge the passage of the Isthmian Canal, whose opening it is expected will benefit so much the southern portion of the Union.

Descended from an illustrious ancestry, Colonel Cameron is a hereditary member of the North Carolina Society of the Cincinnati, representing Major Clement Read Nash, who was killed at the Battle of Yorktown, and he is also entitled to represent

Captain Thomas Amis of Halifax. In the Cincinnati Colonel Cameron is assistant treasurer, and he was a delegate from North Carolina to attend, at Philadelphia, in 1897, the unveiling of the monument erected by the society to Washington as its first president. And he has attended as a delegate the triennial meetings of the General Society at New York, at Hartford and in 1905 at Richmond. On the latter occasion the guest of honor, both at its banquet at Richmond and on the trip to Yorktown, was Monsieur Jusserand, the French Ambassador to the United States, who represented the French Society of the Cincinnati. In the famous old Moore house at Yorktown, Colonel Cameron recalled that in 1881, at the centennial celebration of Cornwallis's surrender, he drank punch with General Rochambeau and General Boulanger, members of the French society, on the very spot where the articles of British surrender were signed. On that occasion, also, resolutions presented by Colonel Cameron in respect to the memory of General Fitzhugh Lee were adopted, after an eloquent eulogium pronounced upon that fine officer by Colonel Cameron.

In his political affiliations Colonel Cameron is a Democrat, and he has always been influential in the councils of his party, but he has never sought political preferment and has no taste for political life. He has that manly and independent spirit which cannot be brought to bend and fawn in order to obtain the objects of even a laudable ambition.

In all of his multifarious relations Colonel Cameron has not omitted to give encouragement to education. He is chairman of the North Carolina branch of the Society of Alumni of the Virginia Military Institute, and is a trustee of the University of North Carolina, and secured the establishment of ten scholarships at that institution by the Paul C. Cameron heirs, and otherwise he has manifested his hearty sympathy in the general cause of education. When it was proposed, in 1905, to elect a president of the University of Virginia, Colonel Cameron recommended to the trustees of that institution Dr. E. A. Alderman, a North Carolinian, urging that the first president of that famous institution should be a

Southern man; and he had the satisfaction of seeing Dr. Alderman chosen, and of attending at his installation.

In like manner Colonel Cameron manifests an interest in all public matters that appertain to the welfare of his community and to the advantage of society, and a spirit of beneficence leads to a generous liberality in promoting such objects.

The social side of Colonel Cameron's life has been cast in most fortunate lines. His mother, Annie Ruffin, a daughter of Chief Justice Ruffin, moved in a charming circle of relatives and friends, amid elegance, refinement and culture, and these influences were most happy in their effects upon her children, and Colonel Cameron grew up not merely the manly man, but the courteous, polished gentleman.

On the 28th of October, 1891, Colonel Cameron was married to Miss Sallie T. Mayo, a daughter of Mr. P. H. Mayo, a distinguished citizen of Richmond, who is descended from one of Virginia's oldest and best-known families; and their home has ever been a seat of elegant hospitality. Indeed, like his father and grandfather, he has entertained all the distinguished gentlemen of national fame who have visited Raleigh, when his fine mansion was open for the reception of guests. For some years Colonel Cameron resided much at Fairintosh, but in 1894 he removed to his residence in Raleigh, originally built by his grandfather, Judge Duncan Cameron, and which has been rendered still more beautiful by the taste of Mrs. Cameron and himself.

Of Colonel Cameron's fine characteristics much might be said, and we must not omit to recall here one incident in which he displayed heroism and nerve in a remarkable degree on a memorable occasion. It was on the night of August 27, 1891, when one of the most fatal railroad wrecks in the history of this country occurred on the Western North Carolina Railroad near Statesville. Of near a hundred passengers, he was the only one who was not either killed or so desperately wounded as to be utterly helpless; and by his coolness and nerve and persistent efforts he rescued many fellow-passengers and saved them from certain death. He was a veritable hero in that deplorable calamity; and

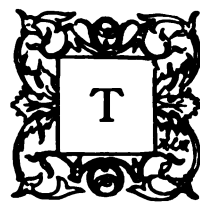
the public recognized his fine action, his pluck and heroic exertions in terms of the highest praise, and the press rang with expressions of unstinted commendation of his bravery and energetic action and admirable conduct. But as admirable as his conduct was on that occasion, it was only in accord with his fine spirit, which was natural to one who had such an illustrious descent and in whose veins ran the blood of such noble ancestors—the Camerons, the Ruffins, the Kirklands, the Bennehans, the Nashes and the Amises—being ever distinguished for those characteristics that adorn the highest manhood.

S. A. Ashe.





RICHARD CASWELL



THE decade 1744-54 is one of the most important epochs in all North Carolina history. It was a period of pioneering when thousands came yearly—all denominations, all classes—and took up the vacant lands made so attractive by the agents of Lord Granville and the Crown. Immigrants did not even wait for their claims to be staked off, but turning to the right and to the left, they took up such lands as were available. Among those who came to North Carolina during this period was Richard Caswell, a young surveyor. North Carolina was an attractive field for one of his profession and for one who desired land on easy terms.

Richard Caswell was born in Maryland, August 3, 1729. It is said that his father's failure in mercantile business caused him, when a young man, to seek his fortune elsewhere; and when only seventeen years of age he came to North Carolina bearing letters of introduction from the governor of Maryland to Governor Johnston of North Carolina, who gave him opportunity to exercise his profession. Caswell early made himself acquainted with the land offices, and at once began to take advantage of the inducements offered by land agents to immigrate to this province; and within the next two years he had obtained possession of as much as 3385 acres of land—1885 in Johnston County and 1500 in Anson County. Caswell's activity recommended his services

to the governor, and he was appointed deputy surveyor of North Carolina in 1750. He was then just twenty-one years of age. This was at a time when the surveyor was one of the most important offices, for at every sitting of the Council thousands of acres of land were disposed of. He served in this capacity two years, when he was appointed clerk of the court for Orange County. His duties here caused him to turn his attention to the legal profession, which was making an effort to elevate the courts, that were at this time corrupt.

Governor Johnston died in 1752. His administration had suspended action to all intent and purposes during the previous six or eight years. The courts were defunct, liberty was threatening to run into rank lawlessness. The people had long since ceased to pay taxes or to have, in many places, respect for any court rules or rulings. There was a constant stream of immigration, and very little centralized government worthy of the name. In 1754 the aged Arthur Dobbs became governor, and Richard Caswell for the first time appeared as a representative of the people from Johnston County, for whom he was to labor constantly for the next thirty-five years.

The General Assembly at this time was composed to a degree of officeholders under the Crown, such as sheriffs, clerks and other court officials. One of Caswell's first measures was a bill to prohibit this evil. It passed the House, but was killed in the Council, on the grounds that such restrictions would make it impossible to get good representatives from the back counties if these officials were excluded. It was claimed that these were the only competent officials from the west to sit in the Assembly.

As a clerk of the court of Orange County, he had been in a position to see the inconvenience and hardship that the court system bore upon the inhabitants of the back country. Jurymen could be summoned from the far west and made to appear, without compensation, on duty at New-Bern, the only place where general court was held. If any litigation should arise involving more than £20 sterling, no matter in what remote section of the State, the old freemen must go down to New-Bern before he could get

a hearing. It was Caswell's bill that divided the State into five judicial districts. The chief justice was the only judge in the province who was supposed to know the law. His associates were not required to be grounded even in the least in legal knowledge. These officials were not paid salaries. Their compensation came through fees. The chief justice sold the office of clerk to the highest bidder, and the committee of which Caswell was a member reported that this practice had "accustomed them to be guilty of great extortion, whereby the proceedings in the Superior Courts have been the scenes of oppression and the conduct of the chief justice and his clerks subject-matter of universal contempt." Henceforth his greatest work for the people was in trying to elevate and purify the courts. He worked incessantly for reforms. It was evident, though, from the contemptible bias of the doughty old governor, that few reforms could be hoped for. Mr. Caswell was a member of the committee that proposed the court laws that came up from time to time, but which were turned down by the governor. Should the legislature or the governor appoint an agent in London? Should the legislature restrict the qualifications of the associate justices to persons who knew the law? Should the chief justice continue to sell the office of clerk to the highest bidder? Which should appoint the public treasurer? Should the justices receive fees or salaries? Which should appoint the public printer? Should indifferent jurymen be provided? Throughout Governor Dobbs's administration it was fought out along these lines. A compromise would be reached. The next legislature would witness the same struggle, only more intense, until the whole trouble was carried over into the next administration.

During this great struggle Caswell was a member of almost every important committee. He worked to make the payment of quit-rents more systematic. He voted to strengthen the frontier against invasion, and was chairman of a committee of three to inspect the western settlements. From the very first he labored to develop the internal resources. He sought to establish iron and silk industries and to encourage trade. He sought to secure

better court laws, and drew the bill for improving the jury system ; and when the governor was disposed to lower the dignity of the legal profession, he joined with his colleagues in a set of resolutions condemning Governor Dobbs for "granting license to persons to practice law who are ignorant even of the rudiments of that science," saying "that it is a reproach to government, a disgrace to the profession and greatly injurious to suitors."

In 1765 William Tryon succeeded Governor Dobbs. After having brought his royal prerogatives in conflict with the people over the Stamp Act and with the legislature over the question of appointing officers, the new executive learned the ways of the people of North Carolina and became really a very able governor.

The contest as to which, the Council or the House of Commons, should appoint the public treasurer for the southern province, which arose on the death of Allen in 1750, arose again on the death of Starkey. This was possibly the most important office in the province next to that of governor. The House claiming the exclusive right to name the treasurer, appointed Mr. Caswell, who had made himself familiar with the economic conditions of the province, but when the bill went to the Council, that body struck out his name and inserted that of Mr. DeRossett. The House insisted on its appointee, which not being agreed to by the Council, no treasurer was appointed at that session. Mr. Caswell had been too prominent in the Court Law fight. At the next session the House of Commons again claimed the power to appoint, and appointed John Ashe. The Council at first adhered to De Rossett, but without surrendering its claim, adjusted the matter by making Mr. Ashe its nominee also.

The money question was all out of joint. It was the transition period from commodities to a metallic basis as the medium of exchange. Caswell was an earnest advocate of issuing paper money. This the Crown objected to. In 1769, in an address to the governor, prepared at the request of the legislature, Caswell said that an emission of paper currency would have obtained the redress so necessary to the distressed situation. The province was heavily in debt, considering the state of the currency. Sheriffs

were trying to collect the taxes in money—taxes levied by the legislature. Money could not be obtained. The sheriffs were sometimes unscrupulous, and riots broke out. Investigations were made. Many of the reported frauds were true. Some were false. The people in many sections refused to pay their taxes. The legislature, though, was powerless; and when the disturbances would not down, the legislature passed laws directed against the outbreaks. This inflamed the passions of the people in many sections, and the governor was authorized to put down the rebellion. The leaders of the Assembly joined with Tryon in trying to preserve order, and made appropriations to cover expenses in his efforts.

John Harvey was now growing feeble, and in the Assembly of 1770 Richard Caswell, being the recognized leader of the House, was unanimously elected speaker. In his address, adopted by the General Assembly, replying to Governor Tryon's message, he said, speaking of the "Regulator" outbreak, that "the deliberate and preconceived malice with which it was contrived, and the brutal fury with which it was executed, equally bespeaks them unawed by the laws of their country, insensible to every moral duty and wickedly disaffected to government itself." The House acted in harmony with the governor, who, about the middle of March, determined to act. An army was raised. Governor Tryon took the field, and on the 16th of May, 1771, he marched into the disaffected sections near Hillsboro, and after a short engagement put down the insurrection. This is known as the battle of Alamance. Caswell, who had been appointed colonel, marched with the army and commanded the right wing. The legislature, in the strongest terms, commended Governor Tryon for his services and denounced the Regulators. Later, the legislature pensioned several of the soldiers who were wounded in this battle, and Caswell himself introduced the bill. The outbreak was looked upon as an insurrection directed against the legislature, the only organized representative body of the people. When Tryon next issued his proclamation of pardon to all who would come in, surrender their arms, *agree to pay their taxes* and take an oath

to support the laws of the land, the inhabitants came in large numbers and subscribed to the oath. Thus the insurrection ended. But it left its impress on the people.

Before Governor Tryon could send his army home he was ordered to New York, and Josiah Martin became governor. The new governor, coming into power in 1771, inherited all the troubles of his predecessor. Richard Caswell continued as speaker in the next General Assembly. The first work was to pass a bill to cut down the poll tax. Governor Martin became furious, rejected the bill and dissolved the Assembly. The Assembly had prepared a resolution discontinuing the tax and indemnifying the sheriff for not collecting it, but the dissolution prevented its being entered on the minutes. Mr. Caswell, construing this resolve to be the will of the people, informed the treasurers, and they did not require the sheriffs to make the collection. Henceforth the proceedings grew more and more revolutionary. The Assembly that met in January, 1773, took a determined stand in regard to the court laws, which fight was handed down from Governor Dobbs's administration. Harvey was speaker. Richard Caswell was the leader on the floor. He was chairman of the committee that was appointed to bring in a bill for establishing a court system. He was chairman of Committee on Election, also chairman of committee to examine and report on any changes in the old laws. The question of appointing a treasurer arose also. The Council wished to continue Mr. John Ashe, but the Assembly struck out his name and appointed Mr. Caswell.

Governor Martin refused to accept the court laws. Immediately Mr. Caswell introduced another bill, which passed. The governor vetoed this. The legislature would pass no other. Martin dissolved the Assembly and sent the members home. There were no courts in the province. The jails were crowded, and, to be sure, there was a deplorable state of affairs. What should be done? Martin fell back now on his royal prerogative and decided to establish courts of Oyer and Terminer by his own mandate, and, according to his statement, this met the approval of the leaders. Richard Caswell, Martin Howard and Maurice Moore were ap-

pointed judges. Governor Martin says of Caswell that he was "a man of the fairest and most unblemished character in the whole country. One who acted to the universal satisfaction and contentment of all people." His enemies, according to Martin, wished to defeat him for treasurer, and were afraid his popularity as judge would win him too much renown; hence the opposition to the court established by the governor; and Caswell was to be "sacrificed upon the very ground where popular applause was erecting monuments to his honor." It is very evident that the "leaders of the faction hurried for the time the current of popularity against Mr. Caswell," for in the next election for treasurer Mr. Caswell was defeated. The legislature claimed that the establishment of courts of Oyer and Terminer was a prerogative of that body and that the action of the governor was illegal; and they refused to make appropriations defraying the expenses of the new courts, and the work of the newly established courts came to an end.

The hostility against Mr. Caswell could not have been very serious, for one of the first acts of this new Assembly was to appoint a standing Committee of Correspondence to communicate with the other provinces in regard to common troubles, and Mr. Caswell was a member of this committee. The court laws appeared again, and he was appointed on a committee to draw another bill. A break was inevitable, and the Assembly was dissolved.

When John Harvey took matters under advisement, and when the Wilmington district issued circulars to the different counties calling a convention to consider certain public questions and to send delegates to a Continental Congress, Mr. Caswell was a member, and was elected, with Hooper and Hewes, a delegate to Congress. These were indeed stirring times. When Governor Martin ordered a new Assembly, Harvey ordered a new convention. Mr. Caswell was returned from Dobbs County, and the delegates were thanked for their services in attending the Philadelphia convention. The same members were re-elected to attend the next Continental Congress; and after expressing their views

on certain public questions, the convention adjourned. The Assembly had already been dissolved.

When Mr. Caswell started on his second trip to Philadelphia to attend the Continental Congress, the battle of Lexington had been fought. In writing to his son, he spoke of excitements all over the country, of the organization of companies and the preparations being made for the great encounter. He was fired with patriotism and an enthusiasm for his country, that was "fast striding toward independence." He had a deep-seated pride for the glory of North Carolina, and in his letter to his son he said: "It will be a reflection on this country to be behind their neighbors. That it is indispensably necessary for them to arm and form into a company or companies of independents." Then he gave his son directions as to how they should organize a company in Dobbs County. "Reject none," he said, "who will not discredit the company. If I live to return I will most cheerfully join any of my countrymen, even as a rank and file man. As in the common cause I am here exposed to danger, but that or any other difficulties I shall not shun whilst I have blood in my veins, but freely offer it in support of the liberties of my country. You, my dear boy, must become a soldier and risk your life in support of those invaluable blessing which, once lost, posterity will never be able to regain."

This was the spirit of the man whom the people trusted and whom an irate governor at the same time could admire and honor among all the clamor and disturbances of revolutionary proceedings.

John Harvey, the Nestor of the party, was dead. Richard Caswell was now the undisputed leader in North Carolina. Governor Martin became terrified, and on the last of May, 1775, fled the State. Mr. Caswell, on his return from Philadelphia, criticized the authorities of New-Bern very severely for permitting him to depart. This came as an *et tu Brute* to the terrified governor, who hoped until the last that Mr. Caswell would throw his influence on the side of the Crown. When the next Provincial Congress met, Samuel Johnston was made president, and Richard

Caswell was chairman of the Committee of Ways and Means, and relied upon to prepare a plan for equipping an army.

When letters from Massachusetts were read showing the state of affairs in that province, then Congress decided to raise an army of 1000 regulars, and to organize six regiments of minute men, and to strengthen the frontier, and Mr. Caswell was called upon to present a plan of ways and means for carrying out the wishes of Congress. Governor Martin says that "Caswell has promoted the present convention with all his might, and remains here to superintend its movements, and no doubt to inflame it with the extravagant spirit of that Assembly of Philadelphia." Caswell was again made treasurer of the southern district, and appointed colonel of the minute men of his district, and placed on a secret committee for buying arms and ammunition.

Governor Martin now began to call for soldiers and to commission officers. Colonel Caswell was quickly in the field organizing his minute men; and when the Loyalists arose at Cross Creek and sought to give aid to the King's cause, Colonel Moore, who was in command of the regulars, had already made preparations to intercept any move on the part of the Loyalists. Colonel Caswell was ordered to unite with Lillington, while Colonel Moore watched the movements of the Loyalists. On the 24th of February Colonel Caswell gave orders to the inhabitants to destroy all bridges that lay between him and the Highlanders. This was accordingly done. Three days later the Loyalists fell back upon Caswell and Lillington, expecting to destroy them since they were detached from the regular army. A fierce encounter resulted at "Widow Moore's Creek Bridge," with the result that the first great encounter in North Carolina between the King's forces and the patriots ended in a great victory for Colonel Caswell and the brave men who fought under him. When the next Provincial Congress met at Halifax, April 4th, the thanks of Congress were given to Colonel Caswell and his brave men, and on the appointment of brigadier-generals of the militia, he was created the brigadier-general for his district.

The die was cast; independence was next declared. A constitu-

tion and bill of rights were adopted. A new government was launched forth, with General Richard Caswell as the first governor. The new executive began his duties December 24, 1776, at the close of the Provincial Congress that adopted the constitution, and over which he presided as president.

Governor Caswell now turned his attention to the new commonwealth of which he was at the head. It was his genius largely that provided food and clothing, arms and ammunition for the soldiers. Gun factories were established. Iron works were encouraged. While serving as governor, at one time he acted as southern treasurer also. His oldest son, William, starting as ensign, rose to brigadier-general. Governor Caswell wrote him urging him to "put up with hardships, fatigues and inconveniences which others may shudder at." He said, "Let virtue, honor and prudence conduct you." Governor Caswell was at all times solicitous of the conduct and welfare of the North Carolina troops. While they were fighting under Washington around Philadelphia he wrote to his son, "Do tell me of the conduct and behavior of the North Carolina men—how some of them have fallen, whether bravely or otherwise. Though the latter, I flatter myself, you will have no account to give, yet if you have, I wish to know it."

When Washington was hard pressed, in the spring of 1778, the Provincial Congress offered to send him 5000 militia, and asked that the command be conferred on Governor Caswell.

Instead of that, in the fall Congress asked that 5000 men be sent South. Caswell had asked General Ashe to command the troops if they went North, and urged him to take this command, saying that one or the other must go, and that he could not, offering at the same time to act as treasurer in Ashe's place. And to aid General Ashe as much as possible, he moved his headquarters to the camp, near Elizabethtown, in order that he might hurry the detachments forward.

Governor Caswell was now elected to fill a third term. He requested the legislature to increase his salary, on the grounds that the depreciation in the currency was so great that he was unable to live within his income, and it was accordingly raised.

As governor, Caswell had been active, vigilant and most efficient, and at the expiration of this term, being ineligible for re-election, the General Assembly passed resolutions thanking him for his great and valuable services. He was now commissioned major-general and given command of the entire State militia. His son, Brigadier-General William Caswell, had been at the South, and after the fall of Charleston retreated back to Cross Creek. Major-General Caswell now began to make extensive preparations for repelling any British invasion from the south. The British army was approaching the State line. Governor Nash wished to command the State troops as governor and commander-in-chief, but he gave way when he saw the immense popularity of General Caswell, who now joined the army at Cross Creek and began to make immediate preparations to unite with General Gates at Camden. It was an ill-fated expedition. In vain did General Caswell plead with General Gates to fortify himself against an attack, and on the 16th of August, when the army unexpectedly encountered Lord Cornwallis at night, the army was thrown into confusion and disastrously swept from the field, notwithstanding all efforts on the part of General Caswell and General Gates to rally the men. General Caswell, in his retreat, halted at Charlotte to organize his men, then rode straight to Hillsboro. The tide of public sentiment seemed for the time to have gone violently against him, and the command of the State militia was conferred on General Smallwood of Maryland, an experienced officer, and next in rank to General Gates. This so affected him that both he and his son, on October 26, 1780, resigned their commands. Governor Nash also came in for his share of criticism, and a war board was created with powers so great that he threatened to resign unless his constitutional rights were restored.

When the year 1781 opened it looked as if the British would overrun the State. The British seized Wilmington, and Cornwallis took post at Hillsboro. Equipments were not available. Never had there been such demoralization since the new State government was organized. General Caswell had been returned to the General Assembly from Dobbs County. The legislature

in its bewilderment again looked to him to recommend proper measures for the defense of the State. Although hurt over the treatment at the hands of the legislature less than six months previously, he addressed himself to the task, and, after consulting with the governor, he made a vigorous stroke, and recommended that the legislature appoint "a council extraordinary, to consist of three men in whom the legislature can place the highest confidence, to advise His Excellency in the exigencies of the State, and that the governor, with the advice of any two of them, be invested with full power to take such measures as shall be deemed necessary for the defense and preservation of the State in all cases whatsoever." He saw in the desperate circumstances the necessity of prompt and vigorous action. It being suggested that the resolution of September 12th appointing General Smallwood to the command of the State militia, and superseding General Caswell, had been construed much to his prejudice, the legislature appointed a committee to explain that resolution; and it was resolved "that the said resolution intended only, as there were sundry and sufficient reasons why Major-General Caswell could not immediately take the field, that Brigadier-General Smallwood, being the oldest brigadier in the Southern Department, should take the command of the militia in his absence." The following resolutions were adopted by both Houses:

"Resolved unanimously, That Richard Caswell, Esq., be appointed a major-general, with the rank and pay of a major-general in the Continental Army in a separate department, and that he be requested to take command and call on the several Continental officers in this State not on duty, requiring them to assist in the immediate defense of the same, and to appoint them to such commands as he shall find necessary, which may tend to promote order and discipline in the militia, give satisfaction to the regular and not disgust to the militia officers."

And he, Alexander Martin and Allen Jones were chosen by a large majority the council extraordinary.

Whoever his enemies were that prevailed upon the legislature in his calamities must have stood amazed at such confidence when he was given entire control over military affairs. His son, William

Caswell, was also re-elected brigadier-general and placed in charge of the New-Bern district. General Caswell was chairman of the Council Extraordinary, and vigorous methods were pursued for expelling the British. General Greene was fleeing across the State. The Council Extraordinary, with General Caswell at the head, was raising troops, drilling them and equipping them. The whole State was armed. And when General Greene turned and checked the British at Guilford Court House, it was largely through Richard Caswell's efforts that the check was made possible, for at this time he was in Granville County with his regiment, directing the operations of raising troops and supplies and strengthening the defense; and thus he continued until Cornwallis's army left the State forever.

In April, 1782, the next year after the surrender, Caswell represented his county in the Senate, while his son William was a representative in the House. It was through Richard Caswell's influence that Alexander Martin was elected speaker of the Senate and finally governor. Martin was not popular, and Caswell was criticized. When Martin became governor, Caswell succeeded him as speaker. This was the first legislature after the war. The State accounts were in great confusion, and there was one man to whom the State had always looked in times of great emergency, so Richard Caswell was now asked to take the office of comptroller-general. During this year the greater part of Governor Martin's correspondence is written from Kinston, Caswell's home, showing that he had the benefit of frequent consultations with Caswell.

When the next legislature met, Caswell was eligible for election as governor. He was nominated, but was defeated by Martin by only seventeen votes. Caswell himself says, "The Edenton and Halifax men, with a few exceptions, voted for Governor Martin, saying I had crammed him down their throats last year and they were now determined to keep him there." He was, though, unanimously elected speaker of the Senate.

When the next Assembly met, he said he would not be a candidate for governor, but he was nominated and elected unanimously, and again held this high office for three years, the constitutional

limit. In the meantime his son, Richard Caswell, Jr., was drowned at sea or captured by pirates and his oldest son, William, had died. They had given promise of great usefulness. The loss was irreparable, and it so affected General Caswell that he never fully recovered. His health was failing. His younger son, Winston Caswell, his private secretary during his last year as governor, signed a great deal of the correspondence, owing to the sickness of his father. At the close of his term the Assembly, in joint session, again thanked him for his great services.

It was Mr. Caswell's intention upon retiring from office as governor to move to Tennessee, for he always sympathized with the leaders of the "State of Franklin," and loved that western country, but his countrymen called him back to the Senate to lend them his counsel in forming a more perfect National Union. He was at once made speaker unanimously, and it was largely through his influence that North Carolina rejected the Federal Constitution as it was first presented. In 1789 he was again made speaker, but a few days after the opening of the Assembly he was stricken with paralysis, and on the 10th of November the Senate received intelligence that he was dead. The Assembly appointed a committee to arrange for his funeral and adjourned. The body was brought to Kinston, Lenoir County, where he resided for a quarter of a century, and buried. Where? History has given him no burial place; tradition has given him several. His grave is unmarked because even his friends and admirers of to-day are unable to agree as to his resting place. But a monument at Kinston perpetuates his memory.

Governor Caswell was twice married. His first wife, Mary Mackilwain of Craven, bore him one son, William, the brigadier-general. His second wife, Sarah, daughter of William Heritage, an eminent lawyer, bore him several children, who have descendants still living in North Carolina. His granddaughter, Eleanor White, became the wife of Governor Swain. General Caswell's home was adjoining the Heritage estate near Kinston.

Richard Caswell, surveyor, lawyer, legislator, speaker of the Assembly, colonel, treasurer, delegate to the Continental Congress,

president of the Provincial Congress, brigadier-general, major-general, chairman of the Council Extraordinary, speaker of the Senate, comptroller-general and governor, was more variously honored by the people of North Carolina than any other citizen before or since his day. He was distinguished as a lawyer, and as a legislator none has excelled him in statecraft, judging from his popularity and continued power. As a war governor he had a popularity, a power and efficiency that made him at least the equal of Vance, who stands unsurpassed in modern history. As a military officer, in organizing and equipping troops for service, North Carolina has never produced a man who had such control among so many difficulties. Nathaniel Macon, who received his first training in statecraft under Richard Caswell, says of him: "Governor Caswell of Lenoir was one of the most powerful men that ever lived in this or any other country. As a statesman, his patriotism was unquestioned, his discernment was quick, his judgment sound; as a soldier, his courage was undaunted, his vigilance untiring, his success triumphant."

In the limited space allotted me I have tried to collate these facts concerning one of North Carolina's greatest statesmen in order that his service may not be forgotten and his memory unhonored.

Eugene C. Brooks.





ARTHUR DOBBS

WHEN Governor Gabriel Johnston died, in 1752, he was succeeded by two presidents of the Council, who successively acted as governor until the arrival, in 1754, of Arthur Dobbs. The latter was the regular appointee to succeed Johnston.

Governor Dobbs was head of the family of Dobbs of Castle Dobbs, in Carrickfergus, Ireland. "This family," says Burke's History of the Landed Gentry, "was established in Ireland by John Dobbs, who accompanied Sir Henry Dockwra to that country in 1596, and was subsequently his deputy as treasurer of Ulster. This John Dobbs is stated to have been grandson of Sir Richard Dobbs, lord mayor of London in 1551." From the same source we learn that Governor Arthur Dobbs was born on the 2d of April, 1689, was high sheriff of County Antrim as early as 1720, was member of Parliament from Carrickfergus and surveyor-general of Ireland by appointment from Sir Robert Walpole. He was also interested in Arctic navigation, and in the North Carolina State Library are several books written by him on that subject, together with others attacking his views and actions relative thereto.

Mr. Dobbs, having arrived in North Carolina, was sworn in as governor on the 31st of October, 1754. He was then nearly

seventy years old, and he remained in the colony until his death, nearly ten years later.

At the time of his arrival, Matthew Rowan had been conducting the administration some two years as president of the Council. There was, however, much disorganization, for since 1746 the northern counties had abstained from electing representatives to the Assembly, and the collection of taxes had almost ceased, while the court system recently established was regarded as without the warrant of law and not respected. But that period of disorganization was ended on the arrival of Governor Dobbs, who brought with him the King's repeal of the laws which had occasioned the turmoil. He found also that a French and Indian War was brewing, and that the legislature had just equipped and sent forward a regiment to Virginia under Colonel Innis to defend that province; and from that time for several years he was much engaged because of those hostilities. In 1757 he attended the meeting of governors in Philadelphia, and arranged a plan of defense. He was active in his efforts; and, co-operating with him, North Carolina made large contributions of men and means for the general welfare.

Early in 1755 a son of the governor, Edward Brice Dobbs, an officer in the British army then on leave of absence, took part in the Braddock campaign, having a North Carolina company under his command, and he remained with it on the Virginia frontier after the disgraceful flight of the British regiments. In 1756 three other companies, along with Captain Dobbs's, were sent to New York, and operated in the campaign on the lakes. The next year a force was raised to operate in South Carolina under Captains Caleb Granger and John Payne, and in 1758 three companies, under Major Waddell, were with General Forbes at the capture of Fort Duquesne. During that war, also, Fort Dobbs was built in Rowan County and Old Fort in Burke County, and there were numerous conflicts with the Indians on our western borders.

Later, in 1760, the Indians captured Fort Loudoun, just beyond what is now Swain County, and four additional companies were raised for six months' service; and the next year Colonel Waddell,

with the North Carolina forces, penetrated into the Cherokee country and, in conjunction with the other troops, forced the Cherokees to sue for peace.

Governor Dobbs's administration was likewise notable for its continued clashing with the Assembly. He claimed the right, as a privilege of the Crown, to appoint the public treasurers, the agent of the colony at London and to control the public fund, all of which were claimed as a prerogative of the Assembly. The Assembly also desired a change in the qualifications of the judges, requiring, in effect, their appointment from among the citizens of the province. The conflicts arising on these and other similar subjects were carried to a great extreme, and Governor Dobbs insisted that it was due to the spirit of republicanism, which he declared was more rife in North Carolina than in any other colony. He continually reiterated that the speaker of the Assembly, Samuel Swann, and his nephews, John Ashe and George Moore, with their associates, had formed a junto to absorb his powers, and he asserted that it had been intimated to him that if he would yield to them his administration would be made easy; but he had an exaggerated idea of the divine right of kings and of his own privileges as a representative of the Crown, and he would not tolerate the claims of the Assembly that the people had rights as British subjects, and under the charter granted by the Lords Proprietors, superior to the prerogatives of the Crown. The conflicts over these matters were very pronounced and bitter, and on one occasion the Assembly closed its doors, swore the members to secrecy and sat for five hours drawing up heavy charges against him for presentation to the King. It is to be observed that the law officers of the Crown at London, with a sense of justice that is to be admired, in some of the more important of these controversies, sustained the claims of the Assembly, and decided the questions against the governor, using very plain terms in doing so. Governor Dobbs sought to secure the location of the capital at Tower Hill, near the site of Kinston, instead of at New-Bern, and otherwise sought to yield to the demands of the northern counties, but his purposes were defeated, and the capital remained unfixed.

The controversies over the court law were so persistent that for eight months in 1760 there were no courts held in the province.

During his administration the movement of population which began about 1746 into the western part of the province proceeded with great rapidity, and almost before the eastern counties could realize it the west was quite thickly settled, and the conditions there required facilities which were not comprehended. In 1762 Governor Dobbs, who was then quite aged, suffered a stroke of palsy, that deprived him of the use of his lower limbs and ended his activity. Finally, in 1764, permission was given him to return to England, and William Tryon was appointed lieutenant-governor to take charge of the administration in his absence.

Governor Dobbs married first Mrs. Annie Norbury, *nee* Osburne. Toward the close of his life he married, on the Cape Fear, Miss Davis, who later became the first wife of Governor Abner Nash. There came with him to Carolina his nephew, Richard Spaight, whose family subsequently played an important part in the history of the State. In compliment to Governor Dobbs a county was named in his honor, but subsequently it was divided, and its territory is now embraced in the counties of Greene and Lenoir.

While preparing to take shipping to return to England, in 1765, on the 28th of March, Governor Dobbs suddenly expired at Brunswick, and was succeeded by Governor Tryon.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.



was not much in this region to suggest that it would soon be a greater center of trade and industry than either of its two neighboring towns. Yet such seems to be its destiny. The long drill in habits of thrift, industry and integrity gave to the people of this community a personal strength which, when once the chance came to them, could not but show itself.

Taylor Duke was well respected among his neighbors. He was captain of a militia company and deputy sheriff, both positions requiring a level head and a reputation for strength of character. He was as prosperous as most of his neighbors, but he had a family of ten children; and when his son Washington came to face the world it was empty-handed. He set bravely to work. For four years he rented the land of other people, and then he had saved enough to buy a farm of his own. To this small beginning he added as the years went by, till at the outbreak of the war he owned 300 acres. When we remember that the average size of farms in this region up to the present time is about ninety acres, we shall see that he had done well.

Although at present a very wealthy man, Mr. Duke looks back to these early days of battling with life with great interest. They were, in fact, the formative period of his life. When he built up a great fortune in the field of manufacturing, he but did over again what he had done before in the field of agriculture, with this exception, that in the former field the opportunity was vastly greater. His first success was won, as every man's business success is won, by industry, economy and character. He believed in work. He was careful not to go into debt. He was sober, and he did not gamble. He did not put off a duty for a pleasure. More than all else, he was an earnest Christian. He was a constant attendant on his church, having been converted early in life in a revival service, and having become a member of the Methodist Church. He took delight in the religious services, and from that day to this, unless prevented by sickness, he has rarely missed one.

Mr. Duke was born December 20, 1820. He was, therefore, forty years old when the war began. He had up to this time been a Democrat, and in his loyalty he had named his youngest son

James Buchanan, after a Democratic President. But he was strongly opposed to secession. He foretold all the evils which would follow an attempt to leave the Union. It was with a sad heart that he saw how useless were his words. In 1863 he volunteered for the Confederate army. He was sent first to Camp Holmes, where he was placed on guard duty. Next he was transferred to the Confederate navy and sent to serve on a ship which was a part of the defenses of Charleston harbor. Later he was transferred to the artillery and attached to Battery Brook, one of the defenses of the city of Richmond. Here he served till the city was given up; but in the retreat from the place he was captured by the enemy and sent to Libby Prison. A few weeks later, when the war was over, he was released from captivity. The government sent him to New-Bern, North Carolina, and from that place he walked to his home, a distance of 135 miles. Arrived there he had, besides his farm and two blind army mules which had been given him, fifty cents in silver, for which he had exchanged a .five dollar Confederate bill.

The situation which confronted him was gloomy, but he was no worse off than the others. In fact, he was somewhat better situated than some of them, for he accepted the issue and set about repairing his fortunes. Before the war he had been twice married, first, in 1844, to Miss Mary C. Clinton of Orange County, and she dying in 1847, he was married to Miss Artelia Roney of Alamance County, December 9, 1852; but the latter had also died on August 20, 1858. By the first marriage he had two children, Samuel T., who died at the age of fourteen, and Brodie L., who still lives. By his second marriage he had three children, Mary Elizabeth, Benjamin Newton and James Buchanan. These children had been left with friends and relatives while he was away in the army. His first care after his return was to send for them. There on the farm they formed a kind of partnership which neither time nor prosperity has dissolved. Each took his part in the arduous labor before them. Father and sons cultivated the soil and manufactured the tobacco, and Mary, the daughter of twelve, was the housekeeper. He was now forty-five years old,

an age when many men suppose that they have a right to begin to take their ease; but he not only continued his activity, but embarked in a new field of enterprise. He had the good fortune to be associated with capable children. When his own powers should begin to fail, theirs would be strong enough to help him. Not many enterprises have combined so fortunately the wisdom of old age and aggressiveness of youth as that about which I am going to speak.

The eastern part of Orange was in the famous bright tobacco belt of North Carolina. It was here that Johnston's army surrendered to Sherman. The incident served to advertise the tobacco which was to become famous as Durham tobacco. The name was derived from the name of a railroad station about two miles from Mr. Duke's farm. At that time the place was but a railroad crossing; now it has about 20,000 inhabitants, and its business relations are established around the world. Many men were, in 1865, about to launch their crafts in the manufacture of Durham tobacco, but of all of them the name of Duke was to prove itself the master name.

Washington Duke's first tobacco factory was on his farm. It was a log house 16 feet by 18 feet in size. Here, in the fall and winter, he prepared by hand the leaf tobacco which he had raised in the preceding season. The business prospered, and in 1873 it was moved to Durham, where his eldest son, Brodie L. Duke, had already set up a factory. The factory which was now built was 40 feet by 70 feet. It was built of wood and was three stories high. The plant began operations with fifteen hands. In 1875 the business was enlarged by the addition of another building the size of the first. This was necessitated by the growth of the enterprise and by the fact that a consolidation was made with Brodie L. Duke. Then followed a long series of enlargements. In fact, not many years have elapsed since 1875 in which one or more new buildings have not been erected. In 1904 the W. Duke branch of the American Tobacco Company covers with its buildings ten acres of ground in the town of Durham, and it manufactures more tobacco than any one plant in America. Such has

been the culmination of the small enterprise which began on the Duke farm in 1865.

Mr. Duke himself gives much credit for his success to the efforts of his sons. These gentlemen have been very active business men. When they arrived at maturity their father offered to fit them for professional lives if they desired it, but they chose business careers. They had begun in their childhood in the enterprise. They had loved it with an enthusiasm born out of their boyhood struggles. No other kind of life seemed so attractive to them as the glory of building the Duke enterprise up till it filled the full measure of its opportunity in the world. Thus deeply had their father instilled into their natures the pride of the common undertaking.

Mr. Duke has ever been a benevolent man. It has been a part of his religion to help needy ones according to his ability. But he has no sympathy for lazy and improvident people. His charities have, therefore, been directed along the lines of self-help to those who were worthy of it. He has always sought to avoid public display in his gifts. Besides the great gifts he has made, as those to education, he has given numerous sums to struggling young men, to unfortunate men and women of every kind, and about these the public has received no intimation. Thrift in others has always won his sympathy. Of his life he once said: "I never paid interest on money. I never went in debt to such an extent that I could not pay when the time came. It is paying interest that ruins most men that fail."

Although the subject of this sketch was a Democrat before the war, he has been a Republican since that event. He himself accounts for his change on the ground that he believed, on the return of peace, that the policy of internal improvements which the Republicans advocated was best calculated to advance the interests of the South. His change was certainly not due to any selfish consideration, for he has never sought office or taken an active part in party politics. His activity has been no more than that of the quiet citizen who views his country's existence with the interest of one who loves it.

In the welfare of the negroes he has always taken great interest. No one has watched their gradual rise in the world since the days of slavery with keener interest. In 1890 the negroes of Durham had an educational meeting. Among other prominent white men of the community Mr. Duke was invited to attend and make a speech. The invitation was declined courteously, and the following letter was sent in lieu of a speech. It contains so much that is characteristic of the writer's judgment that it is inserted at length.

"Five years more," said he, "and I shall have lived three-quarters of a century. Not long before I was born the cannon of Napoleon thundered at Waterloo, as the Old Guard melted itself before the hollow squares of the English army, and England's Iron Duke conquered the world's most magnetic leader. Since then the destiny of nations has been changed. I have seen the countries of Europe wrecked by terrible wars, and here in our own land I have witnessed the greatest revolution of them all, the emancipation of your race. I have always had a friendly feeling toward you, and now address you in the spirit of a friend, wishing, if I can, to help you overcome the hard conditions of your lot. I have no doubt that each of you would like to be a successful man. It is right that you should feel so; for a proper ambition is God's call to a higher life. But how shall that success be gained?"

Here the writer dwelt on the wisdom of being sober, honest and law-abiding, and went on to say:

"Be industrious and do not always be looking for an easy, soft place. I have made more furrows on God's earth than any other man of forty years of age in North Carolina. And when you have made yourself industrious, you must be frugal. Establish it as a rule always to spend less than you make. I never closed a year's work in my life without being happy in the knowledge that I was better off than I was when it began. Be sure to put away one dollar every week in the savings bank. And when people begin to find out that you are industrious and reliable, they will offer you positions of profit. . . . Do honest work for your honest dollar; put it in your pocket, and at night, when you lie down with it under your pillow, the eagle on its face will sing you to sleep, because it knows you have earned it and mean to spend it properly.

"Now the fundamental basis of real success is good character. Without that all your efforts will come to nothing. Honesty, sobriety, industry, frugality, all go to make up good character. Support your churches and

your schools. Give to the support of the Gospel, not because you feel it to be your duty (and it is your duty), not because somebody else does it, but because you know it is right, and that you will be blessed in so doing.

"People, as a rule, depend too much on government. They think that if certain men are sent to make laws, and if certain laws are made, then the causes of their poverty and discontent will be removed. It is an idle dream never to be realized. What is government? It is a plan adopted by the whole people for their guidance in national life. Every person in this country is a part of the government. The governmental functions of the nation can be perfected only as its individual members perfect themselves. . . . Rain is a necessity. The ground must be watered before it can produce. But if you should build a shed over your field, it might rain abundantly, but your crop would perish from the drought. What good will perfect laws do unless you are prepared to live under them? A dog cannot be governed by the rule that governs a man. Your only hope lies with yourselves. Be men of honest, upright lives; support your churches and your schools; regard your minister as your best friend, and your school-teacher as the next; work honestly for your money, and give some of it to help support these institutions. Cease to rely upon outside help; for you must work out your own salvation. Since I was twelve years old I have been trying to make the world better by having lived in it. Let this be the rule of your lives.

"I have never failed to give freely to the support of the Gospel. I have regarded it as a part of my life. If I am anything, if my life has been successful, if from small beginnings I have brought myself to a successful point in life, then I say to you that it was by following these rules that I have gained it. Only by living a God-fearing, honest, sober, and industrious life can you be happy."

Into Mr. Duke's life there fell, in 1893, a great sorrow. It was the death of his only daughter. About the time when he removed to Durham she had married Robert E. Lyon of that place. But no tie ever separated her from her father. He was deeply attached to her, and the mere mention of her name to this day stirs deepest feelings in his heart. From her twelfth year she was his home-maker. Hers was the thrift which had stopped the doors of waste in the early days of struggle; hers was the housewifely hand which had put a woman's touch of comfort into the life of widowed father and motherless brothers. Child-woman as she was, she gained strength of mind and balanced judg-

ment beyond her years. Father and brothers sought her advice, and in the business she was looked on as an equal partner.

When she died the light went out of her father's life, for she was almost his idol. Says one who knew her well: "Truly, to know her was to love her. In her later years her feeble health seemed to be a ministering angel to refine and sweeten her already lovable spirit. Her brothers generously divided their honors and profits with her, and 'Mary' was ever regarded by them as equally with themselves worthy to share in the profits that came as a reward of their thought and labor, and it was right and just that it should be so. She was a woman of most remarkable common sense, and her judgment was of a very superior order. She managed her own affairs with a master hand, and in her case 'wisdom was justified of her children.' . . . She was generous and charitable in religion, wise in counsel and sweet and polite in her social life. She combined womanly grace and sweetness with a comprehensive intelligence; and if her health had been equal to her intellect, she could have managed an empire. Her place can never be filled."

Within the last decade Mr. Duke has become widely known as one of the South's greatest philanthropists. This has come about through his large gifts to Trinity College. In 1890 it was decided to move Trinity, which belonged to the Methodists of the State, from its old home in Randolph County. Mr. Duke offered to give \$85,000 if it was brought to Durham. The offer was accepted, but when the college opened its doors in its new home in 1893 it was found that he had greatly exceeded the amount he had promised. His whole contribution was \$110,000. In 1896 he gave \$100,000 to the endowment fund on condition that women should be admitted. In 1898 and again in 1900 he gave a like sum to the same fund. These gifts, with others which I have not mentioned, bring his benevolences to this institution till 1904 up to the sum of \$480,000. Besides his gifts to Trinity he has given generously to other educational institutions. In 1892 he paid the debt on, and acquired the ownership of, Louisburg Female College at Louisburg, North Carolina. It was an old and useful seat

of learning, and the generous action of Mr. Duke saved it from having to close its doors. In 1898 he further showed his interest in education by giving the land and a handsome building for the establishment of the Southern Conservatory of Music in Durham. The marked success of this institution has justified the gift.

His educational ideas are sound. He believes in an education that develops character. For shams he has ever had a great contempt. No reform has been made at Trinity College which had for its purpose the attainment of honest and solid educational ideals that did not win his hearty approval. To his college community his presence has ever been a source of sincere pleasure. His quiet smile has heartened their spirits, and excellent common sense has yielded them advice in many difficulties.

In his prime Mr. Duke had the appearance of a man of great physical strength. He was about six feet tall, with a large frame and a deep chest. He walked with a firm and deliberate stride. He spoke without excitement or passion. His face was characterized by a broad forehead, strong grey eyes, a firm chin and mouth, and the general air of a man who had perfect control over himself. He lived regularly and temperately, preserving the fine physique which nature had given him. At the age of eighty-four he is as keenly alive as ever to the life around him. His career is a witness of the truth of the saying of the Psalmist in regard to Wisdom, "Length of days she giveth thee."

Mr. Duke's strong frame was destined to withstand the attacks of disease for many years, and at last to yield only to the insidious decay of old age. In January, 1905, he had a fall, and sustained a slight fracture of the hip, from the effects of which he did not recover. But his cheerfulness did not forsake him, and for the many friends who saw him he had ever a ready word and smile. He died on May 8, 1905, and was buried in the Duke mausoleum in Durham. His funeral was the largest ever seen in the city. Thousands of people of all ranks of life lined the streets and awaited the arrival of the remains at the cemetery. It was a tribute of the people, who knew best his life of modest and continuous virtue, and an expression of loss by a whole community, which

had a hundred reasons to feel that they had lost a wise friend and servant. There has lived in the South in the generation since the war no man who has better understood the problems of the individual man in the great process of upbuilding and rebuilding our life. No one has better utilized the wonderful opportunity which the overthrow of old inequalities has brought; and no one has better used his own success to allay passion and to promote future progress.

John Spencer Bassett.



sons, Benjamin Newton Duke, that will be presented in this sketch.

Washington Duke, whose sketch appears elsewhere in this book, was one of those who began the manufacture of tobacco in Durham in the early days after peace came, when there seemed great possibilities in that industry. He was destined, more than any of his business competitors, to realize the bright dreams of that period. To him and his wife, Artelia Roney Duke, was born, on April 27, 1855, a son, who was called Benjamin Newton. Three years later the boy had the misfortune to lose his mother, and about the same time he was attacked by a severe fever, which left him with certain physical frailties which he did not entirely outgrow till after he had reached mature manhood. When he was seven years old his father was called away to the service of the country in the Confederate army, and this also proved a misfortune for the boy. But in 1865, when the war was over, father and children were reunited, and they settled on the farm, about two miles north of the town of Durham, and began the task of repairing their fortunes.

The family consisted of father, three sons and one daughter. Of the sons, Benjamin was the second. The youngest was James Buchanan, who, with the father, and in association with the subject of this sketch, has become the greatest tobacco merchant in the world. It was a harmonious family, void of distracting fancies, and given to regular and sober living. Industry, economy and honesty were diligently instilled into the children. Religion was earnestly taught and practiced, and thus the children grew to maturity with rich endowments of character and well trained in conduct.

The business of the farm differed somewhat from that of other farms. There was the work in the fields and the care of the stock; but after the tobacco was housed for the year, it was manufactured into smoking tobacco. In all this Benjamin Duke took his share. He was not entirely robust, but he did not shirk his duty on account of that. It soon became evident that the manufacturing side of the farm was more profitable than the agricultural side.

The discovery of this fact caused the removal of the whole family to the neighboring town of Durham. Here, in 1871, the father and his two younger sons established a factory. It was a three-story frame building at first, and employed fifteen hands. But the business proved good, and in 1873 the capacity of the plant was doubled, and about that time the eldest of the sons, B. L. Duke, was likewise taken into the firm.

The early history of the Duke Tobacco Factory is one of the romances of the business world. Rapid but solid growth, as the reward of good business habits, is its chief characteristic. There never was a year, says the head of the firm, when he was not in a better financial condition at the end than at the beginning of it. The glory of seeing a great enterprise grow under their hands, fulfilling all their expectations and justifying all their calculations, is to men of affairs much the same feeling as the joy of an author who sees the book which he had planned in his mind slowly but regularly taking shape under his touch. It is also, perhaps, not less a feat of mind. Such was the joyous feeling which came to the members of the Duke firm in spite of their many difficulties in those first years of development.

The earliest education of Benjamin Duke was obtained in the neighborhood schools. Later his father sent him, with his brother and sister, to the New Garden School in Guilford County. It was then merely a high school, under the care of the Quakers, but it has since been widely developed and named Guilford College. It is characteristic of the good judgment of the father that he sent his sons to a school which was noted for its solid methods rather than for the quality of show. How deeply it appealed to the good sense of the sons is shown by the fact that in 1897 they erected on the campus of Guilford College a handsome Memorial Hall as a mark of their loyalty and as a memorial to their sister.

When the sons had completed the course of study at this institution, their father offered to send them to college, but both of them decided to return to Durham and give their efforts to the development of their father's business. They thought that here

was the field for their labors. The decision was not due to any lack of appreciation of the value of higher education, as is shown by their later large gifts to Trinity College. But they felt that for them the work of their lives was in the great field of industry. How well their subsequent careers have justified this decision is easily seen in the results. North Carolina has many good physicians and lawyers, but it has few great captains of industry, and of all that it has none have attained such positions in which they may help to develop the best life of the State as the two younger Dukes.

The story of the upbuilding of the great factory into which Benjamin N. Duke now threw all his energy is too long a story to be told in this place. Suffice it to say that the factory in Durham which bears the name "Duke" covered, when it was founded in 1871, 2800 square feet of the earth's surface. To-day it covers, in round numbers, 450,000 square feet. Its annual output of manufactured products is commonly reported to be larger than that of any other single plant in the world. It is a branch of the great American Tobacco Company, which was founded through the efforts of the Duke partners in 1890. In this larger enterprise B. N. Duke has been a director from the beginning, and for a large part of the time he has held also the office of treasurer. To the greater enterprise he has given the same constant oversight and exact care which he gave to the old factory in Durham.

Besides this interest in the tobacco business, Mr. Duke has become connected with many other important enterprises. He is one of the largest promoters of the cotton manufacturing business in the State. He is interested in nearly a dozen of such enterprises, and in most of them he has official position. He is president of the Fidelity Bank of Durham, and he holds a similar position in the Cape Fear and Northern Railroad Company. He is also a director of a bank in New York. To all of these concerns he gives careful attention, for it is a principle with him not to assume the duties of an office unless he can conscientiously discharge them. The result is that he is one of the most trusted men of affairs in

North Carolina. Perhaps there is no man in the State whose advice on business matters is more often sought than his.

A motto of Mr. Duke's is thorough-going efficiency. An illustration of this is seen in the following incident. Several years ago the governor of the State appointed him a director of Oxford Orphan Asylum. This institution belongs to the Masonic fraternity of North Carolina, but it has received support from the various churches and from the State treasury. In view of the latter fact the governor is given the power to nominate a certain number of directors. When Mr. Duke received his appointment, the asylum was in need of funds. His first action in office was to inform himself thoroughly of the condition of the institution. He found that although much had been done, much was still to be done. He became deeply interested in the institution, and gave out of his own means a large sum, with which new buildings were erected and the old buildings made more serviceable. His gifts were of great service in enabling this worthy institution to fulfill the duty which was laid upon it to care for the orphans of the State. They were made in a modest and unselfish spirit. After he had removed his residence to New York City he resigned his directorate, but to this day he has remained deeply interested in the welfare of the asylum. In view of all this many people have been surprised to learn that he is not a Mason.

Mr. Duke's greatest philanthropy is his gifts to Trinity College. He has given to its development large sums of money from time to time as the college needed it. But dollars do not measure his interest in it. By his efforts with others, by his advice to those who have had its destiny in hand, by his continual interest in all the progress it has made, by his openly affirmed confidence in its methods of instruction, and by many other actions, he has been a source of strength to it which he himself little suspects. There is no phase of its life in which he has not shown an appreciative interest. He has watched its development of a college standing, he has become enthusiastic over its athletic victories, he has encouraged by appreciative words its professors who have sought to spread its influence among scholars, he has taken a deep inter-

est in the beautification of its campus, he has fulfilled at some inconvenience to his private affairs the duties of a college trustee, and all he has done cheerfully.

February 21, 1877, he was married to Miss Sarah Pearson Angier, daughter of Mr. M. A. Angier, who was several times mayor of Durham. She is a woman of many graces of character. Three children have been born to this union. The eldest was George Washington Duke, a promising boy, who died in his third year. The others are Angier Buchanan and Mary Lillian Duke. The home life of the Duke family is marked by strong bonds of affection and by open and unaffected hospitality. To their many friends they are ever warmly loyal and delightfully entertaining. They have always given generous encouragement to the development of the intellectual life of the community in which they live, on many occasions offering their handsome home for parlor lectures by distinguished persons.

In political affiliation Mr. Duke, like his father, is a Republican. But he is not a politician. He has never sought office. His interest in political contests has gone no further than that of a good citizen who holds his own views about public questions and who does not hesitate to express them in his ballot.

Mr. Duke's large business interests in New York made it necessary several years ago for him to move his residence to New York City; but his interest in Durham has not abated, and he has continued to educate his son and daughter there.

In New York he is a member of the Pilgrim Society and of the North Carolina Society, and of the latter he has been president. Recently he purchased a handsome estate at Somerville, New Jersey, adjoining the fine country property of his brother, James B. Duke, and on this estate he contemplates erecting a thoroughly modern summer home.

In personal appearance Mr. Duke is a man of little less than average size. His figure gives one the impression of extreme regularity. In face and form there is no feature which is not well proportioned with the others. His hair is black with a first sprinkling of grey. His eyes are brown, and they look at one

with a keen and steady penetration which makes one think that they see all that is to be seen by them. In early life he suffered from a certain weakness of body which in most people would have been irremediable. But by a rigid system of living he has managed to subdue the last symptom of the frailty, and there are not many men who are stronger or more capable of continued application, and this he accomplished while continually employed with many affairs of varying natures.

One of Mr. Duke's marked traits is regularity. He believes in system. Disorder, carelessness and unpromptness are exceedingly distasteful to him. He is extremely punctual in all his engagements, and if one arranges to meet him at a given time he must expect to be there on time or the chances are that he will not see him. The necessity of such a course to a busy man is very apparent. But to Mr. Duke it is more than a necessity, it is a part of his disposition. It is not too much to say that this trait is one of the chief causes of his remarkable success. Without system a man full of affairs could do nothing.

Mr. Duke's relations to his fellow-men have ever been most happy. To the thousands of men employed in the establishments in which he has a controlling interest he is ever an accessible friend and adviser. There has never been a strike in the great Duke factory at Durham. On several occasions he has given the money to establish night schools and free reading-rooms for these people. They have confidence in him, and there is not much they would not do for "Mr. Ben," as all his friends love to call him. But with all this he is exceedingly averse to praise. A friend who knows him well says of him: "His soul is a human soul, which never forgets the world in which it abides. This has been proved by the large benevolences which he has dispensed, and which are known to the public. But he has a dread of display and a hatred of flattery, and only to him is known all of his benevolent deeds."

With all else he is a modern man. He has the modern spirit of broad-mindedness. He is not intolerant. How deeply he feels the need of advancing the cause of clear and liberal thinking is

seen in his large gifts to education. No institution with which he has been connected has ever taken a step toward illiberalism or intellectual darkness. He is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, and devoted to its interests. He has frequently been honored with official position among its laymen. In 1898 he was a delegate from the North Carolina Conference to the General Conference of the church in Baltimore. But for all his loyalty to his church he is not sectarian. Real men, real deeds, real truth, are to him the only real things in life. By the side of them human organizations, pretended actions and traditional ideas are as nothing.



ness. His mother died beyond his memory, and his good father stood thenceforth in the stead of both parents to him. It seemed as though adversity had marshaled its forces against Washington Duke, farmer, of Orange County, North Carolina, and his motherless children. War and its worse consequences were strange to his gentle nature, but he stood to his neighbors and against his judgment as to the wisdom or equity of it—he became a Southern soldier. The first recollections of the boy Duke were of hardships and privations, with his father often in danger and at last in prison, the children meanwhile getting such bits of learning as they could glean in the irregularly kept common schools and from each other. The war at last came to an end, and it was within cannon shot of his home that Johnston surrendered his shattered remnant of an army to Sherman. There has always seemed something pitiful in the barrenness of Lincoln's early days, but across the river from his cabin lay the rich prairies, to which bold bands of pioneers daily hastened. Their westward march would appeal to a lad of spirit. Such allurements were thousands of miles away from young Duke. He was not touching elbows with stirring events or well-equipped fellows, but had to call on his own strong self for all that was to bring success in a land that sat in the silence of desolation.

The peace that came was akin to that which reigned at Warsaw, and so discouraged was his soldier father when he reached his home without a dollar, and after walking a hundred miles from the prison camp, that he sold his farm to a neighbor on credit and went to work at wages on it in order to be assured of a livelihood for his children. It is grotesquely true that he had to take back the farm, as the purchaser was not able to pay for it, and he and his boys with their own hands began the cultivation of the bright tobacco, that Aladdin's lamp the touch of which was eventually to make a family of millionaires. They persevered in this homely occupation for several years, and then began the crudest sort of manufacturing by making, in the first place, fine tobacco, curing it carefully, handling it skillfully, and when it was at its best, beating it with flails into the required granulation for smoking

tobacco. But it was manufacturing. The product was the best of its kind, and Washington Duke hauled it in his own wagon through the eastern part of the State, where some money was coming in from cotton crops, and sold it to the small merchants. The boys were left at home to work up the supply for the next trip.

At the tender age of fourteen years young Duke, unconsciously to himself and to his brothers, began to lead in suggestion, in devising better methods and generally in showing the way. The day of the dangerous poverty which breeds the toleration of it had passed, and the man who was to become a ruler of the world's commerce had begun his work. When other boys were busy with play, this one had put on his own head the crown of work. The steady habits of the plain home life trained the naturally robust constitution to a fine physical development. Taciturn and thoughtful, he realized the conditions around him in their proper proportions, and his sanguine faith in the power of industry assured him that he could make them his servants. He dignified work by his faith in it, and what was burdensome to others became a pleasure to him.

He seldom left the farm except to enjoy his single holiday, Sunday, at the country church with the neighbors, and, consequently, had few associates. His isolation, added to his sense of a right personal life, guarded him against irregular and idle habits, and now, nearing full middle life, it can be truthfully said that he is a stranger to the taste of spirituous liquors, and that his conversation is clean and free from oaths. Temperance in speech, self-restraint and total abstinence from dalliance with all forms of gaming have stored up a vast strength, of which he is prodigal only in planning continuous, growing, self-respecting work for others.

The business began to outgrow the capacity of the log house daubed with clay and lighted by windows made of boards. The yield of their own and their neighbors' tobacco fields was inadequate to the steadily increasing demand for their manufactured product. The advantages of transportation and of more labor

had to be reckoned with. They therefore left the humble farm, and the village of Durham was chosen as the new home.

In 1875, a long, rambling, two-story wooden building became office and factory of the firm of W. Duke & Sons. Duke's ardent temperament and shrewd ambition absorbed in a day the spirit of this new and wonderful community, but he had weighed it in his mind and accepted this larger field merely as a stage in his progress. He was now the cheerfully acknowledged head of the business, his father and brothers gladly and with pride following his lead and direction. He worked incessantly. He knew no hours. In the mornings he talked with the farmers in their wagons loaded with tobacco, and learned from them the amount of the crop and its quality and the improvements made in curing and in handling it. The forenoons he bought tobacco in the open market with rare boldness and discrimination; the afternoons he worked with the hired labor in the factory, and at night he planned more and effective advertising and better methods of package and preservation. When a sufficient stock had accumulated, he went on his itinerary, outlined to the last detail, and traveled as a salesman through the South and West. He never came back till he had sold the output of the factory. When absent, he was in touch by correspondence with his headquarters, advising it instantly of every important fact that he learned bearing in any way upon the business. During all this time he practiced the most rigid personal economy, working all day visiting his customers, traveling at night on freight trains and by day in coaches to save for the business the expense of a bed at a hotel or in a sleeping car. His tactics effected such large sales, that there was need for more money with which to buy to advantage and work up more rapidly the raw material. He respected his father's conservative unwillingness to borrow money, and instead made a sale of a fractional part of the business to a partner at a price that put him in possession of the required ready funds. This transaction changed the name of the business to W. Duke, Sons & Company, and the name of Duke was abroad in the land.

In 1883, though the tobacco trade was scattered and systemless,

he foresaw the coming demand for tobacco in the form of cigarettes, and commenced to manufacture them with a capital less than \$100,000. He chose New York as the base from which to direct a movement to cover the whole country, and established there a branch of his firm. The road was rough and progress very difficult. Appreciating that his capital did not measure up to his plans, and that he had to establish credit in the metropolitan sense of the word, he thought and managed and drew his belt tighter. Never sparing himself, he moved from a room the rent of which was \$3 a week to one to be had at only \$2. Scores of his employees were paying more. He went to a bank president, then at best only an acquaintance, but who died his warm friend, and told of the breadth of his plans and the narrowness of his means. The banker was astounded at the sagacious audacity of his ambitions, but more impressed with the simple integrity and the truthfulness of the young manufacturer, and agreed to give him the needed credit. With redoubled courage he returned to his work, and carried through his commercial campaign successfully without borrowing the money he could have had.

It was in these days, if emphasis need be placed on any segment of time covered by the building of the great enterprise, that Duke laid the broad and deep foundations on which rest the colossal structures he has reared and now controls.

The tobacco trade was afraid of cigarettes made by machine as opposed to those made by hand. He, on the contrary, believed that if an article was essentially good and attractively presented, prejudice born of ignorance could not stand against it. Therefore he made an advantageous contract with the best cigarette machine makers, and challenged comparison between the machine-made product and all others by a system of advertising sure of its aim, varied and dazzling in its intricate sorts, and which swept prejudices to the winds. More than the profits of the business fed the more and more elaborate and costly devices for greater publicity of the merits of his goods.

In the meantime and all the while he worked. After the day's work at the factory he spent half the night in visiting the shops

where cigarettes and smoking tobacco were sold, talking with the shopkeepers and their customers, learning the opinions of dealers and consumers of the quality of his cigarettes and the effectiveness of his methods of advertising them. He knew accurately the state and temper of the trade in his own products and those of other manufacturers whom he could not yet call competitors, because of the smallness of his business compared with theirs.

As late as 1887, when some of the largest manufacturers of cigarettes were preparing for their annual dinner, one of them asked in jest if young Duke should be bid to the feast. "We don't consider him a manufacturer of cigarettes; he will be broke before the year is out," was the reply. Duke heard of the incident and laconically replied, "I don't talk, I work." In a year's time they had asked him what he would take for his business. His answer was like that of the Helvetians to Cæsar, "We are accustomed to ask, not to give, hostages." In another year all of these manufacturers had agreed to sell their businesses and plants and trade marks to a company to be formed on lines laid down by James Buchanan Duke, on terms proposed by him, and of which company he was to be the president, and he received for his business more than was paid to any other manufacturer save one, and exactly as much as this one received.

From January, 1890, when he assumed the direction of this enormous power, until to-day, he has been its veritable head and front, and how well it has thriven is outlined when it is remembered that its original capital was \$10,000, and that its capital to-day exceeds \$250,000,000, and all its shares are worth more than their faces declare. Figures expressing great sums of money are so condensed a form that it is difficult to realize their import, and it may give a clearer impression of the magnitude of his operations to know that after Mr. Duke had introduced American cigarettes in Japan, and that country had put an onerous import duty on them, he set to work to build a chain of factories there, and got thereby a trade requiring more than 3,000,000,000 cigarettes annually, or 10,000,000 pounds of North Carolina leaf tobacco.

But this is not all. To fortify his trade and protect his foreign markets he went across the waters to attack in their own citadels the British manufacturers who were menacing his trade in the East, and to cause them to withdraw from the fields he had discovered and the markets he had made. Those who understand the genius of the British merchant, whose vessels sail every sea and who acknowledge no limits save those of the planet, can surmise what this meant. Tobacco was one of the very few commodities protected by tax in a free-trade country, the trade in which they were asked to divide with a foreigner. It seemed to ask them to desert their traditions as well as to yield their profits. Duke accomplished his purpose, and with so little friction and with so much equity that it was not a nine days' wonder. At a great dinner given in honor of the consummation of the negotiations which began shortly after Duke reached England, during Mr. William C. Whitney's reply to a toast in praise of his own patriotic work in rebuilding our navy, the great secretary laid his hand on Mr. Duke's shoulder and said: "It is such marvelous merchants as this man who make a great navy necessary to carry and protect a trade which seems to know no bounds." This tribute to successful effort was praise indeed, but his keenest satisfaction from this international triumph came to him in the knowledge that he had gotten an almost unlimited and more lasting market for the tobacco made by his own people on their small farms.

If he had dreamed dreams, they had all come true, and if delight in conquering was his ruling passion, it was likely to waste away now for want of other equal fields. What he did was to set himself at once to the more thorough organizing and development of the spheres of trade he had brought within his ever extending lines. To this more useful but less romantic task he never wearies of giving his patient supervision.

A man who could devise, set up and adjust every part of such a machine as this assembly of corporations would not lack in bringing the same talents to mastering other businesses in which he takes part. This is so whether it is in making the great rivers in the South give up their strength to the factories that he builds

on their banks or in building railroads to give his old home a direct path to the sea. He understands both the principles and the details of his plans. Apart from his character as self-made master of a chosen field, his individuality is most instructive, and it will be interesting to turn to some of the features that make it so.

The personal traits of a man to whom success has become commonplace have never failed to interest the world. Plutarch's Lives and the historical romances are responses to the desire to know something of the charms of those who lead success itself captive. The very stars under which they were born are made in the popular mind to guide in some way the current of their lives, but Mr. Duke discards what in "King Lear" are called the "fopperies of the world," the thrusting on Providence what mars or makes a future, and believes with all his might that every man can practically select, create or change his surroundings to fit the bent of his mind. He allows no chances, and drops them from his calculations.

In form and feature Mr. Duke looks a well-bred Scot, robust, standing erect six feet two inches in height. The large head, covered with red hair, has a broad brow, straight nose, firm, good-tempered, kindly mouth, clear eyes, which look at you reposefully without criticizing you. A fresh, healthy coloring sets off the strong face and shows his British ancestry.

His dress is simple and expresses no vanity.

In manner he is positive, never petulant, but always reasonable; taciturn, but ready and eager to state his reasons for any opinion or judgment. He does this with a power spontaneously springing from the wants of his position, and is prepared to argue with logical cogency when necessary; willing to yield if shown to be in error, without a trace of obstinacy or pride of opinion, seeking the truth regardless of its source. So just a man, he does not flinch from acknowledging as his own errors the unsuccessful expedients or enterprise first suggested by himself, and is careful to credit successful suggestions to those who made them. Possessed of a memory remarkable for its tenacity and accuracy, he is able to summon instantly to his aid all that he ever

knew or saw or did or heard bearing on the subject under consideration.

The inestimable advantage of being born and brought up in the simple family life of a Christian farmer, whom the license of the camp had not contaminated, taught him the value of wholesome, clean daily life, and has had much to do in making the great establishments where thousands of operatives are housed at work models of decent life and conduct.

What are commonly considered the advantages of birth and rearing he had none of, but in the real advantages he was rich. Confidence in himself, matured through laborious days on the farm, in the factory, in travel and in a thousand contests with his rivals, made him a self-reliant man, quick, cautious from prudence, not timidity; cool and courageous in action, and magnanimous in victory. A very wise man, he discerns a flatterer from afar and heeds him not, but values praise from sincere admirers. Although much sought after by other successful men for association in great enterprises, he is entirely free from vanity or self-conceit; modest and retiring in his manners, in social life his speech is without cant or hypocrisy; intolerant of deception or any form of lying or dishonesty, the frankest, most candid of men, he never takes refuge in a falsehood; if unable or unwilling to disclose to a questioner facts which he prefers to hold in reserve, he never hesitates, but politely declines to speak on the subject at all.

A most thorough man, in intimate touch with every branch and all departments of the great business he manages, so competent and versatile that among the officers and departmental heads of his enterprises it is frequently remarked, and never disbelieved, that he could take the position of any man in the organization and do his work better than the incumbent. It is true, and its universal recognition gives a remarkably bright and clear insight into his character, for no such sentiments would be entertained except by men free from jealousy or envy, and none but a very unusual character would receive such tributes from the army of able and ambitious young men who are associated with him in his work.

In political association Mr. Duke is a Republican, because he

believes that the economic policy of that party is the accepted sentiment of the century and assures more happiness to more people. While his sympathies naturally rise and fall with those of the people among whom he was born and where he passed his young manhood, his judgment guides his actions. A patriotic American, he loves his whole country and follows with alacrity his duty in helping to make it first in every heart.

The legend tells that a great king of old had a messenger at his elbow when he prepared a great feast to whisper to him that he was only mortal. In prosperity it is a hard lesson to repeat. The chief office of the American Tobacco Company is furnished in elegant massiveness, but opposite the large chair set for the president there hangs, in singular contrast, on the walls the picture of the first log-house factory of the Dukes, and standing beside it the venerable founder of the business. The president had it placed there to remind him of the struggles of his youth, and to give him patience with the humbler things that come before him. He did not choose to forget, and wanted to remember humble as well as to achieve great things.

Mr. Duke has given freely to the benefactions cherished by his father, but his governing idea in giving is to give work. He delights in undertakings that will give work to those who want to help themselves, and believes its divine radiance is felt in widening waves of influence, and that every worker won is a missionary to the idle.

If there is any chord that rings highest in his thoughts, it is this eagerness to give those who would have it work. Work for its own ennobling and saving sake, work for the unselfish care of others. He has proven that he could be a great minister of finance, but he has scant patience with the school of finance that makes money breed money by artificial methods. He likes the bustle of the market place. The developed mold of his mind requires huge metal. Whether this consists of big business abroad or terracing the meads and meadows of broad acres into smooth lawns and setting plantations and making parks with vistas of classic statues for his own home, the effective way of helping some

one to help himself is the plot of his work. Like the motion of the sea, it never tires, but inspires.

When he believes he is right, and when he has asked his ever recurring question, why? and is satisfied with his answer, the criticisms of those who do not comprehend his actions, or, comprehending, choose to distort them, neither disconcert nor divert him. He understands that the man who reforms business as well as politics pays the penalty. He is not bookish, has few theories or fancies. His study is men and their deeds.

His judgment of men seems intuitive and unerring. From the highest executive officer to the head of the humblest department, he knows that the men to whom he gives his unstinted confidence will repay it with a single devotion. He returns this devotion with boyish sincerity.

The hundreds of young men sent out by him to home and foreign markets bring back with pride what they are sent to get, and his kindly praise is valued by them above their earnings. He is proud of and rejoices in the fact that there is no royal road to promotion in his service, but that merit clears the way for any possessor.

Nothing gives him greater gratification than to see the men employed in the company becoming his partners by investing their savings in its securities—in which they know there is no "water" (to use the slang of the Exchanges) save the sweat from the faces of the men whose brains made them worth their claims in gold. They are another name for the magnificent physical properties that ornament the great countries of the world and the intelligent toil which has made their products a necessity wherever luxury gives innocent enjoyment.

In creating a monumental, permanent capital, and in directing this aggregate to generating returns, Mr. Duke has become possessed of a princely fortune, and lives in manly opulence. He allows no parasites or prodigals, who calmly take for granted their superiority, to grow rich by his favor or fatten at his expense. The idle rich do not interest him, but the man with a single talent, well employed, commands his attention and admiration.

This is not the panegyric that often follows close after the death of a man of great mark. It is nearer a naked catalogue of facts and incidents which of their individuality stand out among the lesser ones. They are grouped so as to give what is a sober opinion of the man as he is. It is as well to say these things to-day as at another time.

W. W. Fuller.



kindred blood, once spoke of him as like the old Paladins of romance in his chivalrous consideration for the weak and erring, in his manful resistance to every wrong, in his loyal obedience to justly imposed authority, in his veneration for the church and its Founder. Truly, he was a fine model of the old-time Southern gentleman, appearing best in his own home, which he made the seat of refinement and a Christian courtesy, surpassing all the adornments of courts and official life. He was particularly fond of young men, to whom he often extended a helping hand and most wholesome and excellent advice. He was a man of singularly gentle and courteous address, with firm will power, clear judgment and cultivated mind. For more than thirty years he was a leading vestryman of Grace Church, Morganton, the trusted adviser of successive bishops, a veritable pillar of the county's social structure. He recognized at all times the claims of the public upon him, and served them as clerk of the Superior Court for many years, and subsequently at different times in the legislature.

Governor Graham designated him during his term as one of his aides, and his rank as colonel came from this appointment. Colonel Erwin's wife was Miss Elvira J. Holt, daughter of Dr. William R. Holt of Lexington, North Carolina, a gentleman of very high culture and standing in the State, for years an able practicing physician and in later life owned and conducted Linwood farm, near Lexington, noted for its fine crops, its improved breeds of cattle, sheep and horses, which he imported to the State. He graduated at the University of North Carolina in the class with Governor Morehead and other distinguished men, and was one of the founders of the State agricultural Society. Mrs. Erwin survived her husband by many years, and has only recently been laid to rest beside him in the quiet churchyard of the parish with which the best part of their lives is inseparably blended. No sketch of Mr. Erwin would be complete without mention of the influence his mother had over him for good. She was no less striking in character than her noble husband. To her wise rearing and advice even more, perhaps, than his father's he owes his lofty ideals, his aspirations and ambitions. She was indeed a true woman of

the highest type of culture and refinement, generally acknowledged as one of the brightest, strongest and most admirable characters in Western North Carolina, where in her day she was the charming hostess of the old Bellevue homestead, and entertained there many distinguished visitors. At this old home place she was called to her reward at the age of seventy-nine, with four sons and six daughters, all honorable and strong men and women, at her bedside, who are living witnesses of what she proved as a wife and mother.

William Allen Erwin was born at the family homestead, "Bellevue," on Upper Creek, three miles from Morganton, July 15, 1856, and was the first son and fifth child of the aforementioned parents. His early life was spent out of doors upon the farm, and there was laid the foundation of that fine constitution which has since stood him in good need in the many and various employments of his subsequent most active life. Nor can there be well imagined a more choice surrounding for the development of lusty young manhood than that with which he was favored.

The Blue Ridge, with its ever-changing lines of beauty, snow crowned or sun kissed, bounds the northern and western horizon, the rapid flowing Catawba is a mile distant, the family seat is the spacious brick pile of the old South, with wide firesides and lofty ceilings, the surrounding valley is fertile and receptive to every touch of the husbandman, the air is tonic with the breath of native, untouched forests, while church and school and social enjoyment with cultured people are within half an hour's ride. From this home, after the usual training in the village school, then kept by Mr. William Moore of South Carolina, and later at the Finley High School in Lenoir, North Carolina, he entered the University of Kentucky, where he passed two years, returning before graduation to enter upon the work of his life.

The war, which left in its wake so many wrecks in the Southland, causing grey hairs before their time and bowing heads with heavier weights than years, had not spared Colonel Erwin, though his lot was more fortunate than most of his fellows. It became necessary for young Erwin to take upon himself a man's work

before he had reached man's estate, and he went about it without a murmur and with that cheerful confidence in himself, far removed from self-conceit, which has been a distinguishing trait in his character. On December 4, 1874, he became a salesman in the general store of Messrs. Holt, Gant & Holt at Company Shops, now Burlington, North Carolina. With these gentlemen he remained till 1877, when he accepted the position of book-keeper in the office of the North Carolina Railroad in the same town.

A year subsequent he became a merchant on his own account, and continued in that line until 1882, still at Company Shops. All this while he was growing in usefulness, in repute, in knowledge of men and affairs, which in time was to place him among those captains of industry who are the pride of the new South. He was and is essentially one of those men who do things. That is his true claim to a place among the prominent men of our State. It is a just and worthy claim fairly won, and the State cannot shower esteem upon any class of her citizens more worthily than upon these approved workers. From 1882 to 1893 young Erwin rapidly rose in the profession which he now adopted for his life work, to wit, the manufacture of the South's great staple, well called King Cotton, as its power over the lives of men is a truly regal one. These years he passed in Alamance County as treasurer and general manager of the E. M. Holt Plaid Mills. Since 1893 he has lived at West Durham, North Carolina, having planned, built and successfully managed the large Erwin Cotton Mill in that flourishing city, and ranking among its leading citizens. This fact of itself is a distinguished compliment to any man, as few towns within the South contain within their borders a coterie of more alert business chiefs than reside in Durham.

In his chosen line of work, cotton milling, he has the responsible management of probably more spindles and looms than any one man in North Carolina, a list of which is given below:

Alpine Cotton Mills, Morganton, 10,500 spindles; Cooleemee Cotton Mills, Cooleemee, North Carolina, 40,000 spindles and 1296 looms; Durham Cotton Manufacturing Company, East Durham,

North Carolina, 26,000 spindles and 824 looms ; Pearl Cotton Mills, Durham, North Carolina, 11,000 spindles and 240 broad looms ; Oxford Cotton Mills, Oxford, North Carolina, 6500 spindles ; Erwin Cotton Mills at Durham and Duke, 60,000 spindles and 2000 looms.

These mills employ a capital of nearly \$5,000,000. No two of these mills are producing the same kind of goods, and all the weaving mills are on varied lines of colored fabrics, more difficult to manufacture and employing more skill and capital than the plain white goods, and all are on a successful operating basis, and most of the mills reaping the benefit of well-established brands and makes of goods in their various lines.

Mr. Erwin has for twenty years been superintendent of his church's Sunday-school, at Burlington first and later in his present home. At the same time he has rendered continuous service as a vestryman, following in this, as in other ways, the footsteps of his father. Nor has he forgotten his early farm training, it being one of his few boasts that he surpasses his neighbors in gardening.

Blessed is the man who has found his life work and loves it is the language of the old proverb, and this blessing has surely been Mr. Erwin's lot. And then the finest point in the man's make-up remains to be noticed. It is his unselfishness. Prosperous himself as the reward of honorable toil, he has reached out to help others, and we know of perhaps a dozen young men whose lives have been directly or indirectly, through his influence, thrown into channels of permanent usefulness to themselves and their families. Here is the truest of all honor and renown, the fruits of which are to be gathered in the great hereafter.

Not the commanding position this man occupies among the South's textile workers, not his personal success in the world's marts of trade, but his loving kindness to his fellow-men, his sympathy with the sorrow and ill-luck of others, constitutes the bond which make those who know Will Erwin love him. In person Mr. Erwin is a striking, commanding figure, with the dark eye and hair of his family—a family distinguished for the beauty of its women and the strength of its men.

He is yet in the prime of vigorous manhood, and bids fair to

achieve great results in the development of the State's long dormant water-power, now being turned to new uses through his own and others' agencies. The work undertaken in Harnett County by himself and associates in business is one among other instances of what is promised North Carolina in her ever-brightening future. Here it was that about two years ago a spot was selected on a beautiful plateau, high and dry, about one and one-half miles on the west side of the Cape Fear River, and about the same distance from the old town of Averagesboro, and in the original pine forest was laid out and built a modern and model mill village, whose broad streets are now lighted by electricity, and in the town, named by Mr. Erwin "Duke," in honor of the president of his mill, Mr. B. N. Duke, the Erwin Cotton Mills Company's No. 2 mill is being operated successfully. This mill now employs some 800 operatives, and the town holds about 2000 souls. Churches, graded schools, department store, market, bank and every reasonable convenience has been provided, and to Mr. Erwin is due the credit of planning and building this village with all it contains, and which promises some day to be many times its present size.

A man's purpose in life is, of course, best known to himself. In a recent letter to his friend, the editor of this sketch, Mr. Erwin says of himself:

"One thing that I desire you to specially know, and that is that I have striven not to become rich, but have centered my whole heart and soul in the desire and ambition to make a man after the type of my father in character, and with it to maintain his name and honor, and to establish for myself all the success in a business way that faithful, earnest and persistent efforts may bring.

"I would be glad for you to know, in dealing with the several thousand operatives and families of same, that I have striven unceasingly to uplift and make their lives better. In this work I have found pleasure, and trust that in it I may be permitted to broaden my field of labor."

This writer makes no apology for inserting the unconscious tribute which is conveyed in the above, taken from a private letter, which it was assumed would never see the light.

But no restriction guards the estimate which a near and dear

friend of Mr. Erwin's puts on his work in behalf of religion and good morals. He writes as follows from Durham, North Carolina :

"Mr. Erwin has been active and faithful all his life in church work. He contributes largely of his means to the church here and at his mill towns. He has conducted a mission Sunday-school at Burlington and West Durham for about twenty-five years, and his Sunday-school at West Durham now is a very flourishing one, and would be an object lesson to most superintendents.

"In his work of cotton milling he was one of the first men in the State to reduce the hours of work from twelve to eleven hours per day. He also, some twenty years ago, stopped working children under twelve years of age, which the legislature prohibited only two years ago. He got established in the mill town of West Durham the first graded school in the State outside of town limits wholly supported by the public school fund. He has been most active in building up the moral atmosphere of his mill communities. He persistently refuses to work at any of his mills any hand of questionable character. He has encouraged the education of his operatives, having at each mill town a nice school. He has around his mills a better grade of tenement houses than is generally found at cotton mills. The new town of Duke particularly is an ideal mill town, each house being a comfortable home. At every mill he has anything to do with there are good schools, good homes and churches, and the towns are well ordered and the people law abiding. He has given much of his energy to providing for the operatives those things that care for the bodies as well as the souls, the hearts and minds of the people.

"He has been one of the best friends of St. Mary's School, Raleigh. He was appointed chairman of the committee to buy the present school property from the Cameron estate, and succeeded in doing it on favorable terms after one committee, appointed before Mr. Erwin's committee, had reported that it was impossible to buy it at all. He takes a great interest in this school, and is always willing and ready to give his time and attention to anything pertaining to its welfare."

No sketch of this genial gentleman would be complete which omitted some reference to his married life, that inner sacred circle where the true man finds his chiefest happiness.

Mr. Erwin found the partner of his life on the 23d of October, 1889, in the person of Miss Sadie L. Smedes, the youngest daughter of the late Aldert Smedes, D.D., the founder of St. Mary's School of Raleigh, North Carolina. Four children have blessed this union and received that Christian culture which

is hereditary on both sides of the house. We know that the true basis of all high civilization dates from and is founded on the family. North Carolina is blessed in the main with a high type of citizenship, and his is one of the many Christian homes dotted over her great area from sea to mountain. From the Revolution to this good hour have come forth from these firesides men and women who have given the State its distinctive character for conservatism, integrity, purity of public and private life. Their way in some respects may be old-fashioned, but time has proved it a good fashion, and the young man beginning to build a name can do no better than follow it.

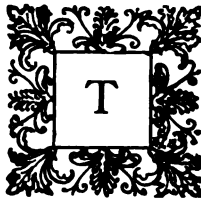
The life of the subject of this sketch is illustrative of a continuous building upon a good foundation laid in the past, and for that reason alone is worth more than a passing study.

W. S. Pearson.





GEORGE FARRAGUT



THE family of Farragut (or Ferragut, as it was formerly written) is one of ancient origin, claiming descent from Don Pedro Ferragut, styled *El Conquistador*, or "the Conqueror," a renowned warrior in the service of King James I. of Aragon when that monarch expelled the Moors from Majorca and Valencia in the thirteenth century. From this Don Pedro sprang many noted fighters, as well as scholars and theologians; but as numerous as the family was, it now no longer exists in the Balearic Islands, where the subject of this sketch was born.

Though the name of Farragut is now known wherever the English language is spoken, in consequence of the exploits of David Glasgow Farragut, America's greatest admiral in the war between the States, few there be who are acquainted with the record of that hero's father, Major George Farragut, a faithful soldier in the service of North Carolina throughout the war of the Revolution.

George Farragut was a full-blooded Spaniard, born September 29, 1755, at Ciudadella, on the island of Minorca, one of the Balearic group, in the Mediterranean Sea. His full baptismal name was George Anthony Magin Farragut. According to an entry made by him in a family Bible, he left the island of Minorca on the 2d of April, 1772, but did not settle in America until 1776.

During the four years elapsing between these dates he was part of the time at school in Barcelona and later engaged as a seafarer. Though highly educated in Spanish, he never fully mastered the English tongue, and some of his attempts at letter-writing after he came to America appear quite ludicrous.

When George Farragut first arrived in North Carolina the war of the Revolution was in full blast, and the patriots of the State had already struck a crushing blow against the royal cause in a battle fought at Moore's Creek Bridge on February 27, 1776. Farragut was not long in finding his way into the ranks of the Americans, but chose a branch of the service to which a seaman might be considered a stranger—not our infant navy or coast artillery, but cavalry! He saw much active service, and is said to have saved the life of Colonel William Washington at the battle of Cowpens, January 17, 1781. Later he was engaged in warfare against the terrible Tory marauder, Colonel David Fanning. By the spring of 1782 Farragut had risen to the rank of captain, as shown by a resolution of the General Assembly, passed on the 27th of May in that year, designating him by that title and allowing him \$300 for six months' pay and subsistence money. Another joint resolution of the Assembly, passed on the 27th of November, 1786, styles him "Mr. George Farragut, late a captain in the cavalry of the State regiment of North Carolina," and adds the further resolution "that this General Assembly are led to adopt this measure from a conviction of the faithful, voluntary and public-spirited services of the said Mr. Farragut, he being a native and subject of the Kingdom of France." Just before the close of the war he was promoted from captain to major of North Carolina cavalry, his commission to bear date from the 1st of May, 1782 (see State Records, Vol. XIX., p. 309). He was also a major of cavalry in Tennessee, as we shall see later on.

Major Farragut's wife was Elizabeth Shine, born June 7, 1765, in what is now the county of Lenoir, but then a part of Dobbs County. This lady was the daughter of John Shine, who belonged to a family of proved patriotism in the war of the Revolution.

Among the well-known families of Eastern North Carolina with whom the Shines were allied by blood were the Olivers, Heritages, Bryans, Shepards, etc., and the name is still perpetuated in that region.

By his marriage as above Major Farragut left five children, as follows: William Augustus Claiborne Farragut, born August 23, 1797; entered navy as midshipman January 16, 1809; promoted to lieutenant December 9, 1814; dropped from active service for physical disability (chronic rheumatism) September 13, 1855; died December 20, 1859, while employed at the naval station at New Orleans. He married a lady of French ancestry, and left descendants in the French colony at New Orleans. David Glasgow Farragut, the great American admiral, who was born July 2, 1801, and died August 14, 1870, leaving an only son, Loyall Farragut of New York, author of his biography. The baptismal name of the admiral (as shown by his father's family Bible) was James Glasgow Farragut, but he took the name of David after being adopted by Commodore David Porter, as hereafter to be noted. Anne Shine Farragut, born January 20, 1804, who married Louis Gurlie of New Orleans in 1826. George Anthony Farragut, born November 20, 1805, who was drowned at the age of nine, in July, 1815, while crossing Lake Pontchartrain, in Louisiana. Elizabeth Farragut, who was born November 12, 1807, and became the wife of a gentleman by the name of DuPont; she left descendants in Mississippi.

Resuming this narrative concerning Major George Farragut of Revolutionary fame: It was shortly after the return of peace that he went West and engaged in surveying, also becoming a farmer in what was then known as the district of Washington, in North Carolina. Later his place of residence became a part of the South-west Territory, and is now embraced within the borders of the State of Tennessee.

When Major Farragut arrived in the Washington district, men of military training were valuable acquisitions to that thinly settled region. Farragut soon became muster-master of the district, and was commissioned a major of cavalry by Governor

William Blount on November 3, 1790, and he was in active service in 1792 and 1793.

Major Farragut became the owner of quite a number of tracts of land in his new home. The record of his purchases, as ascertained by the historian Joshua W. Caldwell of Knoxville, is as follows: On February 6, 1794, he purchased from James White a lot in Knoxville, and two days later bought from Thomas King 200 acres; on April 8th the State of North Carolina granted him a tract of 380 acres in Grassy Valley; in April, 1796, he purchased two other tracts, all in Knox County. Farragut disposed of these two tracts in 1799 and 1800. Prior to the time when he sold them, he made his home on the first (a little over three acres), which stood at the end of Emerson Street—or Spring Street as it was formerly called—in Knoxville. On this lot the house occupied by the Farragut family was standing as late as the beginning of 1903, when it was torn down to make way for a railroad. The original form of the house is thus described: "The first story was stone, with a wall thick enough for a four-story log house. The second of thick logs, and then a half-story above, with a high roof."

Having gained a practical knowledge of carpentry while on shipboard, Major Farragut put his experience in that line of work to good account when in Knoxville, and became a contractor and house builder. Not only in Knoxville, but throughout the surrounding country, many of the houses of the earlier settlers were built by him.

On December 9, 1796, Farragut bought from Stokely Donelson 640 acres on the north bank of the Holston River. Later, in 1805, he executed a mortgage for a part of this land, and set forth in the mortgage deed that his dwelling house was on part of the tract. His residence was at a place called Stony Point, which was afterward known as Low's Ferry. There Admiral Farragut was born.

The Farragut house at Stony Point is described as having been unusually large for a log structure. Originally it was 40 by 20 feet, with additional rooms built later, which greatly added to

its size. Through its walls were two loopholes for purposes of defense against the Indians.

Admiral Farragut himself could remember many of the dangerous frontier experiences of his father's family in Tennessee, as the following extract from his journal (in the biography by his son, Loyall Farragut) will show :

"In those days, on the border, we were continually annoyed by the Indians, which rendered the organization of the militia a necessity. My father was appointed a major of cavalry, and served for some time in that capacity, the condition of the country requiring its inhabitants to be constantly on the lookout. I remember that on one occasion, during my father's absence, a party of Indians came to our house, which was somewhat isolated, when my mother, who was a brave and energetic woman, barred the door in a most effectual manner, and sent all of us trembling little ones up into the loft of the barn while she guarded the entrance with an axe. The savages attempted to parley with her, but she kept them at bay, until finally they departed, for some reason which is unknown, their intentions having been evidently hostile. My father arrived shortly after with his command, and immediately pursued the Indians, whom I believe he succeeded in overtaking and punishing; at any rate, they were never seen in that part of the country again."

Some time during the early part of 1807 Major Farragut removed with his family from Tennessee to the Gulf Coast, having received a commission as sailing-master in the United States Navy on the 2d of March in that year. After his arrival in the far South, Farragut purchased a plantation in what is now Jackson County, Mississippi. It was situated at a slight promontory called Point Plaquet, and sometimes known as Farragut's Point. This place is on the west side of Pascagoula River, and near it was a small harbor, together with tremendous stretches of marsh lands, which were interspersed with bayous and ponds. The place was in a section of country which, in parlance of the old English borderers, might be styled "debatable land," for it was claimed by the Spaniards as a part of West Florida and by the United States as included in the Louisiana Territory recently purchased from France. After the American settlers had captured the

Spanish fortress at Baton Rouge the government at Washington seized the whole stretch of country in dispute.

Though still retaining possession of his plantation, Farragut removed his family to New Orleans in 1808. He seems to have alternated in his place of residence between his plantation and the naval station at New Orleans, for in 1811, while still serving as sailing-master, he was called upon to act as magistrate for the county of Pascagoula. The government agent who made the appointment wrote to the authorities at Washington that he had prevailed upon Sailing-Master Farragut to accept the post of magistrate upon a special request from the people of Pascagoula, by whom he was greatly beloved. As the Gulf Coast was settled so largely by Spaniards and French, it was to Farragut no doubt a most congenial locality, recalling the surroundings of his youth in far-away Minorca.

At the naval station in New Orleans, Sailing-Master Farragut was for some time in command of a gunboat. His wife died in New Orleans on the 22d of June, 1808, being the victim of a yellow-fever epidemic. Before Mrs. Farragut's death an incident occurred which had the greatest influence in shaping the career of her son, David Glasgow Farragut, afterward known to fame as Admiral Farragut. Sailing-Master David Porter, father of Commodore David Porter and grandfather of Admiral David Dixon Porter, was then stationed at New Orleans, and, becoming ill, received much kindness from the family of his friend and associate, Sailing-Master Farragut, at whose house he died. Shortly after that Commander Porter, afterward commodore, was ordered to New Orleans, and learning of what had been done for his late father in the household of Mr. Farragut, offered to adopt one of that gentleman's two smaller sons, William, the eldest of the three, already being a midshipman in the navy. The younger of the two boys, on hearing of Porter's offer, promptly asked that he might be the one to accompany that officer. Thus began the wonderful naval career of David Glasgow Farragut, who received his "baptism of fire" under Captain Porter in the War of 1812, when a midshipman, only thirteen years old, on

board the *Essex*, and who died with a higher rank than had ever before existed in the navy of the United States. As already stated, Admiral Farragut's name was originally James Glasgow Farragut, and he assumed the name David when adopted by David Porter.

Of George Farragut little more remains to be said. He retired from the navy March 25, 1814, on account of age, then being in his fifty-ninth year and prematurely old, no doubt in consequence of his continued life of almost constant exposure.

After the retirement of Sailing-Master Farragut from the navy he once more repaired to his plantation in Mississippi, and there spent the remainder of his life.

It was on his plantation at Point Plaquet, June 4, 1817, that George Farragut died three years after his retirement from the navy, in the sixty-second year of his age, and after a residence of more than forty years in the Republic for whose independence he had bravely contended when a young officer of North Carolina light horse in the army of the Revolution.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.



married Judith Scharfenstein, daughter of a local goldsmith, had a large family, and died in 1763 as an apothecary and burgomaster of the town.

The youngest of his seven sons, Peter Konrad Fries, born November 1, 1720, decided as a child that he would study theology, though it was contrary to the wish of his father, who intended him for a merchant. After finishing his studies in Strasburg, 1739-41, and obtaining the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, he, in 1746, received at Montbeliard, which then belonged to Wittenberg, an appointment as pastor, first to Hericourt and then to Contenans, where he remained twelve years. "But," wrote his son, "the acquaintance with Zinzendorf's Christians and certain members of the Brethren's Church roused in him an increasing desire to join that society." In 1757 he learned to know Zinzendorf personally at Montmirail, and in the following year he obtained his dismissal from Duke Karl of Wittenberg and joined the *Unitas Fratrum*, now usually called the Moravian Church. At first the Count took him into his own house, then sent him to Herrendyk, but soon stationed him in Neuwied, where he remained only two years. During the years 1761-63 he traveled on affairs of the church in Southern France as far as Bordeaux and then to Prussia and Lithuania.

Bishop Reichel wrote: "He often risked his life to visit the oppressed Protestants in Southern France. In addition to zeal in the service of the Brethren's Church and sincere piety, he possessed wide knowledge, and was a very thoughtful man." In August, 1763, he returned to Herrnhut, and on November 30, 1763, married Christiane Jaeschke, the daughter of one of the first exiles from Moravia, who had placed himself under the protection of Count Zinzendorf. George, the father of this Michael Jaeschke, was one of those faithful ones who, after the overthrow of the ancient Bohemian-Moravian Brethren's Church, carefully guarded the teachings and traditions of their fathers and transmitted them to their descendants.

Being a man of marked ability, Peter Konrad Fries was given many important positions in the Moravian Church. About 1763

he and his wife were stationed at Geneva; in 1764 he took part in the Synod at Marienborn, and was appointed their agent to Russia; in April, 1765, he and his wife were sent to Petersburg, to the Court of Catharine II., where he secured various important concessions for the Moravian colony of Sarepta, then being established on the Volga. Returning from Russia, he lived until 1769 as pastor in Niesky, then was made warden of the congregation in Neuwied, a position which brought him trouble and loss, for he, "partly through his credit, partly by sacrificing a considerable part of his own property, preserved the credit of his congregation." Then he was called from Neuwied, and in 1772 was sent again to Geneva. Finally, in the spring of 1773, he became secretary, and in 1775 a member, of the Unity's Elders' Conference, the executive board of the church, and from then till his death, in 1783, he made his home at Barby, a castle on the Elbe secured for the *Unitas Fratrum* from the Saxon Government. But he was so often absent from home on official business that he considered it necessary to send his two sons, Jacob Frederick and John Christian William, to the Moravian boarding school at Niesky at the tender age of five and three years, respectively.

Jacob Frederick became an eminent Doctor of Philosophy, professor of mathematics and logic at the University of Jena and the author of numerous books and pamphlets along his chosen lines.

John Christian William, born in Barby, in 1775, educated in the Moravian school at Niesky, came to North Carolina in 1809, and there married Elizabeth Nissen, and to them was born the subject of this sketch.

The parents desired that their son should become a minister of the Gospel, and with this end in view, after preparatory school work, he was sent to the Moravian institution, Nazareth Hall, in Pennsylvania, to complete both classical and theological courses. Upon his return home he became a teacher, but finding that neither that work nor the work of the ministry was entirely suited to his disposition and tastes, he began the study of law under Mr. Emanuel Shober, a prominent attorney of his day, and was soon admitted to the bar, and began the active practice of the law.

In a short while he was appointed clerk and master in equity, which position he occupied for some time with credit to himself and with satisfaction to the public. His business tastes and ability so manifested themselves, however, that we soon find him engaged as the agent of the Salem (cotton) Manufacturing Company, of which Dr. Schumann was president. Although he had had little opportunity for mechanical training and no experience in manufacturing, yet with characteristic energy and care and forethought he determined that thorough preparation was necessary for the success of the enterprise, and so he visited Paterson, New Jersey, and the mills in various other Northern cities in order to study the processes, the best methods of work and the latest machinery.

He prepared the best plans possible for the plant, and returned to personally superintend the erection of the buildings and the placing of the machinery in the year 1836. Under his direction the business was profitable and successful.

In 1838 he was married to Miss Lizetta Vogler, daughter of John Vogler, Sr., and their union was blessed with seven children, three sons and four daughters, all of whom are still living. In 1840 Mr. Fries began business on his own account, with the aid, encouragement and financial assistance of his father-in-law. The beginning was a modest one, and the machinery consisted first of cards for making rolls from the wool brought in by farmers of the adjoining country, and in addition a small dyeing and fulling plant for finishing the cloth woven at that time by hand so extensively in every home.

Spinning machinery was added in 1842, and later looms for weaving were installed. The business was successful from the first, and continued to grow under the able, aggressive management of the owner. The difficulties incident to successful manufacturing at this period can hardly be appreciated to-day. The mails were few and slow, the trips to Northern cities were necessarily hard and trying ones, by private conveyances through the country, requiring time and patience, absence from business and home, and personal discomfort. Yet all these difficulties were overcome, and an interesting arrangement was made by Mr. Fries

and his strong personal friend, Mr. Edwin M. Holt, another pioneer manufacturer, by which they took alternate trips to the Northern centers, and upon the return of either from these trips a conference was held and reports made of all improvements in machinery, of trade conditions and of all other matters of special interest to them in their work.

On March 5, 1846, Mr. Fries's brother, Henry W. Fries, was admitted into partnership with him, and the firm became known as F. & H. Fries, and has continued under this name ever since.

The act of the legislature dividing Stokes County and establishing Forsyth was ratified January 16, 1849, and Mr. Fries was appointed by the legislature one of the special commissioners to select a suitable site for the court-house, "to purchase tracts of land on which to erect the necessary public buildings, to lay off the residue not used for public purposes in streets and town lots, to sell such lots at public auction, etc." The provisions of the act also made it necessary for the said commissioners to purchase at least thirty acres for the purposes indicated above. Mr. Fries arranged to purchase fifty-one and one-fourth acres from the Salem congregation at a price of \$5 per acre, and a deed to this property, whereon the present Forsyth court-house now stands, was executed to Francis Fries, chairman of the County Court, and his successors forever. Mr. Fries then designed the court-house, and proceeded to build a two-story brick building, 44 by 60, with a portico twelve feet wide across the entire front, the roof being supported by four large pillars thirty feet in height. He also sold the extra lots to such good advantage that the court-house site and building were actually paid for in full from the proceeds, except a small balance of \$359.49. For many years Mr. Fries continued to serve as chairman of the court of Common Pleas and Quarter Sessions. He was also for a long time a justice of the peace, and was a member of the first Board of Town Commissioners when Salem was incorporated in 1856. He once served as mayor of the town. He was deeply interested in the work and success of the Salem Female Academy and College, and carefully planned and with his own hands made the drawings and specifi-

cations of the Main Hall, and gave the construction of the buildings his able personal supervision.

The cornerstone of this hall was laid March 24, 1856. In 1857 Mr. Fries was a member of the State legislature from Forsyth County, and under his immediate care and wise direction the system of taxation was revised and the entire revenue act rearranged. In this work, as well as in all other legislative matters, he performed careful, thorough, painstaking and most valuable service.

Before the days of railroads he took an important part in all movements looking toward the growth, development and upbuilding of the State, and among the enterprises with which he was connected it is interesting to note that he was one of the prime movers in starting and building the celebrated plank road which extended from Fayetteville into Western North Carolina.

With Governor Morehead and other prominent men he was immediately associated in building the North Carolina Railroad, and he was one of the original stockholders and a leading director of the road from the time of its organization until the close of his eventful life. He established a tannery in Salem and a large mercantile business in addition to all his other work, and exercised a strong influence throughout the community and the State.

He was a member of the Aufseher Collegium, or Board of Overseers, of the Moravian Church in Salem, and held other offices of honor and trust.

His death occurred, after a long illness, August 1, 1863.

W. A. Blair.

F. & H. Fries. Upon the death of his brother Francis, whom he had faithfully assisted at home while the former was engaged in many enterprises of a far-reaching character, the firm was continued under his sole management. "In 1879 the new firm was formed under the same name, with H. W. Fries as senior partner and safe adviser."

Mr. Francis Fries was called away from life at a very critical time, both in the history of his own family and of the community. The Civil War was raging with all its terrible vicissitudes, and it required everything that our departed brother could do with an iron industry and an unwavering faithfulness in order to maintain and thus hand down to the present time the enterprises upon which so much has depended for Salem's industrial welfare.

How his brother felt with regard to the task that he was leaving upon his hands appears in his last will and testament, under date of June 29, 1863. The reference is so touching, and the expectation uttered by a dying brother has been so nobly fulfilled, that the extract may well be given, as it was written forty years ago.

"Lastly, I most earnestly recommend the care and welfare of my rather helpless family to the kind attention and active support of my dearly beloved brother. His fraternal attention and assistance to my wife, and his fond and almost fraternal care shown to the rest of my family, with his uniform solicitude for their comfort and well-being, both moral and physical, having during my long sickness relieved me of much trouble and anxiety, and the idea that I can leave my family in such hands, has greatly reconciled me to an early exit from this world."

So wrote the dying brother in 1863, and in the spirit of his parting request his surviving brother lived and wrought for forty years.

It was natural that such characteristics should meet with a wide acceptance in the business world, and so it came to pass that Mr. H. W. Fries, without seeking great trusts and responsibilities of various sorts, was made a recipient of them to an unusual degree. He had been commissioner of the town of Salem, trustee of the Moravian Church, member of its synods, president of the North-western North Carolina Railroad, director of the North Carolina

Railroad, director of the Wachovia Loan and Trust Company, director of the Fries Manufacturing and Power Company, vice-president of the Mayo Mills and connected with those of Avalon and Fries, and in many other ways identified with the business of the community, of the State and of other States.

For a good many years he had been severely afflicted at times with rheumatism, which eventually broke down his very robust constitution. His final illness commenced with March 1, 1902. During these six months he has been a very patient sufferer. On Tuesday, November 4, 1902, at half-past 12 o'clock noon, he was gently released, at the age of seventy-seven years, seven months and twenty-eight days.

Read at his funeral by Rt. Rev. Edward Rondthaler.



up the work of the firm, and devoted himself and all his energies to its growth, development and success. In 1866, feeling the need of additional training and scholarship, he entered the University of North Carolina, where he studied for one and one-half years, crowding into the short period a vast deal of successful endeavor and hard study, and then returned to his home and took up the routine of work again. But for the force of circumstances his life would have probably been spent in literary, educational and scientific work. The best training and scholarship is, however, that which a man gives unto himself, and Mr. Fries has been a close student during his entire life, finding in his own library a great University, and among his books the most famous teachers.

On the 21st of October, 1870, he was married to Miss Agnes S. de Schweinitz, daughter of Bishop Emil de Schweinitz of the Moravian Church, a direct descendant of Count Zinzendorf. Two children have been born to them, Adelaide L. and Mary E., both of whom are living.

In all the affairs of community, State and nation Mr. Fries has been thoroughly interested, and has shown his interest by his works. He has served several terms as town commissioner and magistrate, and for six years, during the entire term of its existence, he was judge of the County Court. He also gave long, satisfactory and faithful service to the county as member of the Board of Commissioners until he resigned to go abroad in 1890. Under his care and direction the real movement of good roads was begun, and all the affairs of the county prospered. In all the work of the Moravian Church he has modestly taken a lively and exceedingly intelligent and helpful part. For years he has served on the Board of Trustees, and was a delegate to the General Synod held in Herrnhut, Germany, in the year 1899. And he has long been a member of the Provincial Elders' Conference, or governing board, of the Southern Province.

It would naturally follow from his tastes and accomplishments that he would have an important part in educational affairs. The Salem Academy and College owes him a debt of gratitude from his work as trustee, counsellor and adviser, and he is also a firm

friend of the University of North Carolina, and one of its trustees.

The study of financial questions has proved of special interest to him, and the Indianapolis convention named him as a member of the Executive Committee. He was afterward chosen as a member of the Monetary Commission, which held its first meeting in Washington City on September 22, 1897. This commission made a learned, thorough, exhaustive and satisfactory report, which attracted great attention, and which was published in 1898. Mr. Fries devoted time, energy and thought to the work of the Commission, and made valuable contributions to its success.

In purely local affairs Mr. Fries has always responded to every call for service, and has willingly and gladly done his part. He has served as president of the Chamber of Commerce and as a member of its various committees and boards. He is at the head of the firm of F. & H. Fries, president of the Arista Mills, president of the People's National Bank, president of the Cemetery Company, director of the North Carolina Midland Railroad, the Fries Manufacturing and Power Company, the Wachovia Loan and Trust Company and other corporations.

He has made a number of important inventions and discoveries, and has secured patents on the same. Among them may be mentioned the Fries dyeing machine for cotton mills, which has proved a success, and which is now in general use; and "Cleanairs," a remarkable machine for moistening, washing and purifying the air in factories, offices, houses, public buildings, etc.

Mr. Fries's tastes and inclinations are strongly literary, and he has written a number of articles for papers and magazines, and has delivered addresses in different parts of the country, North and South. He has traveled extensively, both in this country and Europe, and is a man of wide culture and many-sided development, devoted to his home and family, to his community and State.

He is a member of the Society of Chemical Industry, the Academy of Social Science, the Reform Club, New York, and the Southern Club, Philadelphia.

W. A. Blair.

Francis Fries, the father of the subject of this sketch, was a man distinguished in the manufacturing industries of North Carolina long prior to the conflict of the sixties, and had rendered famous throughout this State the cotton and woolen mills of Salem. Indeed, in the infancy of the son the father was interested in the then greatest internal improvement of the State, the building of the North Carolina Railroad, and was actively engaged in large contracts for its construction through the county of Guilford. Francis Fries married Miss Lizetta Vogler of Salem, a most respected name, and from this union sprung a large family, three sons and four daughters, all living to-day, either in full manhood or as gracious mothers of children, a significant instance of that one temporal reward offered for obedience to the commands of Jehovah—the reward for parental homage.

Francis Henry Fries, the second son of this honored family, was born in Salem February 1, 1855. The origin of the race was in the twilight of the German fatherland, his immediate ancestry coming to this country from Saxony, in 1809, to what is known as the Moravian colony. This devoted band came under the guidance and auspices of the Moravian Church. They purchased from Lord Granville 100,000 acres of land located by Bishop Spangenberg in Piedmont, North Carolina, and there settled this virgin forest under the name of Wachovia. The family of Fries was one of note in Germany, J. C. William Fries, grandfather of Colonel Fries, being the brother of the well-known Jacob Fries, a teacher of philosophy in the University of Jena; and there, in the Saxon province from which this family came, are living at this day many of recognized kinship to the well-known family of Salem.

The subject of this sketch spent his childhood in Salem, receiving his early education and making his preparation for college in the schools and from personal studies taken in his native town. In 1870 he was prepared for the University of North Carolina, but under the direful days that followed on the events of war that ancient institution was closed, and so young Fries entered Davidson College. He graduated from this prominent seat of learning in due course and with distinction, and returned to his home at

once to begin the work of life. Thus early did he put his hand to the plow. He entered the mills of F. & H. Fries, celebrated for the manufacture of cotton and woolen goods for many years, and the chief source of supply to the men in grey during the four years in which the South was blockaded against foreign entries. These mills were established, in 1840, by Francis Fries, who subsequently took into co-partnership his brother, H. W. Fries, and hence the name F. & H. Fries, so well known in manufacturing circles. Francis Fries died in 1863, but the mills continued operation under the well-known firm name, and to-day this name controls much of the properties of Salem.

This young college graduate thus starting life did not ask any right to easy position as heir apparent to the industries in which he sought occupation, but made his beginning, in overalls, at the hard grind of lowly labor, and from this plain and simple beginning passed through the toilsome journey to position and wealth. A marked career—an American lesson learned in the South.

In four years of this service he had shown industry and developed abilities—had won his spurs, and the man stood out, a success. In 1878, together with his uncle, H. W. Fries, and his brother, H. E. Fries, he made an interesting voyage to Europe, spending the greater part of a year traveling in the British Islands and on the Continent. On this trip he saw many lands and studied many peoples, visiting Ireland, England, Scotland, France, Germany, Italy and other principal countries. It will doubtless be imagined that that was not an excursion planned for a jolly outing, but a journey for knowledge, and in this extensive view of the world's greatest civilization the active and impressionable mind expanded and developed. In after life, in various important undertakings, his grasp of the situation and his broad and liberal views of men and measures are logically attributable to the expansive ideas thus received from early contact with the various phases of national enterprises in the great world. On his return from Europe, although then a young man, he took charge of the cotton and woolen mills of Salem as their superintendent, and gave his entire time to manufacturing until

the year 1887. This was an important era in the growth of the cotton industry in this country; its manufacture was undergoing many changes; the fight was rapidly developing to place the American product in the world's market, and in this contest the subject of this sketch first developed the full powers of his mind. He became accomplished in his business, and many young men to-day holding prominent positions in various factories learned the lessons of their art under his skillful direction. He may not have had any maxim given him for special guidance, but if there was any rule which had his constant obedience, it was, "What is worth doing at all is worth doing well."

It would not be a correct statement to say that Colonel Fries indulged in politics or sought political preferment, yet he always took an interest in the good government of the State and gave it his cordial support. On the election of Governor Scales as governor of North Carolina, in 1884, he was called on by that patriot to take a position on his military staff. This honorary position he accepted, and served with the rank of colonel during the four years' term of his chief.

Having acquired as complete a knowledge of the manufacture of cotton goods as the state of the art then afforded, Colonel Fries gave his active support to such enterprises as affected the general welfare. In 1887 the Richmond and Danville Railroad alone offered an outlet to the country surrounding Winston-Salem, and the necessity for a new and independent system of railroad, placing this section in touch with the outside world, was fully recognized. The citizens along the line projected a road from Roanoke, Virginia, across the Blue Ridge Mountains to Winston-Salem, and, at the earnest appeal of his fellow-citizens, Colonel Fries accepted the responsible charge of financing and building this road, a task approaching in difficulties and hazard the famous engineering feat over Swannanoa Gap. Although only thirty-two years of age, he shouldered this burden and assumed control of the enterprise. In its very inception were found difficulties and obstacles little contemplated by any, and so doubtful seemed the result and so strong the demands on him for the accomplishment of this under-

taking that he withdrew from all other business and entered with forceful energy and spirit into the absorbing task. This road was 126 miles in length, undertaken by disconnected communities, diverse interests and inexperienced persons, with a capital of only \$40,000 subscribed; yet after four years of unceasing labor it was completed, at a cost of \$2,081,000. Colonel Fries followed its interests until it merged into the Norfolk and Western Railway Company, and it now forms one of the most lucrative branches of this great system, lending material aid in opening up a new and fruitful territory. He put his talent and reputation to the touch, and saw his triumph in the completion of the most valuable enterprise ever undertaken by private citizens in the Piedmont section, the completion and equipment of the Roanoke and Southern Railway.

Having accomplished the purpose sought in the construction of the road, he declined further connection with the railway service, and in 1893 projected the famous banking house and trust company known as the Wachovia Loan and Trust Company. This institution began business on the 15th of June, 1893, in the face of the fierce financial distress then foreshadowed, and which like a storm burst on the country the following month. The original capital of the company was \$200,000, and at the end of the tenth year, all the while paying regular dividends to its stockholders, it declared an extra dividend of fifty per cent., payable in stock or money, at the option of the stockholders, and strange as it may appear, no part of this issue was accepted in money, but the entire amount taken by those entitled in stock. Not only this: an increase of \$200,000 of extra capital was determined on at this time. All of this issue was taken by the stockholders under their charter privileges, and finally, in order to secure new stockholders for the company's contemplated branches, an additional increase of \$100,000 of stock was issued. Thus was evolved its present capital stock of \$600,000. The business of this institution is not confined to Winston-Salem. Within recent years branches have been established in Asheville, Salisbury, High Point and Spencer, and all are now vigorous and flourishing. The

statement of the Wachovia Loan and Trust Company of May 15, 1905, discloses a remarkable condition, as follows:

| | |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| Capital stock..... | \$600,000 00 |
| Undivided profits..... | 72,142 70 |
| Deposits | 3,510,574 25 |
| Total | <u>\$4,182,716 95</u> |

It is no disparagement to those who aided in the establishment of this great company to say that to the ability and energies of Colonel Fries alone is due its unwonted success, and in the community where this work was done the fact is known of all men; those nearest the work are the first to give him the honor which belongs rightfully to him. If the life work of any ordinary man could be represented by this one achievement, it would be a life worth living, and well might its author stop as one who has borne his part; yet the vigorous mind which merits the praise of this work is not satisfied to be quiescent even when the work before him seems in its full accomplishment. When the task undertaken is done, there opens to him new lines demanding renewed energies. His interest in banking institutions does not end with his connection with the Wachovia Loan and Trust Company. At this time Colonel Fries is president of the Washington Banking and Trust Company of Fries, Virginia, and a director of the Wachovia National Bank of Winston-Salem, North Carolina. These three institutions represent a capital and surplus of \$1,000,000 and assets of near \$4,500,000.

It would be strange indeed, and perhaps unfortunate, if any one as well equipped in the art of manufacturing cotton and woolen fabrics as Colonel Fries should forego entirely putting his knowledge to account, and, as would be expected of one whose early manhood was spent in any particular line of labor, he is still interested in such enterprises, and, with the exception of a few years, has been active in the construction and operation of cotton factories. In the year 1896, together with a few associates, he established on the Mayo River, in Rockingham County, the town

of Mayodan, a beautiful village on the Roanoke and Southern Railway. Here, in 1896, he led in the construction of the Mayo Mills, now operating 31,640 spindles. A mile or two above the site of the Mayo Mills, on Mayo River, in 1899, he developed an additional water-power, and, with his associates, constructed the Avalon Mills, now operating 18,120 spindles. At Fries, Virginia, in 1902, he projected a large and magnificent development known as the Washington Mills. He took the lead in this enterprise, obtaining large bodies of land on the waters of New River, in the counties of Grayson and Carroll, and there laid the foundation of one of the greatest cotton mill properties in the South. The town, now numbering over 2000 people, bears the name of Fries, given to it by his associates in honor of the subject of this sketch, and as a token of appreciation of his untiring efforts in their behalf. The development at Fries was made at a cost of nearly \$1,250,000, and includes a water-power unrivaled in natural advantage, and affording at present 6000 horse-power. These three efficient mills, representing a capital and surplus of \$3,000,000, were organized with Colonel Fries as president of each, and he now holds this executive office, daily engaged in its active duties. Among other cotton mills with which he is connected, Colonel Fries is at present director of the Arista Mills, Winston-Salem, North Carolina; Oakdale Mills, Jamestown, North Carolina, and Thistle Mills, Ilchester, Maryland. Some idea of the extent of the business interests of this one man in the manufacture of cotton alone can be obtained when we consider the consumption of cotton in mills controlled by him, tabulated as follows: One bale of cotton out of every 500 raised in the United States; one bale of cotton out of every 150 used in America; one bale of cotton out of every seventy-five used in the South.

During all these years of business activity, personally filling important offices in banks, cotton mills and other institutions, Colonel Fries has given time to public affairs involving the interests of his associates or of those particular institutions with which he is connected. He has shown much interest in the North Carolina State Bankers' Association, has regularly attended its meet-

ings and aided in perfecting this organization, being elected its president in 1904. At a meeting of this association held in 1905, in his home town of Winston-Salem, Colonel Fries delivered an address of especial merit. It was spoken of by those in attendance from within and without the State as a strong presentation of the work and duties of this important body of financiers. In the affairs of the American Bankers' Association he has actively participated as a member of the Executive Council, and is at present a member of the Executive Council of the trust company section of this association, doing work of national value. He has in this connection prepared and read many valuable papers noted in the American journals of finance, but perhaps the address delivered in New York at a meeting of this section of the National Bankers' Association, on September 15, 1904, received more comment from the general press of the country; and certainly no address from any source in regard to trust companies and their legitimate duties and obligations has received more favorable comment. Two extracts from this address are embodied in this sketch for the purpose of giving some idea not only of the author's literary style, but as evidence of the strong thought and intelligent reasoning which he gives this most important branch of finance, now receiving national consideration. In speaking of the present status of trust companies Mr. Fries says:

"The growth of the trust company business is slow and sometimes very discouraging, and there comes to not a few the necessity for some means of support. This fact, and the temptation to obtain profits, cause the management to take up whatever presents the surest and quickest returns consistent with the charter. It may be, and it most frequently is, banking in its various forms. Again, the buying and selling of real estate, the dealing in stocks and bonds, or the promotion of some enterprise, and thus the trust company becomes in reality a bank of discount, a real estate company, a broker's office or something else. The name of the company and the chartered privileges in some cases indicate that the company was designed for other lines of business, and should never have been named a trust company at all. It is called a real estate and trust company and does a land company business, or an insurance and trust company and does an insurance business, or a banking and trust company and does a

banking business, or a fidelity and trust company and does a bonding business. Besides this, we find that not a few State banks have been chartered with trust company privileges, and that some are seeking to do a business peculiar to the trust company."

Later in the address, the speaker, in warning the public as to the legitimate essentials of this institution, concludes :

"The trust company was conceived and organized to take the place of individuals in those fiduciary relations enumerated as executor, administrator, guardian, trustee, assignee, committee or agent ; it will be observed that each and every one of these are positions of trust that are given or bestowed upon trust companies, and are created either by an individual, a corporation or a court of equity ; that the duties incident to these positions compel the trust company to labor for and on behalf of persons or corporations outside of the company itself ; and that the character of the position is such that the utmost good faith is required, and nothing inconsistent with the duties assumed or adverse to the interests involved would appear permissible. Broadly speaking, the trust company acts for others and not for itself. It serves the interest it represents, and gets its compensation for the services rendered. To engage, therefore, in a business incompatible with these relations would seem to be foreign to the purposes for which it was intended."

Much more extensive quotations from the addresses of Colonel Fries could be given here, but the writer feels constrained by limit of space to omit much which would be of interest and value, and is content to submit the above citations, which he hopes will serve the purpose intended.

During these years of constant occupation this active life has spent its share under the sheltering influence of home. In 1881 he married Letitia Walker Patterson, daughter of the Hon. Rufus L. Patterson and granddaughter of Governor John M. Morehead. She, together with an only daughter, died in 1884. In 1886 he was married to Anna de Schweinitz, daughter of Bishop E. A. de Schweinitz, and this gracious and accomplished lady, and one daughter, now compose his household. Colonel Fries followed the faith of his fathers, and in youth became a member of the Moravian Church of Salem, North Carolina. He has taught in the Home Sunday-school since 1874, and has been its superin-

tendent since 1885. He is now a member of the Board of Elders of the Home Moravian Church, having served in this office since 1885. This long service in church work had its effect on a mind of strong convictions and of high moral tendency. He has "the full faith and not the lurking doubt," and no man carries with him in the devious paths of active business life his religious faith, and that so surely and yet unostentatiously, as Francis Henry Fries. In private life Colonel Fries is just what would be expected of such a man so surrounded and circumstanced. The love of home is shown in his stately residence, surrounded by ample gardens and park, bearing every evidence of a calm assurance of wealth, refined by good taste and judgment. In appearance he presents the logic of blood and environment—tall, fair haired, blue eyed, quick in motion and calm at rest, of distinguished figure and features, wherein strong lineaments predominate. While barely past the fiftieth mile post, his face gives the expression of his life. Thought and determination are in well-marked lines, as if in the battle of life work and labor had been master; yet in time of social relaxation nature asserts its sway, and the grace of character born with him assumes control; the tender light of kindness takes the place of the stern glance of the man of affairs.

He is not prodigal of the wealth he has acquired, and has none of the ways of the spendthrift, yet knows an object of his bounty, and lends his aid to hundreds. He seeks no notoriety in doing good deeds, but rather holds to that rule of golden charity, "Let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth." In this character there is no bluster, no effort, no fulsome expression either of thought or manner, but in all things simple—the simplicity of the man of brains. Of his abilities and mental make-up nothing need be said. It is best described in the work accomplished, in the achievements which speak the power that wrought so much and so well. If there is any particular characteristic uppermost, and one which would strike the ordinary observer, it would be that of quiet repose, and a critical mind, after years of observation, would be sure to say of this man that his chiefest attribute is *sagacity*. He is clear in his own view of matters and positive in demand of

his rights, yet in council respectful of the opinions of others. He is a good listener, yet speaks well when occasion requires. He has great capacity for labor and the keenest appreciation of the true measure of those who labor with him. These characteristics are clearly evidenced in his every-day actions and excite no special wonder, but the genius of the man lies in his keen dissection of the best counsel of others, in his clear comprehension of that which is wisest and of practical accomplishment. In this he is pre-eminent, and, with a mind developed to such perfection, it becomes that something, indefinable in words, which makes its possessor as one above his fellows and which, for want of a better name, we call common sense, probably because it is so rarely bestowed on any of the children of men.

It is difficult to speak the last word in drawing the character of a man when that man is still in full vigor, striving toward the accomplishment of greater things. Especially is it so when one daily sees his grasp of the present and his hold upon work that is to be done to-morrow. When, in this year, it became evident that a railroad line from Winston-Salem to Charleston, South Carolina, crossing the Norfolk and Western, the Southern, the Atlantic Coast Line and the Seaboard Air Line within a distance of a hundred miles would be of great advantage to this community, Colonel Fries began the gigantic undertaking. An organization for this purpose is now under his management, known as the Winston-Salem Southbound Railway Company. Subscriptions in excess of \$300,000 have been obtained from communities along its route, surveyors are mapping out the line, rights-of-way have been secured, and this undertaking, fraught with so much of value to the transportation facilities of Central North Carolina, seems, under the inspiration of his touch, now assured.

The tower of strength still stands, and the splendid achievements of this remarkable man may be but forerunners of greater achievements yet to come.

Clement Manly.

contact with her, was mercifully spared him, and faithfully she did her part. Few men have equaled her in ability and in strength of character.

"None knew her but to love her,
None named her but to praise."

A devoted uncle, H. W. Fries, and an elder brother, J. W. Fries, supplied, so far as they could, the father's place, and were ever ready with counsel, advice and help.

In the Salem Boys' School, which has been the inspiration for many a good and noble man through all these years, young Henry Fries spent many a happy hour in careful and thorough preparation for his college days and for his life beyond. The hours outside were spent at home, around the cotton and woollen mills the family owned and in the shops. The use of tools, the timbers of his native State and the quality of work were learned. All this he loved. He studied, too, the workmen as they toiled, with little thought that in the coming years all this would have its value and weight in leading men.

When seventeen, he went to Davidson College. His uncle's parting words, "Never do a thing to cause regret or shame," lingered in his ears and spoke to him of honesty, industry, morality, temperance, economy and a consistent striving for all in life that is highest, truest, noblest and best. At Davidson he remained but three short years, being reluctantly forced to rest his eyes and thus cut short his college days. But he lost no time in repining, in idleness, in waiting. As manager of the Wachovia Flouring Mills, owned by the firm of F. & H. Fries, he began at once his active work, and continued as the head of this successful enterprise for more than a score of years. Near Salem had been established a Sunday-school, and with energy and zeal he took up the work as its superintendent, and he is its superintendent still. In 1878 came an additional opportunity for study, culture and general development. An extended European trip with all its advantages was not only greatly enjoyed, but used to best advantage.

In 1881 Mr. Fries was happily married to Miss Rosa Mickey of Salem, whom he had known from childhood. Her hearty cooperation and tender interest in all that he has done and is doing has proved a source of unbounded inspiration, encouragement and help. They have one child, a daughter.

The great State Exposition, which marked that new era in Carolina's industrial life, was held in the year 1884. Mr. Fries was chosen secretary, and to his ability and intelligent effort was largely due the great success which crowned the work. In 1886 he was chosen a member of the celebrated Board of Education which built new, convenient and improved schoolhouses throughout Forsyth County, which were an object lesson to the other counties of the State.

The next year he represented Forsyth County in the General Assembly, and was chosen one of the trustees of the Agricultural and Mechanical College in Raleigh, which position he held for ten years. He was also appointed on the special committee, with Dr. Charles W. Dabney and W. S. Primrose as associates, to visit the industrial schools of other States and report on same. This report was a careful, thorough and painstaking one, and was the basis for the establishment of the State Agricultural and Mechanical College. While the State was thus claiming service, his native city elected him mayor for three consecutive terms, and he has been a member of every Board of Commissioners continuously since that time. He organized the Southside Manufacturing Company in 1885 for the manufacture of cotton products, constructed a large mill and was chosen president. For some years Mr. Fries had been deeply interested in electrical development, and he and his uncle had often discussed the question of the transmission of power from the Yadkin River. The result of these discussions was that in 1897 the factories of Winston-Salem were using electricity as motive power, and the Fries Manufacturing and Power Company, of which Mr. H. E. Fries was superintendent and manager, was known far and near as the first electrical transmission plant established in North Carolina. Later, the entire electrical interests of Winston-Salem, including the street rail-

ways, public and private lighting, transmission of power, etc., were consolidated, and Mr. Fries was elected president of the corporation, which he has managed with eminent credit and success. Notwithstanding the fact that these large operations have demanded much time and study and careful thought, Mr. Fries has been a most potent factor in the general industrial and material upbuilding and development of Winston-Salem and of this section of the State. In the Chamber of Commerce he has always been a leading spirit. New enterprises and industries have ever received his hearty encouragement and his valuable assistance. In all matters connected with the affairs of the State, county and city he has been and is a leader. The historic old college in Salem has no better friend. The schools of the county feel his interest and support. In charitable work and church work he always takes the very greatest interest and delight, and his hands seem always full. People instinctively and naturally turn to him. He is a good "mixer" and understands the people. He frequently repeats these lines and constantly lives up to their teaching :

"Are you almost disgusted
With life, little man?
I will tell you a wonderful trick
That will bring you contentment
If anything can:
Do something for somebody quick!
Do something for somebody quick!"

In politics Mr. Fries has always been a sound-money Democrat. When Mr. Bryan was nominated for the Presidency, he could not follow his free silver and Populistic ideas, and not only refused to support him, but attended the Indianapolis convention as a delegate, and subsequently became national committeeman from North Carolina of the National Democratic Party.

At this time Mr. Fries is president of the Fries Manufacturing and Power Company, president of the Forsyth Manufacturing Company, vice-president of the Arista Mills Company, director

of many financial and manufacturing corporations, president of the Board of Trustees of the Slater Industrial and State Normal School, member of the North Carolina Geological Board, member of the Wachovia Historical Society, Men's League of Salem, North Carolina; Reform Club, New York, and many other organizations.

W. A. Blair.



of weather, sleeping in an open house at night, he became inured to hardships, that strengthened his constitution and laid the foundation for strong physical manhood. Always temperate in his habits and careful of his health, he now leads an active, vigorous life at the age of seventy-two.

His early opportunities for education were indeed limited. The common school system, to which only he had access, allowed a three months' session, after crops had been "laid by." This did not satisfy the ambition of the boy. As one thirsts for cool water in the heat of the day, so he longed for an education to broaden his field of vision. He read all the books he could obtain by the light of a pine knot in the dead of the night while the rest of the family were asleep, and thus endeavored to improve his opportunities. His ambition did not meet the entire endorsement of his father, who desired him to be a farmer, and believed that "to read, write and cipher" was a sufficient amount of knowledge for agricultural pursuits.

By an accident, serious though it seemed at the time, yet a blessing in disguise, his daily routine of labor was interrupted suddenly, and the long-desired opportunity to satisfy his ambition for an education was afforded.

Just after passing his twentieth birthday, while helping to "clear a new ground," he cut off part of his left ankle bone, causing a painful wound. For about three months he was unable to do his regular work. When sufficiently recovered to travel, he went to Shelby, the county seat, and there underwent an examination for the position of teacher in the common schools. This examination was before a committee composed of John W. Stacy, Dr. J. W. T. Miller and others.

On the following Saturday, when the young man was cradling wheat in the field and his father was attending the regular Saturday religious meeting, the latter was met by the Examining Committee and requested to allow his son to attend school. Under the custom of the times the son must labor for the father until the age of twenty-one, after which time he could work for himself. Knowing this custom, the committee were desirous of

obtaining a release for the unexpired term, in order that educational advantages might be offered to one so desirous of learning. The father agreed to the release as to time, but as to means, neither money, clothing nor books would be supplied by him, was the answer the committee received. Their reply was that the release of time was all they asked, the other means would be provided.

Returning home in the afternoon from the religious service, the announcement was made by father to son of the visit and request of the committee. Suddenly to the mind of the young man were opened the prospects and ideals of youth's ambition, laden with rich harvests of knowledge. The Guiding Hand was shaping the destiny and changing the current of his life to broader fields of labor.

Assuring his father that neither by debt nor other embarrassments would his family be troubled, this lad of twenty, with little clothing, no books and less than a dollar in money, left his father's house the following day to seek an education, at an age in life when the average young man of the present time is completing his college course. Nothing daunted by the obstacles in his path, he borrowed money to pay for board, tuition, clothing and books, always finding friends to lend him necessary funds.

After attending school about one year in Shelby, North Carolina, he read law in the office of A. W. Burton, Esq., of that place, then the solicitor of the mountain district, and about 1856 obtained the County and Superior Court licenses at Morganton, North Carolina, to practice law. He began the practice of his profession at Shelby the same year, in partnership with his preceptor. Not finding the practice congenial to his taste and convictions, he soon abandoned that vocation and decided to enter the field of the Gospel ministry.

With little money, and owing for almost all the education he had received, he went to Greenville, South Carolina, and entered Furman University. He remained there a few years, and afterward went to the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary for a short term. During these years the lack of money embarrassed

him greatly and was a source of much annoyance and anxiety. He often thought of the advantages young men possessed who had the means to give them the ordinary comforts without being perplexed with the question of paying board bills. Notwithstanding these difficulties, he took a high stand in his classes, and passed through college with honor, though the opening of the war of 1861-65 forced him to leave.

But it was when he left school that his debt rose as an appalling obstacle, a dark mountain before him, and oppressed him greatly. It had grown to something over \$2000. Then, to add to the discomfort of the situation, the cloud of war settled over the country, and at a time he had expected to repay the money he borrowed he was gathered in the vortex of the Civil War. No one unhampered by poverty nor anxious for education can know the conflicts and difficulties of one thus situated. No one ever embarrassed by debt can know the pleasure to one long thus burdened in being freed from such a monster, who holds his subjects in servitude. Surely, one who does not make many debts and who pays promptly is a wise man.

Before the war ended a friend made him a gift of \$5000 in Confederate money, which he carried to his creditors, offering to pay his debts on terms agreeable to them. Some settled dollar for dollar, others on a basis of five to one; one man, a member of the Confederate Congress, refused to accept this money, saying he preferred to hold the note. After the war was over, during the struggle of Reconstruction days, in an impoverished land, he and his good wife worked together and paid the debt in full.

The hand of war fell heavily upon his father's family. His four brothers went to the front, and joined the army of Northern Virginia, his brothers as privates and he as colporter and hospital nurse. One of his brothers fell in battle, fighting for the cause of the Confederacy; another sickened and died just after the seven days' fight near Richmond, Virginia. He himself was left ill with fever during the evacuation of Fredericksburg. A friend furnished a horse and buggy, and, gaining the Confederate lines, he

finally sufficiently recovered from his sickness to return to North Carolina.

Following his chosen work of the Gospel ministry, he accepted the charge of a church in Goldsboro, North Carolina, and while there met Miss Julia Pipkin, to whom he was happily married in 1863. Her father, though a man of considerable means prior to the war, had suffered from its reverses, and, like her husband, she was financially poor, but economical and industrious, possessing the noblest of womanly virtues, and through all the years gladly did her part and was a helpmate in all his undertakings. A large family has blessed the union, and she lives to-day devotedly loved by her companion in life and their seven children, all of whom have grown to be men and women.

About the end of the Civil War a deep conviction seized this man, confronting him with a sinful nature and therefore a sinful life. The justice of God in his condemnation, showing him he sinned in Adam, and therefore death, passed upon him in Adam's disobedience, so overwhelmed him in confusion that he despaired of mercy and felt that he was lost. This wrought in him an abiding consciousness of the sinfulness of man. In this view he saw and felt the justice of God in his condemnation. In that dark hour the Lord Jesus, the Saviour of sinners, appeared as his righteousness, fully justifying him with the words, sounding out as audibly to him as if spoken aloud: "If God give you Christ, how shall he not with him also freely give you all things?" This caused a great change in his views and conduct. From that time he preached Christ Jesus as the only name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved. The predestination of God appeared appointing beforehand what He purposed should come to pass, and the electing love of God choosing beforehand, and without regard to man's works, the people he loved in Christ Jesus, and giving them grace in Him.

He sought for a people that loved and believed that doctrine, discarding all free agency of man, and rejecting all self-appointed means and measures of man's devising. This people he found, known as the Primitive Baptists, and was received among them

in 1870, since which time he has been preaching among them, desiring to know nothing among men but Jesus Christ and Him crucified, and aims to exalt Him as Lord of all. This he desires to be the crowning glory of his life, as both by speech and pen he labors to set Him forth.

He considers that a man should be industrious, and labor to build his section and further useful enterprises. But the labor he would perform in preference to all other kinds is to establish the truth in Christ Jesus, in an humble walk and godly conversation; but he laments his failure to do this as he should. Life to him is the development of that which is wrought within by the grace of God.

As a preacher he was studious, and sought constantly to improve himself, and being a man of high purpose and sterling worth, with an agreeable address and pleasing manners, he soon attained an eminent position among his religious brethren, and exerted a strong influence over them. Always fond of reading from his youth, and possessing a strong, logical mind, he was benefited by his close study, and his opinions have been clear and well defined, and his principles are founded on his religion and exemplified in his daily life.

In 1871 he became editor of the *Zion's Landmark* at Wilson, a semi-monthly paper, that soon attained a large circulation among his denominational friends not only in North Carolina, but in other States as well, and for thirty-seven years it has been an important and influential paper among the Baptists. He considers the pen wielded in the cause of truth a potent factor in forming and directing public sentiment. Mr. Gold's editorial career, extending over such a large period, in which it has continued to grow yearly in the esteem of his patrons and friends, attests the excellence of his character, his unerring judgment and the spirit of charity and moderation that commend him to the favor of his readers. He has constantly grown in the respect of all who know him, and his personal worth, no less than his agreeable bearing and fine intelligence, attract the regard of those brought into contact with him. The book of books with him is the Holy Bible, which he studies

with zeal and great earnestness. His professional work engages him closely, but when not otherwise occupied, he employs himself in some kind of manual labor, for he considers that bodily labor is not only proper in itself, but is the best kind of exercise for an editor or a professional man to take, since it tends to keep both the mind and the body in a healthy condition.

In the course of his editorial career Elder Gold has written a vast amount, but he has only made one publication outside of his professional work. This was a small religious book, being a treatise on the Book of Joshua, which gives evidence of much thought, learning and powers of analysis. Devoted to his calling, Elder Gold has not concerned himself to any great extent with secular matters, but his sympathies are with the people to whom he ministers, and he shares in their hopes and aspirations; and, along with the great bulk of his religious associates, he affiliates with the Democratic Party, however taking no active part in political matters.

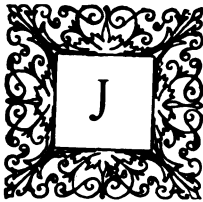
From his earliest recollection he always had a purpose to lead an active life and to be useful in his day and generation, and with resolution he has pushed on in that path, until he has attained a position reached by but few in the respect and confidence of his fellow-citizens; still, he says that his life has not been what he would desire.

Being asked for some suggestion that might contribute to strengthening ideals of American life, he says: "I would advise young people to be temperate, honest, industrious, have a good purpose and avoid making debts."

S. A. Ashe.



JOHN HAYWOOD



JOHN HAYWOOD, first of his name in North Carolina, resided at the mouth of Conoconarie Creek, in a part of the colonial county of Edgecombe, but now embraced within the limits of Halifax County, Enfield being the then county seat. Though public service occupied much of his time, the regular profession which he followed was that of a surveyor or civil engineer. In this capacity he was employed for twenty years or more on the vast domain of the Earl of Granville. This nobleman, it will be remembered, was the only one of the Lords Proprietors of North Carolina who retained his landed holdings in the colony when the other Proprietors sold their interests to the Crown in 1729. Many of the old land grants issued by Lord Granville to the colonists still exist, and are usually countersigned by Mr. Haywood as surveyor.

In the year 1746 John Haywood made his appearance as Edgecombe County's representative in the Colonial Assembly of North Carolina, and served till 1752. The journals of these legislative sessions show that he was the originator of many important measures and a diligent worker on various committees. On June 18, 1746, he introduced a bill to establish the county of Granville out of a part of Edgecombe, and this was duly passed at that session. The same act provided for the establishment of St. John's Parish in Granville County, and twelve years later the parish was subdivided, the new one being called Granville Parish.

Of the first parish in Edgecombe County, known as Edgecombe Parish, Colonel Haywood was one of the vestrymen and also church warden. Edgecombe County was divided into two parishes, Edgecombe and St. Mary's, in 1756; and when Halifax County was established, in 1758, St. Mary's Parish was thrown into Halifax.

In 1748, during the administration of Governor Gabriel Johnston, war with Spain being imminent, the authorities of North Carolina began to realize the necessity of a system of fortifications on the coast of the colony. The defenseless state of these ports had rendered English and colonial merchantmen an easy prey to French and Spanish privateers, and these had often seized prizes in the harbors of the colony, besides committing other acts of violence. When the Colonial Assembly met at its first session in the above year, an act was passed providing that paper currency, or bills of credit, should be issued to erect fortresses at Ocracoke Inlet, Old Topsail Inlet, Bear Inlet and the mouth of Cape Fear River. To aid in carrying out the provisions of this act, Colonel Haywood was appointed one of the commissioners of coast fortifications, and by his knowledge of civil engineering was enabled to aid materially in the work. The bills of credit issued for the erection of these forts were safeguarded against counterfeiting by a somewhat severe provision in the thirteenth section of the act, setting forth that for the first offense a person should be given forty lashes, stand in the pillory for two hours, have his ears nailed to the pillory and then cropped off; as a penalty for the second crime, offender should suffer death without benefit of the clergy. Counterfeiting was a capital felony in North Carolina until after the Revolution.

In colonial days the northern and southern sections of North Carolina were so inaccessible to each other that it became necessary to have a public treasurer for each division. By Chapter 3 of the Laws of 1752 Colonel Haywood was made treasurer of the northern counties of the province, this division including the counties of Currituck, Pasquotank, Perquimans, Chowan, Tyrrell, Bertie, Edgecombe, Northampton and Granville, and he retained

this office until 1754, when he became commanding officer of the Provincial troops of North Carolina in the county of Edgecombe. In a return made to Governor Arthur Dobbs in 1754, he reported that there were under his command fourteen companies and upward of 1300 officers and men. A new muster, he said, might show an increase of 200.

Colonel Haywood married Mary Lovett and was the father of seven children, as follows: William Haywood, a colonel in the Revolution, who married Charity Hare—of him a sketch is elsewhere given; Sherwood Haywood, a lieutenant-colonel in the Revolution, who married Hannah Gray, and had an only child, Adam John Haywood, whose sole issue, a daughter, was the second wife of Louis D. Henry, elsewhere mentioned in this work; Egbert Haywood, a major in the Revolution, who married Sarah Ware, and will be mentioned elsewhere in the sketch of his son, Judge John Haywood; John Haywood, who died unmarried, in 1758; Mary Haywood, who was the wife of the Rev. Thomas Burges, and left descendants; Elizabeth Haywood, who married Jesse Hare, and left descendants; Deborah Haywood, who married John Hardy, but left no issue.

Colonel John Haywood, to whom this sketch relates, died in 1758. Shortly after he was interred a mob visited his grave, dug up the body for inspection, and then buried it again. When news of this remarkable occurrence and other disorders reached the Colonial Assembly, that body appointed a committee "to consider of the distressed state of the province." This committee reported a resolution (which was duly adopted by the Assembly) censuring Governor Dobbs because he would take no steps to "suppress the several mobs and insurrections which for many months, in open violation of all law, had with impunity assembled in great numbers in the different counties, erected sham jurisdictions and restrained men of their liberty, broken open gaols, released malefactors, dug up the dead from the grave and committed other acts of rapine and violence." The resolution also went on to ask that steps be taken to "check the torrent of their licentious extravagancies." In reply to this charge (or "pompous resolve," as he called it),

Governor Dobbs said that neither he nor the members of his Council had been the cause of the disturbances, nor negligent in suppressing them; that the troubles in question had been wholly confined to Lord Granville's domain; that Colonel Haywood and his sons, acting under Francis Corbin (Lord Granville's chief agent), had been guilty of charging exorbitant fees on surveys made by them; that Corbin, against whom the greater accusations were made, had been put on trial, and during his trial Colonel Haywood had returned from a journey, died and been buried; that the mob (composed of Lord Granville's tenants) had thought it a ruse on Haywood's part to escape prosecution, and hence had gone to see if he was really dead; on finding that he was, they had dispersed, and "this was the whole riot of digging up graves."

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.





WILLIAM HAYWOOD



WILLIAM HAYWOOD of the county of Edgecombe was a son of Colonel John Haywood, the above colonist, and his wife, Mary Lovett.

William Haywood's first appearance in public life was in 1760, two years after his father's death. He represented Edgecombe County in a session of the Provincial Assembly at New-Bern in the year just mentioned. From that time until his death, nineteen years later, there was scarcely ever a meeting of the Assembly, either before or during the Revolution, that he did not attend. It was in 1765 that he became colonel of the Provincial forces of North Carolina, in the county of Edgecombe.

When the Revolution came on, Colonel Haywood sided with the American colonies, and the Provincial Congress of North Carolina, which met at Hillsboro in August, 1775, did not fail to avail themselves of his services. The legislative body just mentioned continued its sittings until the 10th of September, and on the day prior to adjournment elected Colonel Haywood a member of the Committee of Safety for the district of Halifax, of which Edgecombe County formed a part. On the same day (September 9th) Haywood was re-elected to the military rank he had held before the war—colonel of North Carolina for the county of Edgecombe. At the same time his brother, Sherwood Haywood, was elected lieutenant-colonel of the Edgecombe regiment,

and his only other brother then living, Egbert Haywood, was elected major of the Halifax regiment. Lieutenant-Colonel Sherwood Haywood, above mentioned, should not be confused with a son of Colonel William Haywood, who also bore the name Sherwood, and was one of the earliest settlers in Raleigh. William Haywood retained his rank as colonel until April 22, 1776, when he was succeeded by Exum Lewis.

Colonel Haywood represented Edgecombe County in the Provincial Congress of North Carolina which met at the town of Halifax in April, 1776. In this body he served on several important committees, among them being the committee to settle military and naval accounts, the committee to draft a temporary constitution and the committee to sign paper currency. In the Provincial Congress which met at Halifax in November, 1776, and continued its session until the 23d of the following month, Colonel Haywood again appeared as Edgecombe's representative, and his brother, Major Egbert Haywood, was a member from the county of Halifax, the latter succeeding James Hogun (afterward brigadier-general), who resigned as delegate in order to enter the army. In the Congress last named Colonel Haywood was even more in demand as a committee worker than he had been in the first. He was a member of the Committee on Military Affairs, the Committee on Privileges and Elections (of which he was chairman), the committee to draft a permanent State constitution and bill of rights, the committee to devise means of procuring salt for the colony, the committee to expedite the raising of a force of 5000 militia for the aid of South Carolina, etc.

By an ordinance of the above Congress, adopted on December 20, 1776, Colonel Haywood was elected a member of the Governor's Council, and he was re-elected for several terms, until August 14, 1778, when a successor was elected in consequence of his declining to serve longer. While a member of the Council, Colonel Haywood was a faithful attendant at its meetings, as shown by Governor Caswell's letters, in one of which (July 26, 1777) he complains to Colonel Edward Starkey that when last

the Council was ordered to assemble, "Colonel Bonner and Colonel Haywood only attended, waited three days, and then returned to their homes."

The above-mentioned Congress, by an ordinance adopted on December 23d, elected Colonel Haywood a justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions for the county of Edgecombe, and by the same authority his two brothers were honored with like commissions in their respective counties.

In 1779 there were several sessions of the General Assembly of North Carolina. In the one which met at Smithfield, in Johnston County, on May 3d, Colonel Haywood appeared as a member of the House of Commons, and was chairman of the joint committee of both Houses to select bills of a public nature, the immediate passage of which might be deemed necessary. He also served on several committees to consider petitions of prisoners of war, etc. The Smithfield Assembly adjourned its session and met at Halifax on the 18th of October of the same year. Colonel Haywood attended that session also, and acted as chairman of the Committee on Privileges and Elections. The sittings of this Assembly were continued into November, when Colonel Haywood's labors were interrupted by sickness, and he died before the session adjourned.

In March, 1754, Colonel Haywood married Charity Hare, daughter of Moses Hare of Hertford County and a granddaughter of William Speight of Nansemond County, Virginia. By this marriage he left nine children. His four sons were as follows:

John Haywood (born 1755, died 1827), forty years State treasurer, and the first mayor of Raleigh, for whom Haywood County and the town of Haywood, in North Carolina, are named. His first wife, Sarah Leigh, died without issue, but he left numerous descendants by his second wife, Eliza Eagles Asup Williams.

Sherwood Haywood of Raleigh (born 1762, died 1829), banker and United States commissioner of loans, who married Eleanor Howard Hawkins and left many descendants. In recording his death (October 5, 1829), the Raleigh *Register* said of Mr. Haywood: "Years may roll away before we see united in the same

person so many virtues, so much urbanity and kindness, such unsophisticated manners and such sterling integrity."

William Henry Haywood of Raleigh (born 1770, died 1857), banker and clerk of the United States District Court, who married Ann Shepard and had three children, his only son being United States Senator William H. Haywood, Jr., and his two daughters marrying, respectively, Governors Edward B. Dudley and Charles Manly.

Stephen Haywood of Raleigh (born 1772, died 1824), planter, State senator, etc., who married first Elizabeth Lane, second Delia Hawkins, by both of whom he left descendants, but none now survive who bear his surname.

The above four brothers removed from Edgecombe County and made their homes in Raleigh about the time of the foundation of the city. In addition to these sons Colonel William Haywood of Edgecombe left five daughters, as follows: Elizabeth, who married Captain Henry Irwin Toole of Edgecombe, a veteran of the Revolution; Mary Haywood, who married Ethelred Ruffin of Edgecombe County; Ann, who married Dr. Robert Williams of Pitt County, formerly a surgeon in the Revolution; Jemima, who married Colonel John Whitfield of Lenoir County; and Charity, who married Colonel Josiah Lawrence of Pitt County, but removed to Alabama after the death of her husband.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.





JOSEPH HEWES



WHEN young James Iredell was, in 1768, leaving England to make his home in North Carolina, his relative, Henry E. McCulloch, who had lived some years earlier in North Carolina, advised him to "particularly cultivate the notice of Mr. Hewes." Some years later, Mr. Iredell, writing to his father, said:

"There is a gentleman in this town who is a very particular favorite of mine, as indeed he is of everybody, for he is one of the best and most agreeable men in the world. His name is Hewes. He is a merchant here, and our member for the town; the patron and greatest honor of it. About six or seven years ago he was within a very few days of being married to one of Mr. Johnston's sisters, who died rather suddenly, and this unhappy circumstance for a long time embittered every satisfaction in life to him. He has continued ever since unmarried. His connection with Mr. Johnston's family is just such as if he had been really a brother-in-law."

This public-spirited citizen of Edenton, Joseph Hewes, was then about forty years of age. His father, Adam Hewes, was a Quaker living in Connecticut, where he married about 1728, and because of religious persecution, about that time proposed to remove to New Jersey; on their journey they were attacked by Indians, and Mrs. Hewes was wounded by them. Mr. Hewes located on a small farm at Kingston, near Princeton, and there Joseph Hewes was born in the year 1730. He was educated at the school in Princeton, and at the close of his studies he was apprenticed to a mer-

chant in Philadelphia to qualify him for commercial life. On the termination of his apprenticeship his father furnished him with a little money, and he entered into mercantile business on his own account, which he pursued with such skill and success that in a few years he amassed an ample fortune. At the age of twenty-six, in 1756, Mr. Hewes moved to Edenton, where he soon won for himself the esteem and respect of that elegant coterie of ladies and gentlemen who adorned that part of the province. He became engaged to be married to Miss Isabelle Johnston, and on her death continued the most intimate relations with Governor Johnston's family.

Governor Johnston had for many years represented Edenton in the Assembly, but at the election of 1766 he stood aside and became one of the representatives of Chowan County, yielding his place as representative of the town to Mr. Hewes, doubtless with the view of assuaging his sorrows by introducing him into public life. From that time onward Mr. Hewes became one of the principal men in managing the public affairs of the colony. He had entered into partnership with Robert Smith, and the firm had extensive connections in the mercantile world; they owned many ships and were prosperous merchants. Well educated, trained to a business which required a large amount of varied information, Mr. Hewes had a practical knowledge of affairs that easily placed him in the front rank of the important men of his day, while his social habits made him an interesting companion and drew to him the intimacy of Iredell, the Joneses and of all the first men of the Albemarle and Roanoke region. It may be mentioned in passing that his nephew, Nathan Allen, accompanied him to Edenton, and from him was descended Senator Allen of Ohio and Allen G. Thurman, also of Ohio. Mr. Hewes continued a member of the Assembly from 1766 until that body ceased to meet in 1775. At the Assembly of 1773, when a Committee of Correspondence was created, he was appointed one of its members. He was also a member of the First Provincial Congress, and made the report of the Committee of Correspondence to that body. This committee had virtually the direction of all matters relating to the

united efforts and purposes of the people of the different colonies, and by the Congress he was elected a delegate to the Continental Congress, and was constantly re-elected a delegate to the Continental Congress until 1777. In the meantime, however, he also served as a member of the Provincial Congresses, and from Philadelphia he communicated unremittingly to the leaders at home all news of importance, and was indeed the agent to supply North Carolina with everything needed to prepare her for the Revolution, and to equip her troops in the field.

Independence was not the design of the people at first, but only to secure and maintain their rights and liberties as British subjects.

Mr. Hewes attended the Continental Congress that met in September, 1774, and which in October adopted an association to be submitted and approved by the people of the different colonies.

On March 6, 1775, an association was formed at Wilmington and recommended to the committees of the adjacent counties, solemnly engaging by the most sacred ties of honor, virtue and love of our country to observe the association recommended by Congress; and at once troops were embodied in New Hanover and Brunswick counties. The same spirit was manifested elsewhere, especially after the people were inflamed by the battle of Lexington.

On May 31st the committee of Mecklenburg County adopted resolutions setting up an independent local government and also providing for the organization of troops. These resolutions were printed on the 16th of June in the Charleston paper and on the same day in the *North Carolina Gazette*, published at New-Bern. On the 18th of June Mr. Cogdell, the chairman of the committee at New-Bern, transmitted that paper to Samuel Johnston, writing him as follows:

“You will observe the Mecklenburg resolves exceed all other committees or the Congress itself. I send you the paper wherein thy are inserted.”

On the 27th of June Mr. Johnston wrote to Mr. Hewes, who was then in attendance on the Continental Congress:

"Tom Polk, too, is raising a very pretty spirit in the back country (see the newspapers). He has gone a little farther than I would choose to have gone, but perhaps no further than was necessary."

The proceedings at Mecklenburg were transmitted at once to the Continental Congress by the hand of Captain Jack, but at that time the action taken at Mecklenburg was thought premature. There was much diversity of sentiment in the Continental Congress, as there was among the people, and even the most resolute leaders deemed it inexpedient to take any step until the time was ripe for it.

Concerning this action at Mecklenburg, there are in the archives of the Moravian Church at Bethania, North Carolina, contemporaneous records of events written in German, one item of which, for the year 1775, being translated, is said to read as follows:

"I can't but remark, at the end of the 1775th year, during the summer of this year, that in the month of May or June the county of Mecklenburg in North Carolina, declared itself free and independent of England, and made such arrangements for the administration of justice, which proceeding the Continental Congress at this time considered premature; afterward, however, the Continental Congress later extended same over the whole country."

Although Congress considered the action of Mecklenburg premature, yet the North Carolina delegates were anxious for the province to make preparations for war. The British ministry had sought to detach North Carolina from the common cause by exempting her from certain trade restrictions, and otherwise showing her special favors. Hooper, Hewes and Caswell therefore, on the 19th of June, addressed a strong letter to the committees of the towns and counties warning the people against the British designs, and particularly urging them to form themselves into military companies. Although of Quaker extraction, and being wealthy, having much to lose in case of unsuccessful rebellion, on July 8, 1775, Hewes wrote: "I consider myself now over head and ears in what the ministry call rebellion. I feel no compunction for the part I have taken, nor for the number of our enemies

lately slain at the battle of Bunker Hill. I wish to be in camp before Boston, though I fear I shall not be able to get there till next campaign." A few days later, writing to his correspondent in Great Britain, he said: "We do not want to be independent; we want no revolution. But every American to a man is determined to die or be free." He urged that the English people should petition the government to restore the rights of America, and declared: "This country, without some such step is taken, and that soon, will be lost to the mother country." In the Continental Congress his large experience and fine business capacity placed him in the front rank of important members. Others were more brilliant and more forward in agitation, but few, if any, were more useful or exerted a stronger influence on the action of that body and upon the course of events than Mr. Hewes. He was one of the committee that reported the rights of the American colonies, the manner they had been violated and the proposed means of obtaining redress, this report being a lucid and elaborate document and a State paper of the first importance. Upon it all the subsequent proceedings of Congress and of the colonies were based. It constituted the association into which the people of America entered, its language being, "We do, for ourselves and the inhabitants of the several colonies whom we represent, firmly agree and associate under sacred ties of virtue, honor and love of country," to do the matters and things therein set forth. That was the first step toward separation and the establishment of the Union by the colonists. At the Hillsboro convention of 1775 Mr. Hewes went one step further, and submitted a draft of the proposed confederacy of the colonies, which virtually looked to perpetual union and to separation and independence unless, indeed, Great Britain should comply with conditions that could not have been expected of her. The Provincial Congress discussed those articles of confederation at great length, but finally resolved that "it was not expedient to form that confederacy; but that the present association should be relied on to bring about a reconciliation, and a further confederacy ought only to be adopted in case of the last necessity." A month later Hewes, writing from Phila-

delphia, says : "We have scarcely a dawn of hope that a reconciliation can take place." Up to that time Congress, indeed, had hopes of an amicable adjustment, and although they had put armies in the field for defense, they had not created a naval force to make war on the sea. But as hope of reconciliation vanished, Congress appointed a committee of three members, called the Committee of Marine, of which Mr. Hewes was the chairman, with a view of establishing a naval service. A little later that committee was increased so as to embrace one member from each colony, but Mr. Hewes remained at its head, and entered at once on the work of establishing a naval force. Virtually he was what has since been known as the secretary of the navy, a post for which he was admirably fitted by his capacity, his experience, his cool judgment and discriminating intelligence. The construction of new ships, their equipment, securing armaments for them and ammunition, and selecting and appointing the officers were all committed to him.

He was also a member of the "secret committee," which had information and matured plans which it was not expedient at once to make public even among the other members of the Congress. Not often participating in debate, he was always engaged in the details of the business committed to him, and in the absence of public funds he drew liberally on the resources of himself and of his firm. Indeed, his firm was the agent of Congress in North Carolina, through which he transacted a vast amount of important commercial business, and his vessels made large importations. In making a selection of officers for the naval service, it apparently fell to his lot to appoint John Paul Jones and to give him a command. In Jones's letters to Mr. Hewes at that time he mentions the favors that Mr. Hewes had done him and his reliance on Mr. Hewes's interest to advance his purposes and his fortunes, and there seems to have been an intimacy and friendship between these two distinguished characters that well illustrates the discernment and discriminating judgment of Mr. Hewes; and it also appears that Jones was appointed from North Carolina.

Knowing that Great Britain was going to make a great effort at the South in the spring of 1776, in February of that year Mr.

Hewes wrote to North Carolina urging every preparation to meet it. "We must not shrink from it; we ought not to show any symptoms of fear; the nearer it approaches and the greater the sound, the more fortitude and calm, steady firmness we ought to possess. Although the storm thickens, I feel myself quite composed. I have furnished myself with a good musket and bayonet, and when I can no longer be useful in council, I hope I shall be willing to take the field. I think I had rather fall there than be carried off by a lingering illness."

Events now rapidly progressed. Governor Martin's horrid plan of subjugation roused the patriots to fever heat. When the Provincial Congress met, April 4th, all were hot for independence, and on April 12, 1776, while Sir Peter Parker's fleet was in the Cape Fear River threatening to overrun North Carolina, that bold action was taken by the Provincial Congress, the first declaration made by any Provincial Congress or legislature for independence. Shortly afterward, when a resolution in favor of independence was introduced in the Continental Congress, there was much diversity of judgment among the delegates. John Adams says that "Hewes determined the action of Congress." In his representative capacity, and acting under instructions, Hewes had not been an early advocate of declaring independence. In his letter to Thomas Jefferson of June 22, 1819, Adams says: "You know that the unanimity of the States finally depended on the vote of Joseph Hewes, and was finally determined by him; and yet history is to ascribe the American Revolution to Thomas Paine. *Sat verbum sapienti.*"

And elsewhere Adams says: "One day, while a member was producing documents to show that the general opinion of all the colonies was for independence, among them North Carolina, Hewes, who had hitherto constantly voted against it, started suddenly upright, and lifting both hands to heaven, cried out, "It is done, and I will abide by it!" Adams adds: "I would give more for a perfect painting of the terror and horror upon the face of the old majority at that critical moment than for the best piece of Raphael."

It was indeed a matter of great concern. Up to that time the Revolutionists, having for their object only the maintenance of their rights as British subjects, had largely the sympathies of most of the people in the several colonies; but with independence declared, and no longer claiming a redress of grievances as subjects of Great Britain, the Revolutionists could not expect the same popular support; and, as a matter of fact, they took up the work of securing the establishment of a new nation, as it were, with at least one-half of the population unfavorable to that design. The change was momentous in its consequences, and it appears that it was made by the vote of Mr. Hewes, and when the Declaration was prepared, he signed it.

He continued at his work in Congress, and in supplying a naval force for Congress, while also largely supplying the needs of North Carolina, and in a measure directing events in North Carolina by recommendations and solicitations until his health broke down, and in September, 1776, he returned home. At that time his colleagues wrote extolling his labors at Philadelphia, saying: "From the large share of naval and mercantile business which has been allotted to his attention by Congress, his health has been much impaired. From 6 in the morning till 5 and sometimes 6 in the afternoon, without drinking or eating, he would be at work."

In August, 1775, Penn succeeded Caswell, resigned, as a delegate to the Continental Congress, and the Assembly, on April 28, 1777, elected as delegates Dr. Burke, Hooper and Penn. Hooper at once declined, and it was then proposed to re-elect Hewes. But he rejected the proposition, and Harnett was elected. Mr. Hewes, however, was a member of the House of Commons in 1778 and 1779. At that time he was, as he had been before, largely engaged in bringing in supplies from abroad by his own ships for the use of the Continental troops. Indeed, very large importations were made through North Carolina waters. The established route of transportation to the army was by water to South Quay, on the Nansemond River, and thence by wagon northward; and it was thus that Washington's army

at Valley Forge was relieved of their distress during the terrible winter of their encampment there.

In 1778 Dr. Burke resigned because of animadversions, the delegation elected being Penn, Harnett and John Williams, who was the speaker of the House. Mr. Williams, however, resigned in February, 1779, and the legislature having determined to increase the delegation, Joseph Hewes and William Sharpe were elected other delegates.

Mr. Hewes's health was still impaired, and disease had prostrated his physical powers. He continued to attend the House, however, when able to do so, until the 29th of October, when he left the hall for the last time. After an illness of some ten days, he expired on the 10th of November, 1779. His remains were buried in Christ Churchyard, Philadelphia, followed by the members and officers of Congress, the General Assembly and Council of Pennsylvania, the French Minister, the military and a large concourse of other persons who were anxious to pay their last respects to one whom they esteemed in life and whose memory they delighted to honor. His grave was next to that of Mr. Drayton.

In closing a sketch of his life in the "Sages and Heroes of the American Revolution," the author said: "His name is recorded on the Magna Charta of our liberty—his fame will live until the last vestige of American history shall be blotted from the world."

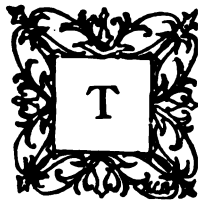
In his will, executed August 12, 1778, Mr. Hewes directs that his partnership Hewes & Smith, and his partnership Hewes, Allen & Smith, shall be closed up; and he makes bequests to his mother, Providence; his brother, Josiah Hewes of Philadelphia; his brother, Aaron Hewes of New Jersey; his sister, Sarah Allen; and sister, Mary Middleton; and nephew, Nathaniel Allen.

E. W. Sikes.

S. A. Ashe.



WHITMEL HILL



THOUGH a resident of Martin County, Whitmel Hill was a native of the county of Bertie. The date of his birth was February 12, 1743. He was a son of John Hill, who married Mrs. Martha Bate, *née* Whitmel, widow of Henry Lawrence Bate and daughter of Thomas Whitmel, who came to North Carolina from Surrey County, Virginia, in 1713. One of the paternal ancestors of Whitmel Hill was Isaac Hill, who was living in Bertie County prior to 1710.

It was in 1760 that Whitmel Hill graduated from the University of Pennsylvania, and shortly thereafter he returned to his native State. For many years, and at the time of his death, he lived at Hill's Ferry, in Martin County, this being near the Halifax boundary. The county of Martin, in which he resided, was erected out of the counties of Halifax and Tyrrell by Chapter 106 of the Laws of 1774, and was named for Josiah Martin, the last of the royal governors.

It was amid the Revolutionary turmoils of 1775 that Whitmel Hill first rose to prominence. He was then thirty-two years of age and in the prime of vigorous manhood. In August of that year a Provincial Congress met at Hillsboro, and he was one of the delegates chosen by the patriots of Martin to represent them in that body. This session continued for several weeks, and on the 9th of September the Congress elected Mr. Hill to the rank of

lieutenant-colonel in the Martin County regiment of North Carolina militia. At a later date, April 22, 1776, he became colonel of the same. On the 9th of September, 1775, he was elected a member of the Provincial Council, to which body was entrusted the government of the State when the Congress was not in session.

In the Provincial Congress of North Carolina which met at Halifax in April, 1776, Colonel Hill was also a delegate, and served on many important committees. He was also a delegate to the Provincial Congress at Halifax, which held its session in November and December, 1776. This body on December 23d elected him a justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions for the county of Martin. In the Congress last mentioned Colonel Hill also served on many committees, the most important being that which drafted the State constitution and Bill of Rights.

The first General Assembly which met after the adoption of the State constitution was in 1777, and Colonel Hill was a member of the House of Commons. Both during and after the war he was State senator from Martin County. In the Senate of 1778 he was unanimously chosen speaker, and later on in the same session he was elected (August 12th) to represent North Carolina in the Continental Congress of the United States, serving until 1781.

After the war Colonel Hill was a member of the State convention which met at Hillsboro on the 21st of July, 1788, and refused to adopt the Constitution of the United States, he himself being one of the minority which favored adoption, standing with Iredell and Davie, with whom he co-operated. In that convention he often spoke, always with vigor and an intelligent appreciation of the various questions discussed. But the current of feeling was that North Carolina ought to withhold her assent to the new government until certain important amendments were secured, and that course was pursued.

In 1790 Colonel Hill is shown by the census returns to have been the owner of 140 slaves. At that time there were only one or two men in the State who owned so many.

The death of Colonel Hill occurred at Hill's Ferry, in the county of Martin, on September 12, 1797. His wife was Winifred

Blount of Chowan County. By her he left four children—Joseph and John Hill, who both died young; Thomas Blount Hill; and Elizabeth, who married John Anthony of Philadelphia, and left numerous descendants.

Thomas Blount Hill, above mentioned as a son of Colonel Whitmel Hill, married Rebecca Norfleet, and from him sprang a numerous and worthy posterity, among whom was that most excellent gentleman, Judge Thomas Norfleet Hill, who died in the town of Halifax on July 24, 1904.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.



When sixteen years of age he left Hillsboro for a year, which he spent in Milton, North Carolina, and Danville, Virginia. At the latter place he made his first known attempt at newspaper writing. Following the example of Douglas Jerrold under like circumstances, his MSS. was presented anonymously under the printer's door, whence it came two days later part of the printed page. Probably no event of his life gave him greater pleasure. He spent the next year at Hillsboro clerking in a store and devoting his leisure to study and writing, and then went to Raleigh, his future home, with seven silver dollars in his pocket, and \$150 in debt for a gold watch and a broadcloth coat; from which we may infer he had become mindful of appearances, and that he had behaved himself well to have acquired such credit, when a word pleading infancy would have cancelled the debt. He was a stranger in Raleigh, but his writing had already attracted attention, and led to his employment by Mr. Lemay, editor of the *Star*. Mr. Lemay had gone to Raleigh from Granville County, and bought a half interest in the *Star* from John Bell, in 1826, for \$2000, and acquired full control in 1835. In the address already quoted, Governor Holden said: "Mr. Lemay was himself a good English scholar, and was very successful as editor and State printer. I knew him well. He was the friend of my youth—a just and good man." The Whigs had come into control of the State administration at the first election after the constitutional amendments of 1835, with Edward B. Dudley as governor, and the *Star* had a wide circulation and great influence in quarters where it was most desirable for a young man to be known. Mr. Holden, while engaged as a printer, was encouraged to write for the paper. He devoted his leisure, which was by no means great, to the study of law and to writing, and became so favorably known that when, in 1841, he was admitted to the bar, the Whig politicians regarded him as one of the most promising young men of their party. He entered upon the practice of law, greatly admired Henry Clay and made Whig speeches. He was also appointed assignee in bankruptcy for Wake County.

The advance of Whig interests in North Carolina had been

attended by a corresponding decline of Democratic fortunes. Almost coincident with the Whig ascendancy prosperity had come to the country. The banks were rehabilitated, the Raleigh and Gaston and Wilmington and Raleigh railroads were completed. The University passed safely through its crisis and entered upon the period of its greatest prosperity. Wake Forest and Davidson colleges were established and other higher educational movements were under way. The public school system, though crude, was inaugurated and a considerable fund created for its support. The severe financial distress through which the country had passed was charged against the national Democratic administration. These conditions gave promise of a long lease of power to the Whigs, notwithstanding the Democratic control of the legislature. The Democrats weakened, and, defeated, were by no means buoyant. The *Standard*, their newspaper organ, was then owned by Thomas Loring, and had been edited by him since the retirement of Philo White, in 1837. It had ceased to be profitable, and was without aggressive force. A change being deemed necessary, James B. Shepherd, in 1843, proposed Holden to succeed Loring. His Whig antecedents, associations and prospects made his acceptance of the proposition most unlikely, but Mr. Shepherd was permitted to have his way, and the matter appears to have been left to his management. It is quite possible that he had already seen in Mr. Holden a tendency toward Democracy of which the latter had not himself become sensible. The story is that Mr. Shepherd took the young man out walking where the Federal Cemetery is now located and offered him the *Standard*, with the backing of himself and other Democrats. Holden said: "I have never belonged to the Democratic Party." Shepherd replied: "That may be so, but you are a Democrat in conviction and in principle, though you may not realize it," etc. Whatever may have been the influences that controlled his action, Mr. Holden eventually accepted the proposition, and on the 1st day of June, 1843, became owner and editor of the paper. There have been those who have imputed unworthy motives to Mr. Holden in making this change, but the evidence does not seem to support

the imputation. He had been successful up to that time, had won the confidence of the Whig Party in his ability and acquired a good position in the community. He had married well and his prospects were good. The move involved a split with old friends, who were among the best and most influential people in the State, and he was to take an unprofitable newspaper and support a cause that had become unsuccessful. If he sold out for what was in sight, it was a cheap sale, even if he had the promise of the State printing, which afterward fell into his hands. The result justified the expectations of both parties to the arrangement. The *Standard* became the foremost Democratic paper in the State, and the personal influence of Mr. Holden so great that he is credited with boasting that he could "kill and make alive." Certainly within ten years he became the dominant man in the councils of his party.

Many have wondered at Mr. Holden's success and marveled at his early acquisition of power from such adverse beginnings. But it is to be remembered that he had talents and industry, and his training was great. He grew up from early childhood in the best newspaper offices in the State, under the most experienced and capable editors. His apprenticeship had taken in one of the most intensely active periods of political movement the country has ever known. It was the time of Andrew Jackson and the United States bank controversy, of nullification, of tariff conflict and compromise, of inflation, paper money and suspension of specie payments, of the public lands agitation, of the expurgation resolution, of constitutional amendments, of railroad building, of educational beginnings, of controversy over internal improvements. All in all, it was such a period of commotion and enterprise in political, social, religious, educational and industrial life as had not been experienced in any other stage of our history. For fifteen years previous to taking the *Standard* his daily text-book was the newspaper, and his studies related to politics and government. To his talents he added industry and alliance with the moral forces of the day; with these he had the spur of poverty and high aspiration. It is not his success that surprises, though unparalleled in the history of the State. Failure would have been marvelous.

His Whig antecedents enabled Mr. Holden to bring to the Democrats a larger outlook and broader policies. He was enterprising and aggressive. He laid hold upon young men with such recognition as was not possible from the Whigs. He was not afraid of change, and to the end of his career was a promoter of new issues.

The campaign of 1846 was disastrous to the Democrats. Their nominee for governor, Green W. Caldwell, declined the nomination, and the Executive Committee substituted James B. Shepherd. It was the old story of swapping horses in the middle of the stream. The Whig majority for Governor Graham was over 7000—double that of the previous election.

In 1848 the Democrats nominated Colonel David S. Reid, who was detained from the convention by ill-health and was not a candidate. He wrote declining the nomination, and his letter was in type for printing in the *Standard*, when Mr. Holden, recalling the experience of two years before, withheld it from publication and joined with Jerry Nixon, James B. Shepherd and Dr. W. R. Scott in sending a messenger in great haste to Reidsville with a letter to Colonel Reid, urging his acceptance of the nomination, and that he come at once to Raleigh prepared to enter the campaign against Charles Manly, the Whig nominee. He went to Raleigh hot on the heels of the messenger, and indicated his purpose to raise the issue of "free suffrage," which was not in the Democratic programme. Dr. Watson, James B. Shepherd and Perrin Busbee were inclined against the move. Jerry Nixon, W. T. Rogers, Mark Williams and Mr. Holden favored it. Colonel Reid went at once to Beaufort, where he met Mr. Manly in joint debate, and presented the issue. The Whigs opposed it. From this beginning resulted the permanent Democratic supremacy in North Carolina. It was the last Whig success. Their majority was reduced to 854.

"Free and equal suffrage" has come down to our day as a far away campaign cry of unknown meaning to the younger generations, but it is doubtful if any issue, apart from the race question, has ever been so warmly contested in North Carolina.

Under the constitution of 1835 all free white males twenty-one years old who had paid public taxes were entitled to vote for members of the House of Commons. To vote for senator, the ownership of fifty acres of land was an additional qualification. To abolish this qualification was the "free suffrage" issue.

The fifty senators were apportioned among the counties according to the amount of taxes paid, *e.g.*, Hertford, with 460 votes, had one senator; while Mecklenburg, Union and Caldwell, with 3541 votes, had only one senator. The movement to apportion the senators among the counties according to votes made the "equal suffrage" issue.

In 1850 the same candidates were again before the people and the same questions were presented, with the difference that Colonel Reid now had his party officially committed to his programme (an issue the Whigs sought to avoid), and was elected by a majority of 2794. While Governor Reid is entitled to the credit of originating and prosecuting to success the issue that made the State Democratic, it is also true that it was largely due to Mr. Holden that he had the opportunity of presenting it to the people, and largely due to his hearty and efficient support that it was successfully carried. Governor Holden, writing of this contest not long before he died, said "it was the prime, great and moving cause of the first Democratic victory in the State since 1836 and of all subsequent victories; and not only this, but free suffrage was the source of benefit to the State, in that it greatly liberalised the views of public men in legislation." Governor Reid was re-elected over John Kerr by an increased majority, and in 1855 was elected to the United States Senate.

By this time events were moving with a swinging stride toward war between the States. Sectional and party feelings overreached all bounds. Abolitionism practically absorbed all but the Democratic Party outside the South. Its leaders denounced the Constitution of the United States as a "covenant with death and an agreement with hell." Indeed, a local meeting in Ohio resolved "that whoever would assassinate President Pierce would be a friend to his race and to his country," and the Fourth of July

prayer of a Republican clergyman at Oberlin, Ohio, contained this bit of sulphurous blasphemy :

“O God, we pray that Thou wilt curse the slaveholder in all his undertakings, confound all his plans and spread terror, horror and dismay throughout the entire South. Curse, O God, we ask Thee, with a blighting curse, all the Democrats in the Union; may they in an especial manner feel the weight of Thy great displeasure. We entreat Thee, O Lord, to go to Washington and kill Frank Pierce; show him no mercy, but strike him down; also, in your righteous wrath, remember and punish with direful wrath Cass, Douglas and Toombs; let not one of these villains escape. We ask Thee, O Lord, to afflict every pro-slavery man in Kansas with the leprosy or smallpox; and may they, after feeling the pains of a thousand deaths, be tumbled headlong into Hell without a trial, there to feel ten thousand strokes on their bare backs, daily inflicted by each and every one of the slaves in the United States.”

The war of the Republicans was on—“Black Republicans” they were called, because, said Senator Stephen A. Douglas, “every plank in their platform rests on a black basis—every clause relates to the negro.” Governor Holden and the *Standard* were in the forefront of Southern partizanship and intolerance. General Clingman wrote in 1856:

“If there be Fremont men among us, let them be silenced or required to leave. The expression of black Republican opinions in our midst is incompatible with our honor and safety as a people. . . . Let our schools and seminaries of learning be scrutinized, and if black Republicans be found in them, let them be driven out. That man is neither a fit nor a safe instructor of our young men who can even incline to Fremont and black Republicanism.”

It was almost the language used previously by Mr. Holden in the *Standard*. Professor Hedrick was ejected from his professorship at Chapel Hill and from the State. Daniel R. Goodloe, Helper and perhaps others were also driven out by force of public opinion, lashed into fury by Mr. Holden and others, and possibly from considerations of personal safety. It has even been stated that the editorial columns of the *Standard* contained a bid for some one to “plot the assassination of President Lincoln.”

The disintegration of parties had begun as early as 1848. The Free Soilers, born in that year, declared for "free soil for a free people." They denied the right of the government to interfere with slavery within the States, but insisted upon its duty to exclude it from the territories. The Know Nothing, or American Party appeared about 1850, and finally, says Woodrow Wilson, before 1856, the Republican Party, into which were fused all the opponents of the extension of slavery, had ousted the Whig Party from its place of national importance. Indeed, it offered no candidate for the Presidency that year, nor ever afterward. Throughout the South there was a trend from the Whig Party to the Democrats, including, in North Carolina, such men as Paul C. Cameron, John Kerr and others of like prominence.

The invisible barrier that runs as a dividing line between the generations of men and prevents a sympathetic understanding of those who have lived within different environments from our own makes a just estimate of Governor Holden very difficult. His career until he was forty years of age must be accepted as creditable and brilliant, marked by ability and discretion, and devoid of serious error. If he had been content to be great as an editor and political leader, serving the people, there is no computing the distinction to which he might have attained. Unfortunately, he appears to have accepted that idea which Lord Brougham declares was the distinguishing error of Canning's life, "that no one can usefully serve his country or effectually further his principles unless he possesses the power which place alone bestows." He developed an inordinate desire for office. It may be that daily association with men who were struggling for place, and constant strife of parties for political control, gave him an exaggerated sense of the value of such honors; or it may be he sought distinction along this line to mark the final escape from his lowly origin. At any rate, the year 1858 marks the beginning of his office seeking and the decadence of his influence. In the spring of that year he contested the gubernatorial nomination with Judge John W. Ellis and Waightstill W. Avery, and in the fall of the same year he was a candidate for the United States

senatorship against Governors Reid and Bragg. Years later he paid a graceful tribute to Governor Reid, and expressed regret that he had opposed him.

His defeats apparently had the effect to sour him in a measure, and by 1860 he was considerably out of touch with his party. In that year he advocated, in the *Standard*, *ad valorem* taxation in advance of party utterances. The Democratic convention antagonized the proposition, while the opposition adopted it. He continued to advocate it during the campaign, and Governor Ellis, being embarrassed by having his party organ quoted against his position, repudiated the *Standard*, and at his suggestion the *Democratic Press* was adopted as the party organ in its stead. The breach was widened by Holden's course in the Presidential campaign of 1860. In the great Douglas-Lincoln debates, Judge Douglas made such concessions in respect of the Dred Scott decision as compromised him seriously with Southern Democrats and rendered him unacceptable to them for the Presidency. His nomination, however, was so vigorously pressed at the Charleston convention that the meeting was adjourned in great confusion to Baltimore, where the party finally split, each faction putting out tickets, headed by Stephen A. Douglas and John C. Breckenridge, respectively, thus assuring the election of Lincoln. Mr. Holden was a friend and great admirer of Judge Douglas, and maintained the regularity of his nomination. His final position was that the Democratic electors should vote for whichever candidate could be elected. The emoluments of the public printer were interesting to Raleigh newspapers, and Mr. Holden, who had been public printer since 1854, now lost that favor from his party, and was succeeded by John Spelman, Governor Ellis's candidate, who moved to Raleigh and bought the *Democratic Press* from Rev. R. H. Whitaker.

Mr. Holden recognized the right of secession, but was opposed to its exercise. He was elected to the convention of 1861 from Wake County as a Union man. In this he was in accord with the general spirit of the people. The State had refused to secede until driven from its neutrality by Lincoln's call for troops. The con-

vention met on May 20th, and the ordinance of secession was unanimously adopted the same day. There was a trial of strength, however, on a point of difference highly significant, when we come to consider subsequent events. Hon. George E. Badger introduced an ordinance based on the right of revolution; Hon. Burton Craige offered a substitute on the constitutional right of secession. The latter prevailed, and finally received unanimous assent. Mr. Holden was of the minority voting against the right of secession and for the right of revolution. He was at that time, however, heartily for separation from the Union. He signed the ordinance of secession with a new gold pen bought for the purpose, and declared it "the greatest act of my life." He participated in the proceedings of the convention to its close, and offered the final resolution, thanking the women of the State for their services to the Confederacy. He was a warm supporter of the war for a time, and pledged the last man and the last dollar in the State for its support. But his interest was not well sustained. The election of 1862 resulted in a legislature the majority of whose members were not in sympathy with the Confederate administration, and Mr. Holden, who had been fomenting dissatisfaction, was again elected public printer at the session of 1862-63. His attitude toward the Confederate administration now became so positively hostile that he was regarded by many as no longer friendly to Southern independence. His peace utterances were so near traitorous that soldiers passing through Raleigh wrecked his printing office in resentment of his course. About the same time, or later, he was hanged or burled in effigy at Charlotte, Currituck Court House and possibly elsewhere in the State. The army held a great convention in Virginia in August, 1863, in which he was stigmatized and his course denounced as traitorous.

In 1864 he ran for governor on the platform of "peace at any price," and secured a following of 29,000 against 43,000 for Z. B. Vance. The legislature then elected was not in sympathy with Mr. Holden, and Mr. Syme was elected public printer. He began the peace movement by a series of public meetings, and later the secret political society, Heroes of America, commonly known as

“Red Strings,” worked for him, and are said to have been his main reliance.

When he became an applicant for office, and could no longer enter into the full confidence of his party associates, Mr. Holden from a leader became a rival, and there were inevitable antagonisms. His policy became vacillating and uncertain, and continued so during the remainder of his public life. It was, however, a time of great stress and rapid change. Loyal party men, acting in concert, found great difficulty in maintaining a steady and consistent policy. The difficulties were immeasurably greater for one who was practically a “free lance,” constantly torn by contending feelings and sentiments.

Finally, when the Southern cause was defeated, Mr. Holden reached the station to which he had long aspired, only to find at last that he grasped but the ashes of his ambition. There were two theories about the relation of the seceding States to the general government. President Lincoln held that they could not secede, and as bodies politic were never out of the Union. He thought the men who interrupted the legitimate exercise of the functions of State government might be punished, and that it “devolved upon the President to declare when the functions of Statehood could be exercised.” Abolition of slavery and negro suffrage were no part of his plan. His one thought was to save the Union. The other theory was that the Southern States had left the Union, and that the conditions of their return were to be prescribed by Congress before their readmission. Thaddeus Stevens “declared that Congress should deal with the Southern States as with conquered provinces;” and Mr. Sumner said they “were *felo de se*, and in their suicide they had killed every institution of theirs which drew its life from their lives.”

Upon the close of the war, in 1865, President Johnson, pursuing the plan of restoring the Southern States to the Union that had been determined on by President Lincoln, appointed Mr. Holden provisional governor of North Carolina. Agreeably to the President’s direction, Governor Holden convened a State convention in October, 1865, to take the necessary steps for such restoration.

It was a body of extraordinary ability, including many of the most prominent men in the State—all intent upon reconciliation and a return to the Union. Hon. E. G. Reade, president of the convention, said on taking the chair :

“Fellow-citizens, *we are going home*. Let painful reflections upon our late separation and pleasant memories of our early union quicken our footsteps toward the old mansion, that we may grasp hard again the hand of friendship.”

Governor Holden, in his message to the convention, said that the President had determined that the people of North Carolina, in convention assembled, “might so alter and amend their constitution and adopt such measures as would restore the State to her constitutional relations to the Federal government, and thus secure once more the immeasurable benefits and blessings of the Union.”

The convention promptly adopted the ordinances supposed to be necessary to reinstatement, viz. :

Repealing the Ordinance of Secession.

Abolishing slavery.

Ordering an election for governor and members of the General Assembly and Congress.

The convention had done all that was required under the President’s plan of reconstruction so fully that Judge Reade, in his closing address, said :

“The breach in our government, so far as the same was by force, has been overcome by force; and so far as the same had the sanction of the legislature, the legislation has been declared null and void; so that there remains nothing to be done except the withdrawal of the military power, when all our governmental relations will be restored without further asking on the part of the State or giving on the part of the United States.”

At the election following, Jonathan Worth, an original and consistent Union man as long as faith and loyalty to his State and her people suffered him to maintain that attitude, was elected governor over Holden. The President, in full recognition of the

State's restoration, discontinued the provisional government, and the administration was surrendered to Governor Worth on December 28, 1856. There was some displeasure in Washington over Holden's defeat, and a disposition to ascribe it to disloyalty on the part of the people. In fact, Governor Holden displayed a feeling of resentment approaching proscription toward those with whom he acted at the beginning, but who declined to follow his later leadings—a feeling even more pronounced on the part of some who were closest to him. A gentleman of highest character gives this incident :

"When President Johnson telegraphed Holden to go to Washington, I knew what it meant. I started to Holden's office, intending to say to him, 'You Union men have been wiser than we. Now continue your wisdom and pursue a policy of conciliation. Let an end be put to all bitterness.' On the way I met Colonel R—, who was very close to Holden, and told him my views. He expressed concurrence so far as the common people were concerned, but that the leaders ought to be hung, and he would be glad to see Governor Vance brought down the street in handcuffs. I did not go to Holden. Afterward he told me he wished I had, that no man spoke to him."

Governor Holden was offended that prominent citizens failed to call on him while provisional governor. A pardon sent to Governor Bragg was put aside and delivery refused until the ca was made. This policy and spirit doubtless influenced the election beyond any other consideration.

This first, or Presidential, reconstruction appears to have been accomplished with comparative quiet. Governor Worth, in his message to the convention at its adjourned session, in May, 1865, said: "With the universal desire of the people to restore or no serious difficulties have presented themselves in putting into action the machinery of civil government." He found in the executive and military officers of the United States a disposition "to avoid unnecessary jarrings . . . and readiness to co-operate in everything tending to restore cordial reconciliation."

Unfortunately, President Johnson was not strong enough to maintain his policy. The plan of the radicals prevailed,

policy of punishment and humiliation was determined on. The State was recognized as such, and permitted to vote for the thirteenth amendment to the national Constitution, but no further. It was denied representation in Congress. A military control continued to be exercised, and the Freedmen's Bureau, whose existence was limited to a year from the end of the war, was, by act of Congress passed over the President's veto, extended for two years and maintained in full force. There was then a long period of uncertainty and suspense, while the radicals arranged the details of their policy.

After a year of this uncertainty—

"In the winter of 1866-67 Messrs. Holden, Pool and others of their friends visited Washington as a 'delegation of loyal men.' They drew up a bill to establish a provisional government for the State and to provide for reconstruction. It contained no feature looking to the enfranchisement of the black men. Suffrage was to be confined to the loyal whites. A test oath was framed, which excluded all whites who could not swear that at the end of one hundred days from the issuing of Mr. Lincoln's amnesty proclamation of December, 1863, they were in favor of restoring the Union. It was not until they found from interviews with Mr. Stevens and others in the two Houses of Congress that negro suffrage was a foregone conclusion that they could be induced to acquiesce in that measure. Some of their friends, finding that negro suffrage was inevitable, went home in disgust."

Governor Holden in particular had been bitterly opposed to any enlargement of negro rights. Under an ordinance of the convention, he had appointed as commissioners to prepare a system of laws upon the subject of Freedmen, Messrs. B. F. Moore, W. S. Mason and R. S. Donnell. Section 11 of the bill reported by them allowed "persons of color to bear witness when their right of person or property are concerned." Governor Holden was so averse to conferring privileges upon the negroes that he opposed this proposition with such heat as to secure the defeat of Mr. Moore for the legislature because he advocated it. This legislation was then accomplished under the leadership of Hon. W. N. H. Smith, afterward chief justice of the State.

"In March, 1867, Congress passed the first of the series of 'reconstruction' acts, by which universal colored suffrage was provided for. Immediately Mr. Holden and Mr. Pool discovered that there was no right so sacred as that of black men to the elective franchise. The former, who had defeated Mr. Moore's pretensions to the legislature, because, as a lawyer and a just man, he insisted upon the equal rights of negroes to testify in courts of justice, now that Congress had settled the matter, employed the *Standard* newspaper to denounce all men who adhered to his former sentiments as traitors and conspirators against the peace of the country."

The foregoing quotations are from Mr. Daniel R. Goodloe, who is also authority for the statement that at that time there was "no healthy, honest, liberal, decent Republican Party in the State," and that he set about forming one as early as 1865, "composed of first, the old anti-slavery men of the State, chiefly Friends, or Quakers, and Moravians; secondly, the numerous and highly respectable classes, who had either been true to the Union in heart, if not always in deed, or who had opposed secession and rebellion before the war, and who gladly welcomed peace and a restoration to the Union," and to "add to these as many law-abiding citizens who had been secessionists as could be persuaded to acquiesce in the new order of things." This was not at all to Governor Holden's taste. He waited until a fixed trend of affairs was discernible, and then organized his party about May, 1867, in time for the election of delegates to the Canby constitutional convention in accord with the extreme reconstruction policy of the radical wing of the Republican Party in Congress. Mr. Goodloe denounced that organization as a "fraud upon the people and a disgrace to the Republican name." Hon. John Pool, afterward United States senator under the Holden régime, was also the author of an address to the people, with the object of disrupting that party. Mr. Goodloe was read out of the organization by Governor Holden, and Mr. Pool was whipped in or placated.

At the election under the Canby constitution, in 1868, Governor Holden was the candidate of the new Republican Party for governor, supporting negro suffrage. The enfranchisement of all the negroes and the disfranchisement of many whites made his election

certain. The Democratic, or Conservative, nomination was successively tendered to Governor Vance, Governor Bragg, Judge Fowle and Judge Merrimon, and declined. The Hon. Thomas S. Ashe then accepted the nomination and defeat. Another wing of the Republicans refused to support Holden's organization and put out a ticket headed by Daniel R. Goodloe, without his consent. This party was supported with great zeal and ability by the *Raleigh Register* and by the *Holden Record*, a campaign paper edited by H. H. Helper and wholly designed to expose Governor Holden's record. It was then and is still an unparalleled enterprise in North Carolina journalism. Holden was elected by a majority of 12,000. The military control continued, however, for a time longer. Governor Worth was removed and Governor Holden again appointed provisional governor until the beginning of his term under the election.

The breaches that had been made between Mr. Holden and all the elements of society from which he could hope for such support as would make a successful administration possible rendered him the most unfortunate choice that could have been made for governor, and Governor Swain had advised him against accepting the appointment in 1865. The alienation of his Whig friends in 1843, it is said, led to social ostracism that was never wholly overcome. His later breaks with the Democrats and his ready acceptance of Republican favors at the close of the war, under circumstances of seeming desertion of old associates, together with his policy of building up a party composed of the baser elements within the State, and subservient to his own will, rendered him peculiarly offensive to the body of white citizens, and made his administration a failure before it began. He claimed and has been credited with having undertaken the office with a high purpose to serve the people of North Carolina. If that were true, circumstances tried his temper beyond endurance, and he soon found

"The worldly hope men set their hearts upon
Turns ashes—or it prospers; and anon,
Like snow upon the desert's dusty face,
Lighting a little hour or two—was gone."

The second, or congressional, reconstruction period in North Carolina lingers in the memory of our older people as a horror dream. It was not only attended with the disorders that usually follow war, but emancipation of the negroes had freed a subject and undisciplined race from all the restraints that formerly kept them within bounds. Passion and license ran riot, and there was no strong hand of government to furnish security for persons and property. "The enactment of the reconstruction acts was a signal for a scrub-race for office among demagogues—white, black, native, non-native, rebel and union, so called." Plunderers, cam followers and carpet-baggers played upon the credulity and fear of negroes and led them into many excesses. Murder and robbery were common. Sherman's raiders, who were commanded to give proof of their obedience to orders by the smoke that should rise from burning houses along their way, were apt teachers of arson and the smoke of many fires clouded our skies. Homes were despoiled. Women were violated. The land was desolate, "devoured by strangers." Much of the lawlessness was attributed to the Union League, under the presidency of Governor Holden. Indeed, Senators Blair and Bayard reported to the United States Senate certain records of the Superior Court of Chatham County as they say, "proving his complicity in the crimes of arson and murder." The evidence in cooler times would hardly warrant a finding; but it cannot be doubted that the negroes thought that the administration was behind them and would befriend them in case of trouble. The whites thought so, too, and the conviction was deepened by Governor Holden's exercise of the pardon power in behalf of his negro party friends and the conviction of certain Republican judges in withholding adequate punishment from criminals of their party. Official corruption was the order of the day, and the legislature issued some \$15,000,000 of fraudulent bonds, which, if enforced, would have bankrupted the State. It followed that those in the State could have strengthened the hands of the governor and that the effect to just and honest laws were made the victims of his

ers, and by force of such conditions were thrown upon their own resources outside the law. The Constitutional Union Guards, the Invisible Empire and the White Brotherhood, having a common purpose and a common designation—Ku-Klux—came into being to protect citizens in the enjoyment of life and property, by force, when necessary, and by unity of action to remedy intolerable political conditions.

Violence and lawlessness of the negro and the Union League, backed by the governor, was met by sharp and sudden punishment from these organizations. The opportunity for gratifying personal resentments and paying off "old scores" was too great to be resisted, and there were acts of violence beyond any necessity. The fact that these men were organized and disguised, and acted in concert over wide stretches of country, caused great sensation, and struck terror to the criminal classes and the administration, though in point of fact the offenses chargeable against them fell far short in number and heinousness of those that called them into being without notice from the administration. Moderate men in time lost control of the organizations and retired from their membership, or dissolved them, as in Warren County. There can be no question that they were outside the law, and it was the duty of the State authorities to suppress them. Governor Holden attempted to do this by proclamations issued in quick succession. Had he included in his programme a removal of the cause of friction, his task would have been easier and much of subsequent trouble might have been avoided. He finally sought to destroy them outside the law. He claimed a discretionary power to declare a county in a state of insurrection whenever in his judgment the civil authorities thereof were unable to protect its citizens in the enjoyment of life and property, to suspend the writ of Habeas Corpus and administer martial law therein. Indeed, a statute had been passed to that effect. He had not troubled to provide this protection against the wrongs of his own party, but in the exercise of this claim he declared Alamance and Caswell counties in a state of insurrection, occupied them with an unlawful body of troops other than the State militia, under Colonel Kirk

and Lieutenant-Colonel Burgen of Tennessee, suspended the writ of Habeas Corpus, caused the military arrest without warrant of Judge John Kerr, Dr. Adolphus Moore and many other prominent citizens of those counties, and Josiah Turner of Orange County where there was no pretence of insurrection, and prepared to try them by military commission, or court martial, with the apparent purpose of military executions, which were freely threatened by those in command. This was in the summer of 1870, while a political campaign was in progress. The State was stirred to a furor of excitement. Chief Justice Pearson issued writs of Habeas Corpus, which Kirk refused to honor, saying they had "played out." Governor Holden assumed the responsibility, and refused to have the prisoners produced. Judge Pearson adjudged the suspension of the writ illegal and that the petitioners were entitled to be heard, and ordered a copy of his opinion to be delivered to the governor. This he declared exhausted his power. That idea was taken almost literally from the opinion of Chief Justice Taney in Merryman's case. There President Lincoln had authorized certain military arrests in Maryland, and a suspension by the military authorities of the writ of Habeas Corpus. Merryman was arrested and confined in Fort McHenry. The chief justice of the United States issued his writ of Habeas Corpus, which, as in our case, was not respected. He declared the suspension illegal, and ordered a copy of his decision certified to the President. He said he could not contend against the army of the United States; that he had "been resisted by a force too strong for me to overcome." A great pamphlet war followed, participated in by Horace Binney, Tatlow Jackson, Joel Parker, G. M. Wharton, J. C. Bullitt, John T. Montgomery and others. Their contributions make a good sized book of rare interest; but the law as laid down by the chief justice was not honored by the authorities. Governor Holden appeared to see in the immunity of the President assurance of his own safety.

The judiciary of North Carolina being exhausted, application was made to United States District Judge Brooks, who issued writs of Habeas Corpus and discharged the prisoners brought

before him. Governor Holden threatened to resist him by force, but was advised by the attorney-general of the United States to submit to authority, which he did.

It has been plausibly contended that the violent course pursued by Governor Holden in this matter was designed to influence the political campaign then pending and secure a return to power of his own party at the August elections by intimidation, and to divert attention from the corrupt practices of his party in the matter of the fraudulent bonds. If that were true, his plan miscarried. While the Habeas Corpus proceedings were pending, a political revolution swept the State, placing the Democratic Party in control of the General Assembly. Governor Holden was impeached of high crimes and misdemeanors in declaring Alamance and Caswell counties in a state of insurrection, in making military arrests and imprisonments in those counties, in arresting and imprisoning Josiah Turner in Orange County, in suspending the writ of Habeas Corpus, etc. He was found guilty, removed from office and adjudged incapable of again holding office under the State. "An additional article was proposed charging him with the improper delivery of \$6,000,000 of bonds to G. W. Swepson," says Judge W. H. Battle, "even Republicans urging it, that the conviction might not assume a party character."

It was not generally supposed at the time, nor since, that Governor Holden was a sharer in the profits arising from the fraudulent bonds, but he was blamed most severely for not preventing them. Judge D. L. Russell, since governor of the State, testified: "I have no reason to believe that he was actually guilty of criminal complicity in these frauds, but that much of it, however, is due to his imbecility and incapacity." Judge Brooks testified: "Our people think he has failed to do that which it was in his power to have prevented." Judge Logan testified: "The Republicans were open, bold and outspoken against Governor Holden" on account of them. Hon. B. F. Moore testified: "He made no opposition to it."

There can be little question that Governor Holden had control of the Republican Party at this time. Rev. J. B. Smith, an Epis-

copal clergyman, testified to his saying: "I can control by my word 80,000 men. I can go to the convention that is to meet here next week [Republican] and control them by a word." Mr. B. F. Moore, the foremost lawyer in the State, and an ardent Union man, testified that generally Governor Holden had the sole appointing power to office, and announced that he would appoint none to office but those of his own party." "A great many of the new appointments were of men of known bad character, men convicted of theft or accused and believed to have been guilty of theft, and men who could not read or write."

Whatever excuses for his conduct cooling time may afford, two of these charges must stand through all time without legal excuse or justification—the military arrest and imprisonment of Mr. Turner without warrant or trial in Orange County, where there was no pretence of insurrection, and the suspension of the writ of Habeas Corpus. At the time of his removal by the military order of General Canby, Governor Worth protested against the act as illegal, and surrendered his office to Provisional Governor Holden under military duress, "as without legality to him [Holden] whose own official sanction but three years ago declared it valid."

This was not pleasing to Governor Holden, and in his answer to the articles of impeachment against him he alleged that soon after his induction into office "he became officially cognizant of a settled design existing in various parts of the State, through the aid of secret combinations of a political character, of which he believes the aforesaid [Worth] protest was the nucleus, practically to render null and void said Reconstruction Act and to set at naught those provisions of the Federal and State constitutions which secure political and civil equality to the whole body of the people without regard to race, color or previous condition." There is no evidence that Governor Worth's protest entered into the formation or policy of the Ku-Klux. No doubt the Reconstruction Act of Congress, being clear expressions of hostility and bitterness toward the South, and the alarm occasioned by the commitment of this policy to the hands of those who were complaisant, even to

the surrender of a declared principle, to the most venomous enemies of this section, had much to do with these organizations. The wisdom of the convention of 1861 in putting secession upon the basis of a constitutional right and not upon the basis of revolution must for all time establish the falsity of the pretensions of the authors of Reconstruction.

Public resentment was hot against Governor Holden for a time, and he left the State and engaged in newspaper work in Washington. Later he was postmaster at Raleigh, whence he retired to private life. He lived to a good old age, and when the passions and bitterness of the troublous times of Reconstruction passed away and it was recalled that he at least was not one of the actual spoilers of the State in the day of plunder and corruption, he regained in a large measure the personal esteem of the community in which he lived. As a member of the First Baptist Church, and later of the Edenton Street Methodist Episcopal Church, South, he spent years of quiet and useful service; and in private life he was noted for kindly benefactions and gentle services to those in need. Even Aunt Abby House, his old-time foe, who wished the water to be boiling when he was baptized, came in her last years to bless him for his personal ministrations and his generous aid.

Whatever mistakes characterized his life, it is to his credit that he retained the personal regard of many of the best men of the State. For many years the late Major William J. Yates, editor of the *Charlotte Democrat*, urged the removal of his disabilities, and there were not wanting others to second his efforts. It was a subject, however, upon which Governor Holden maintained a dignified silence. Finally there came a time when it was thought such action might be taken, and Governor Holden was approached on the subject. He expressed himself to the effect that he would be gratified to have his impeachment declared wrong, otherwise he was not interested in the matter. With that the incident closed.

In his later life Governor Holden was in demand as a writer and occasional speaker, usually on religious or historical subjects. He contributed the dedicatory hymn sung on the occasion of the dedication of Edenton Street Church in 1887. It was full of

reverence and devotion, and admirably adapted to the occasion. Many other contributions from his pen, both prose and verse, have real merit and are worthy of preservation.

He died in March, 1892.

It is yet too soon for a final estimate of his character and gifts. He must rank with the large men of the State, which has suffered in the loss of his great talents in the time of her great need. When his memoirs are published and he shall tell his own story to the world, it may be seen that he and the people failed to understand each other, to the great misfortune of both. In his life there is the assurance of an open door to usefulness and honor for every man, however humble his beginnings. There is the further lesson that the path which leads away from the best elements in a community leads also to disaster.

Thomas M. Pittman.





GABRIEL HOLMES



GOVERNOR GABRIEL HOLMES was a native of the county of Duplin (the part now Sampson), and his ancestors were among the colonists brought to America for the purpose of settling the McCulloh and Selwyn domain in Duplin County and its vicinity. They came with the Kenans, along with Colonel Sampson.

Gabriel Holmes was born in 1769. He received his preparatory education at Zion Parnassus Academy, in Rowan County, under the Rev. Samuel C. McCorkle, and later entered Harvard College, but did not graduate. Returning to North Carolina, he studied law with John Louis Taylor, afterward chief justice, as his instructor, and was soon the recipient of political honors. In 1794 and 1795 he was a member of the North Carolina House of Commons from the county of Sampson. For six successive sessions, from 1797 till 1802 (inclusive), and again in 1812 and 1813, he was State senator, serving eight terms in all, in addition to his previous service as a commoner.

On the 6th of December, 1821, the General Assembly elected Mr. Holmes to the office of governor of the State, and he was inaugurated on the day following. His immediate predecessor was Jesse Franklin. Holmes served until December 7, 1824, when Governor Hutchins G. Burton was inaugurated as his successor.

When Marquis de Lafayette revisited America in 1824-25, Gov-

ernor Holmes was in office when he first arrived. The following special message, which explains itself, was sent by Holmes to the legislature on November 20, 1824:

"When General Lafayette, the illustrious guest of the nation, was at Yorktown, in Virginia, I anticipated his arrival in North Carolina; and in order to make such arrangements as would comport with the dignity of the State in the reception of one whose life and fortune have been devoted not only to the establishment of liberty and independence in the United States, but to the subversion of despotism and the melioration of the rights of man in Europe, I despatched Major-General Robert R. Johnson to wait on him with a letter of invitation to our capital and other populous cities in this State.

"General Johnson has informed me that General Lafayette has accepted the invitation, and will probably visit this place about the 20th of December next.

"Permit me to suggest the propriety of the legislatures making such provision as may seem to them consistent for the reception of so great and good a personage."

General Lafayette's visit to Raleigh was delayed several months. In the meantime the term of office of Governor Holmes had expired and Hutchins G. Burton filled the executive chair. For an account of the reception of the "guest of the nation," we refer the reader to the sketch of Governor Burton, which appears elsewhere in this work. It may be well here to mention, however, that the legislature placed the whole State treasury at the governor's disposal for the entertainment of Lafayette—no limit at all being placed upon expenditures.

About a year after the expiration of his term as governor, Mr. Holmes was elected to represent his district in the Congress of the United States. He served therein from December 3, 1825, till his death, in 1829.

From 1801 till 1804 Mr. Holmes was a member of the Board of Trustees of the University of North Carolina, and again served in that capacity from 1817 till 1829. During his term as governor (1821-24) he was *ex-officio* president of this board.

Governor Holmes died in Sampson County on the 26th of September, 1829. His death was a loss to the State. He was

not only a finished and profound scholar, but he possessed personal characteristics which gained for him the highest respect and the esteem of all with whom he was associated. Affable in his deportment, kind and sympathetic in his disposition, by his attainments and culture he was fitted to move in the highest circles of society, and he adorned the public offices which he filled.

The Raleigh *Register* of October 15, 1829, contains a brief sketch of his life, copied from the Fayetteville *Observer*, as follows:

"Died: At his residence in Sampson County, on Tuesday, the 26th ultimo, General Gabriel Holmes, in the sixty-first year of his age. General Holmes was educated at Cambridge, in Massachusetts, and early in life engaged in the practice of law. He was several years elected to represent the county of Sampson in the State legislature, and was for a considerable period a member of the Council of State. In 1821 he was chosen governor of North Carolina, and served a constitutional term; after his retirement from the executive chair he was elected to represent the Fifth Congressional District in Congress, and at the time of his death was the member-elect from that district. The estimation in which he was held by his constituents was fully manifested in the result of the last election; for though he was so worn down by long and painful suffering as to be unable to mix much with the people, such was their regard for his character and services that they re-elected him by a very handsome majority. In public life General Holmes was distinguished for pure, disinterested love of country; in private life, for sincere friendship and the strictest integrity; as a neighbor he was kind and benevolent; as a husband and father, affectionate and indulgent. He lived esteemed by his friends for his many virtues, and died regretted by all who knew him."

The wife of Governor Holmes was Mary Hunter, daughter of a Revolutionary patriot of Wake County, Lieutenant-Colonel Theophilus Hunter, whose biography will be found under a separate heading in this work.

Governor Holmes left several children, the most distinguished of whom was Lieutenant-General Theophilus Hunter Holmes of the Confederate army.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.



MARTIN HOWARD

"Extreme lovers of their masters were never fortunate. Neither can they be, for when a man placeth his thoughts without himself, he goeth not his own way."—*Lord Bacon*.



MAN of fine character, of a gentle nature, of unusual culture and learning was Martin Howard, but he was one of the unfortunates—a conservative in the midst of a revolution, a lover of the existing order when that order was crumbling about him, a king's man when his neighbors were fast becoming king haters. While all the world was moving forward, he was standing still. What wonder, then, that he should have been crushed by the onward movement! "Certainly," says Lord Bacon, "there be no two more fortunate qualities than to have a little of the fool and not too much of the honest." Martin Howard, with his quiet temperament and studious habits, was a philosopher, and wholly averse to the turmoil of popular agitation with its distorted vision, its half truths and its strong passions. He, in the serene atmosphere of the philosopher, above this turmoil, uninfluenced by these passions and prejudices, could see clearly the strength of the argument from the standpoint of the Loyalist, and he was convinced by it. Being convinced, he was too honest to make terms with what he regarded as radical error.

Martin Howard, Sr., was admitted a free man of Newport, Rhode Island, May 3, 1726, O. S., so it is probable that the son was born at that place. Where Martin Howard, Jr., was educated is not known, but there is evidence that he attended some terms at the Inns of Court in London. At any rate, he located at Newport for the practice of the law. He first appeared in public life as a delegate, or commissioner, from Rhode Island to a convention of the northern colonies at Albany, New York in the summer of 1754. That was an attempt to unite these colonies for a common defense against the incursions of French and Indians during the war that was then imminent. The Congress consisted of delegates from New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, Maryland and New York. A committee composed of one member from each colony was directed to draw and report a plan of union. Howard was on this committee. The plan as reported was agreed to on the 4th of July. The essential features of the plan were: A grand council, to consist of delegates from the several legislatures, and a president-general, with veto power, to be appointed by the Crown. This council was to enact laws of general import, to apportion the quotas of men and money to be raised by each colony, determine the building of forts, regulate the operation of armies and concert all measures for the common protection and safety. This federation was intended to apply to all the colonies, and it might have been adopted. The British Government, however, with the fatuity that generally characterized it in its dealings with the American colonies, vetoed the plan. It is really in a great degree a forecast of the future colonial system of the British Government itself.

In 1756 Martin Howard was a representative from Newport in the Rhode Island Assembly.

In 1765 he wrote in defense of the Stamp Act. On August 27th of that year "effigies of Augustus Johnston, attorney-general; Dr. Thomas Moffatt and Martin Howard, Jr., an eminent lawyer, were drawn through the streets and hung on a gallows in front of the court-house. In the evening they were cut down and burned in the presence of cheering thousands." The mob also destroyed

much of his property. With his career in Rhode Island thus summarily interrupted, he went to England, where, in compensation for his losses, he was, on July 26, 1766, appointed chief justice of the province of North Carolina, to fill the vacancy made by the suicide of Charles Berry, in December, 1765. In December, 1766, he filed a claim with the Rhode Island Assembly for £970, his losses by the mob. That body was not at all inclined to pay anything. It postponed the matter from time to time, until August, 1773, when it scaled the amount to £111 18s., and promised to pay that when the British Government refunded to the colony the sums expended by it for the common defense in the French-Indian wars. This was not only keeping the word of promise to the ear and breaking it to the hope, but it was also a fine sarcasm on Howard's argument for the Stamp Act, *i.e.*, that Great Britain was bearing the burden of the defense of the colonies, and it was but fair that they should contribute something toward it, through this moderate and scarcely to be felt tax.

He arrived in North Carolina in January, 1767, and qualified as chief justice on the 23d of that month.

At that time the office of chief justice was quite valuable. He was paid from the quit-rents £70 sterling per annum, £26 currency, for every court he attended and fees on each civil case tried in the Superior Court. The net produce of the latter Governor Tryon estimated at £1000 currency, or £550 sterling, per annum. Some changes, however, were made in this by the Superior Court Act of 1768. A new district, Hillsboro, was created, the fees of the chief justice were abolished and a tax on litigation substituted therefor. By this a fund was created from which to pay all the judges. It is supposed that his aggregate income under this act remained about the same as it had been. Governor Martin said that the quit-rents ceased to pay the £70 per annum about 1771, and the Court Law expired by limitation in June, 1774, so after that time the chief justice had no official income.

It was his fortune to come into the province as the Regulators began their agitation. He presided at all the trials arising out of that disturbance, and seems to have done so with impartiality

and fairness. Of the three judges, he was the least obnoxious to these factionists.

It is a remarkable fact, that notwithstanding all the riots and disturbances these people were engaged in, not one of them was punished until, and after, Alamance. Under the charge of the court, Herman Husband was acquitted. By its action arresting the judgment, James Hunter was released after conviction. It quashed one indictment against six of them on account of an insufficient return by the grand jury and another indictment against eight for the same reason. And the only two ever convicted were released immediately and pardoned a few days after.

No record of the trial of the fourteen prisoners in Hillsboro, June, 1771, has been found, unfortunately, for it would lighten up some obscure points materially.

The army, with its prisoners, arrived in Hillsboro on Friday, June 14th. They were probably arraigned in the court then sitting on Saturday, the 15th, and the trial fixed for Monday, the 17th. The trial dragged its length through Monday and Tuesday. The question was simple. If the defendants were taken in arms at Alamance, then they were levying war, and, according to the most liberal definition, guilty of treason. It was a question of fact for the jury whether they were so levying war or not. The jury acquitted two and convicted twelve. There is no reason to suppose these men did not have an absolutely fair trial.

It then became the duty of the chief justice to pass sentence on the convicts. He was much moved as he did so, though complying strictly with all the forms. He thus concluded: "I must now close my afflicting duty by pronouncing upon you the awful sentence of the law, which is that you be carried to the place from whence you came; that you be drawn from thence to the place of execution, where you are to be hanged by the neck; that you be cut down while yet alive; that your bowels be taken out and burned before your face; that your head be cut off, your body be divided into four quarters, and this to be at His Majesty's disposal; and may the Lord have mercy on your soul."

This, of course, was mere form. None of these blood-curdling

horrors were carried into effect. It was the form in England until 1870, but the last instance in which it was used was at the conviction of Frost, the Chartist, in 1839. It was never, however, carried into effect after the execution of Harrison, the regicide, who struck the executioner as he tore his bowels from him. Six of the convicts were executed on the 19th and six were respited and subsequently pardoned.

The court as constituted then was very able. Both Maurice Moore and Richard Henderson were very strong men. Martin Howard had not the intellectual force of either of these, but he was a more learned lawyer, and had a calmer and more judicial temperament. He had, too, an exceedingly easy and graceful style, both in speaking and writing.

The controversy between the Colonial Assembly and the home government over the Attachment Law, however, brought his functions as judge to an early close. The law establishing courts, which had been in force before 1746, was repealed by the act fixing a seat of government and providing a court system similar in some respects to that in use in England. But that law was repealed some years later by the King, and in Governor Dobbs's time there was trouble over the adoption of a new law because the Assembly insisted on provisions calculated to secure the independence of the judiciary, providing that the judges should be appointed for good behavior and not at the pleasure of the Crown. The result of that disagreement was the passage of court laws to be enforced for the term of two years only. In 1771 such a law was passed, during Governor Tryon's administration, which came to an end in 1773. When the legislature then proposed to enact a new one, a difference arose on the subject of allowing to the inhabitants of North Carolina the right to attach the property of foreign debtors who had property in the province, the legislature insisting on that right and the Crown, under the influence of British merchants, dissenting. As a result, after a heated controversy, no new Court Law was passed, and all the general courts of the province were closed from 1773 to the fall of 1777, when judges were appointed under the State constitution adopted in December, 1776.

The subject of this sketch was by temperament and from a sense of gratitude a Loyalist. He retired to his farm in Craven County, and was permitted to reside there until the latter part of July, 1777, when, refusing to take the oath of allegiance to the State, he was made to depart therefrom and his property was confiscated. He took refuge in New York, but soon, being probably granted a small pension by the British Government, went to England, where he died before the conclusion of peace.

Joseph Hewes's pious and patriotic wish—"I wish to God John Harvey could have been spared and the governor and Judge Howard had been called in his stead"—and a letter written by Howard to James Iredell in May, 1773 (1775), as interpreted by Jones, indicate that during the first two years of his retirement he was not content to be neutral in the political differences, which were beginning then to be very acute. It is probable, though, that later he quieted down, for he seems to have retained the friendship of some of the principal men in the State. He writes from his country seat, Richmond, in Craven County, thus to Iredell, May 15, 1777:

"I wish you could have conveniently fulfilled your intention of riding to Richmond. My little family would have been delighted to see you, and you would have seen, I think, the best piece of meadow in Carolina, whence (when I leave this country) you might be able to add one to the few observations which may be made upon an unimportant character, viz., that I had made two blades of grass grow where only one grew before—a circumstance among some nations of no small honor and renown."

It required no little moral stamina to give up such a home as this for a sentiment, particularly when for more than two years he had been asking relief from the British Government without any notice being taken of his petitions.

He was a Tory, but conscientious throughout, and as such should be judged without prejudice.

Authorities: Arnold's "Rhode Island," Rhode Island Colonial Records, Marshall's "Washington," McRee's "Iredell," 7, 8, 9, 10 Colonial Records (North Carolina) and 11 State Records.

Frank Nash.



REDNAP HOWELL

"I knew a very wise man that believed that if a man were permitted to make all the ballads, he need not care who should make the laws of a nation."—*Andrew Fletcher of Saltoun.*

THE antecedents of Rednap Howell are veiled in obscurity. In Appleton's Encyclopædia of American Biography he is said to have been a brother of Richard Howell of New Jersey. This authority Mr. Haywood followed in his "Tryon in North Carolina." Governor Howell's ancestry is thus stated in 5 American Ancestry, page 191. William Howell came over with William Penn from Caterbriht, Wales, in 1682, and subsequently settled in Delaware. Ebenezer, his son, was born in Delaware, married Sarah Bond of Cecil County, Maryland, removed to Newark and practiced law. Richard, son of Ebenezer, was born at Newark, October 24, 1754.

The biography of Richard Howell continues: He studied law and was admitted to the bar. In the Revolutionary War he attained the rank of major. With a pretence of disgust, he resigned from the army to become one of Washington's secret service agents. So well did he act the part that he was at one time arrested as a Loyalist, and saved himself from imprisonment, if not execution, only by showing Washington's protection. He was one of the charter members of the Society of the Cincinnati, and was elected governor of New Jersey annually from 1793 to 1801. He, too,

was a poet, wrote the ode welcoming Washington to Trenton and many other patriotic songs. He died in Trenton, New Jersey, in 1802. It is well known that he was the grandfather of Mrs. Jefferson Davis.

There is still another account of the Howell family in L. Q. C. Elmer's "Reminiscences of New Jersey." This, I am informed by Mr. William Nelson, secretary of the New Jersey Historical Society, is considered more authentic. Richard Howell was one of eleven children, and, with his twin brother, Lewis, was born October 24, 1754, at Newark, Delaware, being the son of Ebenezer Howell, whose parents came to America from Wales in 1729, and settled in Newark. Ebenezer Howell removed about 1770 to New Jersey, taking up his residence a few miles west of Bridgeton, in Cumberland County, where he resided until his death. The twin boys mentioned remained in Newark pursuing their education until about 1774, when they joined their father in New Jersey.

It seems reasonably certain that Rednap Howell was of this family, but assuming that Judge Elmer's account is correct, and upon a comparison of dates, it seems that Rednap was a brother of Ebenezer and so an uncle of Richard.

All that we know of his first coming to North Carolina is derived from Caruthers. He says that he was a schoolmaster first in lower Orange, now Chatham, County. By 1768, however, he appears to have removed to West Orange, what is now Randolph County. Colonel Saunders says that still later he removed to Granville, but I can find no evidence of this. He was young when he came, certainly not more than twenty-one years of age. It may have been of him that William Few wrote in his autobiography:

"The schoolmaster was a man of mild and amiable disposition. He governed his little school with judgment and prosperity, wisely distinguishing the obedient, timid child from the obstinate and contumacious, judiciously applying the rod when necessary. He possessed the art of making his pupils fear, love and esteem him."

It is difficult to ascertain with any certainty what was the con-

dition of the people with reference to school facilities at the coming of Rednap Howell. It must be remembered that Orange and Anson counties, where the Regulator movement was strongest and most virulent, were settled by small farmers. Many of these were Scotch-Irish, and, in Orange, Quakers from Pennsylvania, with the great flood of this migration extending from 1750 to 1760. A large percentage of these had acquired the rudiments of an education, but they did not bring with them to the uncleared forests of North Carolina the schoolmasters of the older settlements, except when they migrated as a body. The smattering of knowledge that they had acquired was thus to some degree denied to their children. The schoolmaster was to come later, when settlements had been made and neighborhoods had been established.

Across the line, too, commencing earlier and continuing later than the migration from the North, was a continuous overflow of the poorer class of whites from Virginia. These were illiterate themselves, and their children were illiterate. To them the schoolmaster was a useless product of a more sophisticated society.

How many of these schoolmasters there were in Orange County during the period 1766-71 it is impossible to ascertain. Though the Rev. George Mecklejohn, Dr. David Caldwell and Rev. Henry Patillo were teachers as well as preachers, the schoolmaster was certainly not abroad in the land. In some comparatively prosperous and well-settled communities other than Hillsboro and the Presbyterian settlements of Eno, Alamance, Buffalo and Hawfields were schools and schoolmasters. Sometimes the schoolmaster was only a vagabond having only a pretence of knowledge and little character—removing from one place as soon as his inefficiency and lack of character were discovered to another where he was unknown; at others he was a capable and useful man. The schoolmaster at that time and later lived board free around among his patrons, his annual tuition being for the older scholars about \$15 and for the younger proportionately less. Only the better class of farmers could afford an education for their sons and daughters, and in their households the schoolmaster was a

welcome and honored guest. Especially was this true of Rednap Howell. Compared with them, he had seen much of the world and knew a great deal about books. He was genial, warm-hearted and humorous, and could no doubt sing a song or tell a story with the best of them. He identified himself with all of their interests, aided the husband on his farm and the wife about her household duties, taught the children new games, took the boys with him hunting and perhaps taught the girls to dance to the music of his own fiddle. His better education would have built up a middle wall, or partition, between them and himself had it not been accompanied by a perfect adaptability to his environment. He, though somewhat shiftless and impracticable, seems to have been whole-souled, candid and bold, and entering thus into the joys and sorrows of his patrons, he was loved as well as admired by them. What wonder, then, that he should make their cause his when the Regulator troubles arose?

He first appears as one of the settlers appointed on April 30, 1768, to meet the officers at Thomas Lindley's on May 11th. The rescue of the horse from the sheriff on May 8th had, however, made this meeting impossible from the standpoint of the officers, and in this they were strictly within their rights. At George Sally's, on May 21st, he was appointed one of a committee to prepare a general statement of the Regulator's wrongs and of the evidence supporting it, to be presented to Governor Tryon and his council. Howell, with the assistance of James Hunter and John Lowe, both men of sound judgment and excellent common sense, was the author of that statement. As a whole, it is a forcible presentation of the Regulator side of the controversy, strongly worded, well arranged and generally restrained in tone. James Hunter and himself presented these papers to the governor and council at Brunswick in June. He, however, not content with this, made an oral argument before their Honors. Herman Husbands thus describes an episode of this speech, and in this episode was the origin of Howell's intense hatred of Tryon.

"We [at the meeting of May 21st] came to the resolution that if the governor was against us, and we could get no redress no way, we would

rather than rise in riots agree not to go to law at all, but leave our differences to arbitration. But when it was read our opposers seemed to resent it as more criminal than anything we had done before. Howell had this paper with him, and as he was complaining of the court, etc., the governor says to him: 'Why do the people go to law with one another? If they get so little justice at law, can't they leave their differences to arbitration?' Howell replies, 'We intend to do so, and have a paper drawn up for that purpose, which, if your excellency pleases, you may peruse and give it your approbation.' The governor read it and got in a great passion with it, and ordered Howell to burn it, which I suppose he did."

It is manifest that the paper was drawn by Husbands himself, with his plain, blunt way of putting things. In it the court was corrupt, the lawyers rogues and the officials extortioners. No wonder that Governor Tryon and the officers were excited to rage by it.

There can be no doubt that Governor Tryon was honestly anxious to remedy the grievances of the people, but he was not at all ready to accept as true all that the Regulators said about them. Their own illegal and defiant attitude in regard to them had prejudiced him against these factionists. When, then, their chosen representatives appeared before him and his council, they must be prepared to meet this prejudice and overcome it and not give new occasion for offense. In showing the agreement, then, to Tryon, Howell was very indiscreet.

He took no active part in any of the illegal acts of the Regulators during 1768 and 1769. His was not one of the names excepted from Governor Tryon's proclamation of pardon, October 3, 1768. It is supposed that it was at this period that he circulated most freely among the Regulators those ambling epics and jingling ballads that made him famous as the bard of the movement. There were about forty of these, but only three fragments of them all remain to this day. The first is a supposed dialogue between Francis Nash and Edmund Fanning. They had tried to frighten Herman Husbands out of the country. Instead, he had remained, stood his trial and had been acquitted. Not only

this, James Hunter had had them both indicted for extortion, and Fanning had been convicted.

"Who would have thought Harmon, that humdrum old fox,
Who looks so bemeaning with his trowsled locks,
Would have had resolution to stand to the tack?
Alas! my dear Ned, our case is quite black—
And who would have thought Hunter, so seemingly mild,
Would have been so gigantic, mischievous and wild?
I thought him a fool, and took him for one;
Alas! my dear Frank, our cause is undone.
Like Turkish Bashaws, they bear absolute sway;
Alas! my dear Frank, we must all run away."

In the light of the subsequent Hillsboro riot, the last line seems prophetic.

The next fragment lampoons John Frohock and Edmund Fanning, both of whom became rapidly wealthy.

"Says Frohawk to Fanning, 'To tell the plain truth,
When I came to this country I was but a youth.
My father sent for me, I wa'n't worth a cross,
And then my first study was to steal for a horse;
I quickly got credit, and then ran away,
And haven't paid for him to this very day.'

"Says Fanning to Frohawk, 'Tis folly to lie;
I rode an old mare that was blind of an eye;
Five shillings in money I had in my purse,
My coat it was patched, but not much the worse;
But now we've got rich, and it's very well known
That we'll do very well if they let us alone."

The last fragment is part of a song of eight verses to celebrate Fanning's crossing of the Eno. The Regulators, under the leadership of old Ninian Bell Hamilton, had come to rescue Husbands and Butler when they were under arrest at Hillsboro, on May 2, 1768. Fanning went down the Eno River with a bottle of wine in one hand and a bottle of rum in the other to meet them, and, if possible, to placate them. They ordered him to wade the river if he wanted to see them, and this he did.

5. "At length their head man they sent out
To save their town from fire;
To see Ned Fanning wade Eno
Brave boys, you'll all admire.
6. "With hat in hand, at our command
To salute us every one, sir;
And after that kept off his hat
To salute old Hamilton, sir."

A more effective instrumentality to arouse the people to action than such verses could scarcely be found. They could be committed to memory with perfect ease. They appealed to a sense of the ludicrous that is almost universal, and while they did so, made the foes of the people contemptible. The officers, the lawyers and the merchants of the town formed a distinct class—an aristocracy, so to speak. They were wealthier, more cultured and better surrounded by the comforts and luxuries of life than the people of the country. To the average man there is an imposing glamour about this kind of superiority that inspires respect. To render these aristocrats contemptible in the eyes of the people was to destroy one of the strongest safeguards they had. Howell did this by his poetry. These men who dressed so fine, who made so many pretensions to gentility, had raised themselves above the people only by robbing the people. They always sought to degrade, never, except in the case of Fanning, to kill these aristocrats. The very method of punishing them—that is, whipping—may have been suggested by Rednap Howell, the schoolmaster. It is the only instance in the history of the world of the use of such an inoffensive weapon as the common hickory switch.

Rednap Howell took an active part in the Hillsboro riot of September, 1770. He, it is said, wrote the petition that was presented to Judge Henderson in the absence of Chief Justice Howard. Under his leadership the Regulators regarded the breaking up of the court and the whipping of the lawyers as a grim joke. Their attitude toward Edmund Fanning was at first more serious, but their sardonic humor prevailed, even in his case. They spared his life on condition that he run until out of their sight.

There is little doubt that the humorous aspect that their vengeance assumed was to a great degree due to the influence of Howell's poetry over them. In this respect it was beneficent, for without it many lives might have been taken in their exasperation. In another regard the effect of this poetry was malevolent. The Regulators, leaders and all, thought that they were invincible; that Tryon and his officers could not raise the country against them, or if they succeeded in any degree in embodying the militia, it would not fire upon them, and they never awoke to a complete realization of their danger until the dead bodies of their comrades strewed the field of Alamance. Then, while their leaders fled, outlaws, a price upon their heads, they came forward in shoals to take the oath of allegiance and to purge themselves of treason.

Rednap Howell appears only once more upon our records, and that is as the author of the famous letter to James Hunter from Halifax, February 16, 1771. This fell into Governor Tryon's hands. One can imagine his satisfaction at finding himself designated therein as an "artful villain." The humor so characteristic of Howell appears here, too. "I am informed," says he, "that the clerks' places in the new counties are parceled out among the quality. One Cooper is designed for your county [Guilford], but if you suffer any rascal to come there, may eternal oppressions be your lot. As I cannot solely depend upon the Irish ahead, I pray you to reserve that morsel for yours to serve, for as the whole province is in your favor, you may do what you list in that respect." And then seriously: "I give out here that the Regulators are determined to whip every one that goes to law, or will not pay his just debts, or that will not agree to leave his cause to men where disputes—in short, to stand in defiance, and as to thieves, to drive them out of the country."

He is said, also, to have written "A Fan for Fanning and a Touchstone for Tryon," a pamphlet that then circulated among the people, and now is to be found in the *University Magazine*. It is, under the circumstances, a remarkably calm, lucid, strong arraignment of these officials—the work of a man of more than ordinary culture.

At Alamance he fought, and after Alamance he ran away. He was outlawed and a price put upon his head. He first took refuge in Maryland, but in the latter part of 1772 removed to Augusta County, Virginia. Still later he returned to New Jersey, and died in Trenton in December, 1787. His whole estate was inventoried at £7 17s. and 9 dimes, and it is supposed that he died unmarried and without issue.

Authorities: Besides those in the text, Caruthers's "Life of Caldwell," 7 Colonial Records, pages 731, 733, 758, 759, 802, 820 and 851; 8 *idem.* 537.

Frank Nash.



denly faces about, addresses the chair, secures the floor (which, by the way, he already has), begins an address which at once arrests the attention of the convention, and soon discloses that the speaker has been following the discussion closely, and while rambling and chatting has been shaping the speech which follows. If he has not done so, the visitor will soon be asking his neighbor for the name of the speaker, and will be informed that it is Dr. J. D. Hufham, the "walking delegate" of the convention.

This man's character, as is true of all characters, is the product of centuries, and the past must largely account for him. The Hufhams came to this country from London, where the name may still be found. Morley, in his "English Men of Letters," gives the name of Dickens as John Charles Hufham Dickens. So far as is known, the first of the name in America, Solomon Hufham, came over and settled in North Carolina, near the Bladen, New Hanover and Duplin line, prior to 1751, and with characteristic English spirit promptly began to acquire land. He secured a grant in the year mentioned, and several succeeding grants in the years which followed, until finally he became a large landowner. His second son, John, was a soldier of the Revolution, participated in the campaign which culminated in the battle of Moore's Creek Bridge, and also served under General Ashe in the disastrous battle of Briar Creek, Georgia. At his death his fine estate descended to his only son, John (1733-1832), a clear-headed man, under whom the family possessions were still further enhanced, and a part of whose property is still held by his descendants. His oldest son, George, father of Dr. Hufham, was a man of unusual natural gifts, which were cultivated in the best academies of the day and in the State University. Beginning public life as a physician, he made a profession of religion soon after his marriage in 1831, and in 1833 entered the Christian ministry. After five years of service in Duplin and the surrounding counties, he moved to Mississippi, and with Benejah Carroll (father of the distinguished H. B. Carroll of Texas), Dr. Lattimore, James G. Hall and James K. Clinton, all North Carolinians, laid the foundation of the Baptist cause in the section where he located. Returning later to his

native State, he spent the rest of his active life in the uneventful round of country pastorates.

He married Miss Frances Dunn, a descendant of a distinguished family of that name, which first moved to Elizabeth City County, Virginia, soon after the settlement at Jamestown. There, about 1630, was born Robert Dunn, who at an early age removed to Maryland and settled on Kent Island. He seems to have been an adherent of the Crown, for when, in 1652, the Parliamentary Squadron came to enforce the authority of the Parliament, and the "Old Dominion" yielded her assent, he, with sixty-five other citizens, signed an agreement "to be faithful to the Commons of England without king or House of Lords." He was successively a member of the House of Burgesses, of the Upper House, a commissioner for Kent County, clerk of the Board of Commissioners, and commissioner for a second term; he was also a captain in the frequent and troublesome Indian wars of that time. His oldest son, Robert (1658-1728), moved from the island and settled on Broadnax Creek. After the English Revolution of 1688, and the establishment of the Church of England in Maryland, he was active in organizing the parish of St. Paul's, and afterward in building the church of the same name, whose venerable walls, now over two hundred years old, still bear a memorial slab, which attests the regard of his people. His wife, Mary Harris, was a sister of Colonel James Harris, and their oldest son was Robert, the third of the name (1688-1745). He was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1722. He married Ann Ringold, and through their youngest son, Hezekiah, came James Dunn (1756-1810), who was a soldier of the Revolution from 1776 to the end of the struggle, and attained the rank of lieutenant in the Continental army. His wife was Sarah Hodges, who died in her twenty-eighth year, leaving two daughters and an only son, James (1785-1858). On the death of his mother, this boy, then three years old, was cared for by his grandfather, Hezekiah, and also by his paternal uncle, Samuel, who afterward adopted him as his son.

From the beginning of the eighteenth century a stream of

emigrants had set from Maryland toward North Carolina, which brought here such distinguished families as the Dillahuntys, the Veazeys, the Dorseys, the Brices and the Caswells. Samuel Dunn caught the spirit, and in 1796 came over and settled in Duplin County. He was a man of large wealth and high culture, having been educated in Dublin, and possessed the finest library in all that section. The lad James grew to be a prominent man in his section, and was for several years colonel of the militia of that county. He married Ann Hurst, and had five children born to him, of whom the second was Frances, born 1811. She was intellectual and womanly, was possessed of an unfailing fund of cheerfulness, and was singularly beautiful, even in old age. At twenty she was married to young Dr. George Hufham, who had boarded at her father's home while attending Green Academy, two miles away. The fruits of this union were six sons and three daughters, and the second child was James Dunn, the subject of this sketch, who was born in the town of Faison, Duplin County, May 26, 1834. The child was so delicate that it was deemed inadvisable to permit his indulgence in the out-door sports common among boys at that time. Had he been born fifty years later he would doubtless have been put through the daily evolutions of a gymnasium and made to take regular open-air exercise. But in his case it was considered the proper thing to keep him pretty closely indoors; so that, whether by choice or compulsion, the child gave his chief attention to books. The gymnasium process would doubtless have produced a finer animal, but it may be questioned whether much would not have been lost of the literary culture and scholarly instincts of later years. He does not remember when he could not read nor how he learned to do so. And think of the books he read while still under seven years of age: "Thaddeus of Warsaw," "Children of the Abbey," "Scottish Chiefs," Robinson's "Charles V.," and Hume's "History of England." He continued through life the habit then formed of devouring every worthy book or magazine within reach. But he tells us that the two books which had most to do in fitting him for his life work were Butler's "Analogy" and Whatley's Rhetoric. It was

probably in these early years that he acquired the remarkable power by which he can run his eye down the center of a page and not only grasp and retain the thoughts of the writer, but create new thoughts of his own at the same time. In this manner he is able to master in a few hours a book that would require days of an ordinary reader, a gift possessed by no other man within this writer's knowledge save Dr. C. H. Toy, head of the Department of Oriental Languages in Harvard.

Dr. Hufham had the good fortune to be reared on a farm, the source of much, if not most, of America's greatness. After a preparatory course in Green Academy at Kenansville, he entered Wake Forest College, from which he graduated with distinction in 1856. While a student there, he made public profession of a personal faith in Christ in 1854, and under the ministry of that prince of preachers, William M. Wingate. He says that while his youthful life had been as clean as a girl's, he knew nothing about saving faith, having really become a self-righteous Pharisee. But the first sermon he ever heard from Dr. Wingate sent him to his room, a convicted rebel against God, and that night, in the privacy of his dormitory, there entered into his soul the light of a new life. Shortly afterward there came upon him the distinct impression that he must preach the Gospel. This weighty question was decided early in the following year, and his first sermon was delivered in the college chapel, from the text, "He that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God." He was regularly ordained to the Gospel ministry at Beulah Church, Sampson County, in 1857, and soon afterward offered himself for the foreign mission field, but was declined by the board on account of his delicate health. In December of the previous year he had taken charge as pastor of Bear Marsh Church in Duplin County, serving it two Sundays a month. The rest of his time was spent in exploring the destitute field in Jones, Onslow, Craven, Wayne and Lenoir, and in more effectively organizing the association. He was so successful in this, he tells us, that in the spring, "when I moved to Raleigh, the Union Association, since divided

into several smaller bodies, led the whole State in every line of Christian work." His removal to Raleigh occurred in the spring of 1861, and was for the purpose of becoming editor of the *Biblical Recorder*. This new position brought him prominently before the public, and at the same time revealed his quality as a speaker and writer; so that from that time his services in both capacities were in frequent demand. He occupied the editor's sanctum until 1867, shaping the paper's policy through those dreadful years of war and the still darker years that immediately followed. His editorials during this period evince thorough familiarity with the current events of those times, and also a comprehensive and intelligent grasp of the great historical movements then in progress. And most of all do they breathe a fervid patriotism and profound sympathy for the woes of his people.

In July, 1863, he was happily married to Miss Marianna Faison, daughter of Thomas I. Faison, Esq., of Sampson County. Mr. Faison was a man of wealth and great popularity. For many years he was clerk of the County Court; he was a member of the constitutional convention of 1865 at the time of his death. His paternal and maternal grandfathers, James Faison and Curtis Ivey, were in the Continental army during the Revolutionary War, and the latter was an officer in one of the North Carolina regiments. The Faison family settled in Charles parish, York County, Virginia, before 1652. In 1754 James Faison removed to Northampton County, North Carolina, and received a grant of land from the Earl of Granville. In 1773 three of his sons moved to Duplin County and became the progenitors of a large and influential family there.

Mrs. Hufham was a lady of rare culture and refinement. She was educated at Mrs. English's celebrated Episcopalian School for Women in Georgetown, District of Columbia, and also in a seminary in Richmond, then conducted by Dr. Moses D. Hoge. She was singularly gentle and beautiful in spirit, and proved herself a most devoted wife and mother. Amid many physical infirmities, she spent herself freely for her husband and children until the end came in February, 1880.

Dr. Hufham found time amid his editorial duties to write and publish in 1866 his first and only book, a memoir of John L. Pritchard. Mr. Pritchard, a man of saintly character, excellent wisdom and heroic spirit, had been pastor of the First Baptist Church in Wilmington when the yellow fever scourge swept that city in 1862, and had stood bravely at his post, meeting death while ministering to his people. The author had known and admired the martyr, and gave a sympathetic and charming narrative of his life and labors.

In 1867 he sold the *Recorder* to J. H. Mills, and took charge of Sawyer's Creek Church in Camden County, then a large and wealthy congregation. During this pastorate he did evangelistic work from Elizabeth City to Powell's Point, on Currituck Sound, and thence up nearly to Norfolk. From this field he was called to be corresponding secretary of the Baptist State Convention in 1870, a position of great influence and responsibility. He gave himself to this task with energy, tact and ability, seeking to develop the benevolence of the churches and to secure more general and harmonious co-operation of the associations with the State convention. His work here was largely inspirational; he was compelled to toil through the disastrous panic of 1873, and his cause suffered from the financial depression which followed. After four years of this work he returned to the *Recorder*, associating himself with Professor A. F. Redd, and later with Dr. C. T. Bailey, until 1877. During this period a little band from the First Baptist Church started a Sunday-school mission on Swain Street, and a few months later organized themselves, ten in number, into the Second Baptist Church, and called Dr. Hufham to be their pastor, a position which he held until he left the city for another field in 1877. This church is now the Baptist Tabernacle of Raleigh. In that year he took the field as financial agent for Wake Forest College for a few months. He gave up this work at the close of the year to take charge as pastor of the Scotland Neck Church, and entered upon his new duties early in the year 1878. This church was then comparatively feeble and almost wholly without organization. The pastor gave it three Sundays a month

for two years, and devoted the other Sunday to mission work in Williamston and Hamilton.

It may safely be said that the fourteen years spent in Scotland Neck covered the most fruitful period of Dr. Hufham's life. While nominally pastor of one church, for most of this time his services were given largely to mission work. On the border of a large section, including the counties of Halifax, Martin, Edgecombe, Washington, Pitt and Beaufort, in which the churches of his faith were exceedingly few and scarcely more than mission stations, he found that popular sentiment was well-nigh solidly against his own creed or stolidly indifferent. He at once devoted himself ardently to redeem this territory. The harvest was swift and generous. The close of his Scotland Neck pastorate saw about all these feeble organizations grown into self-supporting and vigorous churches, 17 new churches constituted, 24 meeting-houses erected and 4 others reconstructed. In the meantime, his own church had become one of the most influential in the State. This marvellous development was the result of a systematic campaign. In 1878 the Tar River Association, of which Scotland Neck Church was a member, was itself maintaining a precarious existence, having recently wavered on the verge of practically adopting the faith of the Anti-Missionary, or "Old-Side" Baptists. But at its session that year, under Dr. Hufham's leadership, and mainly through his efforts, a fund of \$1500 was raised for mission work in its borders; and at each annual session of the body since that time amounts varying from \$1200 to \$2000 have been raised for the same purpose.

In the church at Scotland Neck, as he himself has said, he had the good fortune to find in Mr. Noah Biggs a fellow-laborer, who really became his complement. Hufham, the man of letters and diplomacy, the gifted speaker and tactful leader, mated with Biggs, the trained and successful business man, sagacious organizer and generous giver! Little wonder at the results.

The Baptist Orphanage probably owes its existence to these two men. First proposed in public print by Dr. R. D. Fleming of Warrenton, at the instance of Dr. W. R. Gwaltney, now of

Hickory, the project was championed by Hufham before his association and later before the Baptist State Convention in Raleigh in 1884. In both bodies it met a warm and determined opposition, and was finally rejected by the convention. When the adverse vote was announced in that body, Hufham arose, announced that there was going to be a Baptist Orphanage founded "in spite of the devil and the Baptist State Convention," and invited all in sympathy with the enterprise to meet him at the Second Baptist Church that afternoon. This meeting was held, the project was further discussed, and at a subsequent meeting in the pastor's study of the First Baptist Church after supper that evening, with thirteen persons present, the Baptist Orphanage Association was organized, and John H. Mills was elected manager. But some were skeptical as to the movement, others were hostile, and many others indifferent; so that it languished for several months, and seemed doomed to an early death. In February of the following year Mr. Mills visited Scotland Neck, thoroughly discouraged. He had received up to that time only one contribution for the enterprise for a sum larger than \$1, had been told everywhere that the orphanage project was a failure, and had found little but discouragement from the papers of the time. But he made an address to a little company gathered on a sleety Sunday morning in the Baptist Church in Scotland Neck, and secured \$50 for the orphanage. Next morning Mr. Biggs became responsible for \$1250, and Mr. John Watson, a plain farmer, but a large-hearted citizen of Warren County, in answer to a telegram, pledged \$1250 more. This inspired the manager, stirred the Baptists of the State, and no doubt saved the orphanage.

In the fall of 1891 Dr. Hufham resigned the church in Scotland Neck and accepted the call of the little church in Tarboro, a feeble band struggling under a debt of \$6000 on their house of worship. Mr. O. C. Farrar had built their house, and had meant to present them the mortgage on the day of dedication, but was suddenly removed by death and thus prevented from accomplishing his generous purpose. Dr. Hufham at once set about cancelling the debt, and by the spring of 1894 had accomplished the

task. He then took charge of the church at Shelby, and at the end of his three years of service there entered upon his last pastorate in Henderson in 1897, where he remained six years. While in Henderson he undertook the task of getting together material for a history of the Baptists of North Carolina, and up to the present time he has published some most valuable matter in the "Baptist Historical Papers." It is to be hoped that life and strength may be spared him to extend his work in this direction and put the results of his labors into permanent shape.

Dr. Hufham has been in the public eye for nearly fifty years, and during this period has borne a prominent part in every important enterprise of his own denomination. Coming to the convention in the days of Wingate and Hooper and McDaniel and Skinner, he sprang at once into the front of the rank of the leaders. His people were quick to recognize his gifts, and have used him freely throughout his long term of service. He was first made secretary of the convention and then corresponding secretary; has been for many years a member of the Board of Trustees of Wake Forest College and of the Board of Missions, and was one of the original trustees of the orphanage, and also of the Baptist University for Women. Bred to the refinements and traditions of a cultured plantation home in North Carolina, he is a product of the old Southern life, and its ancient ideals are among his most sacred memories. He is naturally amiable, ambitious, ardent, quick witted, hot blooded, and with oceans of wrath. Add to these qualities tact, intellectual force, aggressiveness, personal magnetism and oratory, and you have an inevitable leader of men. As a speaker, the sources of his power are numerous and varied. In addition to wide reading, fine culture, acute perceptivity and rich mental endowments, he has the oratorical temperament, poetic insight and vivid imagination. His enunciation is perfect, each syllable falling from his lips as perfectly shaped as if it had been cast in a die. His voice, though slightly nasal, is attractive and penetrating. It readily adapts itself to his changing moods, and storms or trembles with equal ease and effectiveness. He is also a master of humor and pathos. In preparing for the platform,

he seems to rely mainly on general equipment and the occasion. Like the late W. H. Kitchen, he cannot write a speech in cold blood. "If you wish to see Phillips at his best," says Curran, "shake him, and there will flow a shower of blossoms that a century will not reproduce;" and much the same may be said of Dr. Hufham.

He belongs distinctively to the South, and is suspicious of all things Northern. He belongs still more distinctively to North Carolina, and is keenly interested in all matters that affect the honor of her record or her future welfare. For many years he has associated freely with her leading citizens and statesmen; he is an adept in the history of his State, and is now, by appointment of Governor Aycock, serving on the historical commission.

During his whole public career, especially since the Civil War, he has taken a lively interest in politics; and with such heredity, environment and temperament, he is of necessity an outspoken, uncompromising Democrat. While never hesitating to advocate Democratic policies, he has never thereby soiled his garments nor debauched his pulpit. But he has been free to criticise his party leaders whenever, in his judgment, they laid themselves open to censure. A few years since, after the legislature had decided to submit a certain important constitutional amendment to the popular vote, a committee of that body reported favorably a measure which he considered a fraud upon his people. He at once wrote the chairman of this committee, saying, "If that fraud is perpetrated upon our people, I will canvass the State against the amendment." The bill was withdrawn.

Six children have been born to him, two sons and two daughters still surviving: Mrs. J. R. Singleton of Franklin, Virginia; Thomas McDowell Hufham, Esq., a prominent lawyer and politician in Hickory, North Carolina; James Dunn Hufham, now in the railroad service; and Mary Faison Hufham, one of the teachers in Converse College.

On retiring from the Henderson pastorate, Dr. Hufham announced that his public work was ended. He is spending his declining years partly with his oldest daughter, Mrs. Singleton, and partly with his friends in Scotland Neck. *R. T. Vann.*



ANDREW JOYNER



ANDREW JOYNER, an officer of United States volunteers in the War of 1812-15, and distinguished also as a legislator and man of affairs, was born in the county of Halifax on the 5th of November, 1786.

Colonel Joyner was the son of Henry Joyner and his wife, Menie Troughton. This Henry Joyner was son of Robert Joyner, a gentleman of English descent.

When the second war with Great Britain came on, Mr. Joyner became an officer of the United States volunteers detached from the militia of North Carolina. In the first division, under Major-General Thomas Brown, and in the brigade commanded by Brigadier-General Thomas Davis, was the Third North Carolina Regiment of United States Volunteers, whose field officers were as follows: Jeremiah Slade, lieutenant-colonel, commandant; James J. Hill, first major; and Andrew Joyner, second major. The troops commanded by these officers were raised in accordance with a proclamation by the President of the United States under an act of Congress, April 10, 1812. In August, 1814, another division of United States volunteers was raised in North Carolina, with Major-General Montfort Stokes in command and Jeremiah Slade and Jesse A. Pearson as brigadier-generals. To serve in this division, Major Joyner was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel and assigned to the first regiment, whose field officers were

Duncan McDonald, lieutenant-colonel, commandant; Andrew Joyner, lieutenant-colonel; Joseph F. Dickinson, first major; and John C. Green, second major.

The above facts are gathered from the official roster first published at Raleigh in 1851, and reprinted there in 1873.

Before the war closed, the First Regiment was ordered to Norfolk, Virginia, when that place was threatened by the British in September, 1814. In the *Raleigh Register* of October 14, 1814, is an item giving the names of officers (including Lieutenant-Colonel Joyner) who went on this expedition. As the article is of some historical value, we reproduce it.

"The following officers are appointed to command the First Regiment of the detached militia of this State, ordered for the defence of Norfolk: Colonel commandant, Duncan McDonald; lieutenant-colonel, Andrew Joyner; first major, Joseph F. Dickinson; second major, John C. Greene; captains, Henry Bryan, John Bell, James Iredell, Jephtha A. Barnes, John Greene, Isaac Watkins, John G. Inge, John L. Laughter, Micajah Pettaway, John F. Walker; first lieutenants, Thomas I. Walton, Lewis S. Muse, Lemuel Creecy, Henry G. Williams, Willis Whitaker, Joseph Vick, Willis Johnson, William P. Williams, William Roulhac, Darius Parker; second lieutenants, David H. Bryan, William H. Fowler, Thomas Morgan, John Bradford, Josiah Barbee, Jesse Tharp, James Falkner, William Davis, G. I. Killabrew, Alfred M. Gatlin; third lieutenants, B. F. Halsey, Zenas O'Kelly, Gavin Hogg, William Creecy, J. Tyrrell, Benjamin Hill, William Nalling, T. H. Person, John Parker, Sterling Finney; ensigns, Hardy Pool, N. Rand, William Darlet, John Southerland, John W. Lee, Willie Ricks, John G. Hart, Joseph J. W. Cooke, James Draughan, W. B. Martin."

In giving this list of officers the old newspaper adds:

"The above regiment of detached militia marched to Norfolk from Gates Court House not many days ago, and have no doubt reached that place."

The North Carolina troops remained in the vicinity of Norfolk for about four months, and were ordered home about the time that peace was proclaimed. Though not called into battle, a terrible fatality prevailed among these troops in consequence of an epidemic, which the papers of that day described as "the camp

plague," but its exact nature is unknown to the writer. While the scourge raged, Colonel Joyner was indefatigable in his attention to the stricken soldiers, and so won their love by his faithful ministrations that when he re-entered State politics after the war, it was said that no veteran of the Norfolk expedition was ever known to cast a vote against him.

The military duties of Colonel Joyner, in the first part of the war, at least, do not seem to have been very exacting, for he found time to take some part in the political activities of that day. In the year preceding the war, 1811, he had been elected to represent Martin County in the North Carolina House of Commons, and was also a member at the sessions of 1812 and 1813. About the year 1817 he removed to the county of Halifax, and in 1835 was elected to the State Senate from that county. The General Assembly of 1835 was the last session held under the old State constitution, which provided that sessions should be held annually, and the Assembly of 1836 was the first under the amendment directing it to convene biennially. Colonel Joyner was State senator in 1836, and from that time up to and including the session of 1852 no legislature ever convened in which he was not a member of the Senate from Halifax. At the sessions of 1838, 1840 and 1846 he was speaker of that body, his last service as speaker being at a time when the United States was at war with Mexico.

In politics Colonel Joyner was a Whig, but more than once he was sent to the Senate by the unanimous vote of his county, so great was the confidence reposed in him by men of all political creeds. When the office of justice of the peace was a post of honor with no pecuniary advantages, he filled that station for many years. Not only officially, but also in his personal capacity, he was often called upon by his neighbors to settle their disputes. The people had such reliance on his fairness, justness and integrity that they submitted their differences to his good judgment, and so often were lawsuits avoided by arbitration through his instrumentality that for many years after he had ceased to be a magistrate his home near Weldon was often laughingly referred to by the neighbors as "Colonel Joyner's Court of Equity."

Colonel Joyner was a man of splendid business ability, in the course of time accumulating a large fortune, and his advice often proved profitable to others in the matter of investments. He was a strong advocate of internal improvements, and in 1849, when a senator, he voted for the improvement of Cape Fear and Deep rivers, for the Fayetteville and Salem Railroad and for the North Carolina Railroad. He also voted for the measures to improve the schools and to establish State charities. In the same year he was one of those issuing a call for a convention of the Albemarle section to memorialize the government with a view to having Nag's Head Inlet and other waterways reopened.

In response to this call, a large gathering of representative men of Eastern North Carolina was held in the Methodist Church at Plymouth, in Washington County, on March 18, 1850, and over this meeting Colonel Joyner presided. Among the well-known men of that day who addressed this meeting were Josiah Collins of Chowan, General J. C. B. Ehringhaus of Pasquotank, Patrick Henry Winston of Bertie, Dr. Samuel J. Wheeler of Hertford, Thomas F. Jones of Perquimans and William B. Shepard of Pasquotank.

Colonel Joyner was also largely interested in the Roanoke Navigation Company, and president of that corporation. In the early railway ventures of North Carolina he invested largely, and for some years was president of the old Weldon and Portsmouth Railroad Company. The cause of education also had in him an enthusiastic advocate, and for twenty years, from 1836 until 1856, he was a member of the Board of Trustees of the University of North Carolina.

During the entire time he was serving as president of the railroad company, Colonel Joyner was never known to allow one of his children to ride on a pass.

Colonel Joyner was twice married, but left no issue by his second wife, Mrs. Sarah Wales Burton, widow of Governor Hutchins G. Burton and daughter of the great Revolutionary statesman, Willie Jones of Halifax. The first wife of Colonel Joyner was Temperance Williams, daughter of Colonel William Williams, who was

a noted Revolutionary patriot of Martin County. This Colonel Williams is often confused with Captain William Williams of the Continental Line, who died at Hillsboro in 1787. By his marriage with Miss Williams, Colonel Joyner has numerous descendants. His children were: Elizabeth, who married the Rev. Robert O. Burton and was mother (among other children) of Robert O. Burton, a noted North Carolina lawyer, who died at Raleigh in 1900; Henry, who became a physician and married Ann Pope and left descendants; Martha Williams, who married (first) Colonel Archibald Alexander Austin, and (second) Francis P. Haywood, leaving descendants by both; Temperance, who married Dr. Willie Jones Eppes of Virginia and left descendants. This Dr. Eppes was a son of John Wayles Eppes, a distinguished member of Congress of Virginia, and his wife, Patsey Jones, a daughter of Willie Jones. The first wife of John Wayles Eppes was a daughter of Thomas Jefferson. Mary Camilla, who married William A. Daniel (son of Judge Daniel of the North Carolina Supreme Court) and left issue.

The death of Colonel Joyner occurred on the 20th of September, 1856, and he is buried at Poplar Grove, his country seat, near Weldon.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.





JAMES KENAN

IT would be difficult to adequately estimate the part borne by the Scottish race in developing North Carolina. The Scotch settlers in this colony were chiefly included within three settlements, and racially there were two divisions. On the upper Cape Fear River were the Highland Scotch, including many survivors of Culloden. In the county of Mecklenburg, and throughout the Piedmont section in general, were the descendants of men who had gone from the lowlands of Scotland to Ireland, and these came to North Carolina after a stay in Pennsylvania, Maryland and other Northern colonies. This latter people are well described by a compound word of comparatively recent origin—Scotch-Irish.

The Scotch-Irish of Mecklenburg and its vicinity were largely settled on immense tracts of land granted by the Crown to George Augustus Selwyn and Henry McCulloh, the latter's share being later inherited by his son, Henry Eustace McCulloh. These three land magnates not only had grants in and around Mecklenburg, but owned many square miles in the upper part of the sea-coast county of New Hanover, that territory now covered by the counties of Duplin, Sampson, etc., Duplin being erected out of part of New Hanover in 1749 and Sampson out of a part of Duplin in 1784. The settlers on these latter grants were almost entirely of the

same Scotch-Irish origin, but came directly to North Carolina from Ireland, being thus unlike their western brethren, who had first sojourned in other colonies. Among the Scotch-Irish settlers in that part of New Hanover which later became Duplin was Thomas Kenan, who, with the Holmeses, Owens and Walkers, came to North Carolina along with Colonel Sampson about 1735 and located near Sarecta, on the upper waters of the North East River. His wife was Elizabeth Johnston, and bore him nine children, five sons and four daughters. The eldest son was James Kenan, the subject of the present sketch.

The date of his birth was September 23, 1740. He was a man of note in his day, representing Duplin County in the Assembly prior to the Revolution, and filling other positions of honor and trust under the Colonial Government. So closely identified with the history of Duplin has his family been that its county seat is called Kenansville. This village has for many years been an educational center of that portion of the Cape Fear section, being the location of the famous Grove Academy, established long before the Revolution. Always animated by a high patriotism, and closely associated with the gentlemen of the Cape Fear, when the troubles with the mother country began, James Kenan, then in the prime of manhood, played a man's part in public affairs. He represented his people in the first and succeeding Provincial Congress, and in those days of doubt wielded a strong influence toward nourishing a purpose to strike for independence. Recognizing his patriotic ardor and resolution, on September 9th the Congress at Hillsboro elected him colonel of North Carolina militia for the county of Duplin and also a member of the Committee of Safety for the district of Wilmington, Duplin County forming a part of that district. On the 27th of February, 1776, the battle of Moore's Creek Bridge was fought in what is now the county of Pender, but then in New Hanover County. In the campaign leading up to this glorious American victory Colonel Kenan took an active part, repairing at the head of 200 men to the camp of Colonel James Moore at Rockfish. In the battle, though upward of thirty Tories were killed and mortally wounded, only one

soldier on the American side was slain, and he was private John Grady, one of the Duplin volunteers under Colonel Kenan. An illustrated account of the battle of Moore's Creek, by Professor M. C. S. Noble of the University of North Carolina, will be found in the *North Carolina Booklet* for March, 1904.

On the 19th of April, 1776, the Provincial Congress of North Carolina at Halifax appointed Colonel Kenan and his brother-in-law, Richard Clinton of Duplin, on a State committee charged with the duty of procuring arms and ammunition for the Continental army. When another Provincial Congress held a meeting at Halifax (November-December, 1776), Colonel Kenan was a delegate therein, and on December 23d, when the civil courts were again established, that body elected him a justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions for the county of Duplin. In addition to being a member of the Committee of Safety for the district of Wilmington, he was also a member of the County Committee for Duplin, and often served as chairman of the latter body. An "oath of allegiance and abjuration" was prescribed by the General Assembly at New-Bern on the 15th of November, 1777, and among the signers of this document in Duplin County we find the names of both James Kenan and his brother Michael, who afterward moved to Georgia.

On the adoption of the State constitution, Colonel Kenan became the first State senator from Duplin County, and for more than ten terms continued to represent his county in that body. His last appearance as senator was at the session of 1793.

The Moore's Creek campaign was only the beginning of the military career of Colonel Kenan, for his services were often in demand during the course of the war.

In March, 1780, when the British invaded South Carolina, he was in correspondence with General Richard Caswell, and his letters inform that officer of the preparations then being made in Duplin to join the expedition into South Carolina. Affairs were gloomy at that time, and it took an officer of some determination to raise the necessary quota. In a letter dated March 9th, Kenan writes Caswell: "My militia comes in slow. A number, I am told,

swear they will not go; those I will send after and bring in, if possible."

In the fall of 1780 we find the Board of War applying to Colonel Kenan with the hope of securing army supplies from Duplin. This appeal to him says: "From your known zeal and activity in the service of your country, your undertaking this service will be very agreeable to the board."

The British, under Colonel Craig, seized Wilmington in January, 1781, and the Tories became very active, and the patriot leaders, while not dismayed, were hard beset with difficulties. That region was denuded of arms, while the Tory bands were plentifully supplied by the British. In April, Cornwallis marched through Duplin on his route to Virginia, and the militia were powerless to oppose his trained forces. General Lillington retired before him to Kinston, and then ordered the militia to disperse temporarily to their homes. The country was overrun by squads of troopers, and the Whig citizens were greatly harrassed. After that, the Whigs being suppressed, the Tories were in the ascendant. They seized the Whig leaders and carried them off as prisoners to Wilmington, and measurably were in control. Throughout the entire summer Colonel Kenan was putting forth his best efforts to embody his men again and to equip them for service against the enemy. In July the British advanced in large force, and Colonel Kenan threw himself in their front. On the 2d of August his little army of some 300 men was attacked by the enemy at Rockfish and dispersed. According to the colonel's own account, the militia gave way after a few rounds had been fired, and all efforts by the officers to rally them were futile.

The British column then continued its expedition, and, despite all resistance, occupied New-Bern. Toward the close of August, however, these marauders evacuated that town and returned toward Wilmington. In their foray they seized many negroes and destroyed many farms. In retaliation, the Whigs devastated the plantations of their Tory neighbors, and a reign of terror and relentless warfare was inaugurated. A letter written by one

of the patriots, W. Dickson of Duplin, in 1784, gives this account:

"At length we got collected about 400 men under Colonel Kenan in Duplin, and about 200 under Colonel Brown in Bladen, the adjacent county. Colonel Kenan's militia had not made a stand more than ten days when Major Craig marched his main force, with field pieces, defeated and drove us out of our works, and made some of our men prisoners (here I narrowly escaped being taken or cut down by the dragoons). The enemy stayed several days in Duplin County (this being the first week in August, 1781). The Royalists gathered together very fast, and we were now reduced again to the utmost extremity. The enemy were now more cruel to the distressed inhabitants than Cornwallis's army had been before. Some men collected and formed a little flying camp and moved near the enemy's lines and made frequent sallies on their rear flanks, while others fled from their homes and kept out of the enemy's reach. Major Craig marched from Duplin to New-Bern, plundered the town, destroyed the public stores, and then immediately marched back to Wilmington to secure the garrison.

"The Loyalists, or Tories, in Duplin and other counties, now thinking the day entirely their own, became more insolent than ever; but Craig having again returned to Wilmington, the Whigs again resumed their courage and determined to be revenged on the Loyalists, our neighbors, or hazard all; accordingly, we collected about eighty light horsemen and equipped them as well as we could, marched straight into the neighborhood where the Tories were embodied, surprised them; they fled, our men pursued them, cut many of them to pieces, took several and put them instantly to death. This action struck such terror on the Tories in our county that they never attempted to embody again, and many of them in a short time came in and submitted, and were pardoned (I was not in this action nor any afterward during this whole season of the war). I never received a wound but one, which was a shot through my right leg, though I had three narrow escapes when I was in danger of being killed or taken."

On March 24, 1781, Colonel Kenan was president of a court martial convened for the trial of an officer who had disobeyed the orders of General Lillington and committed other offenses. The judge advocate of this court was Colonel Alfred Moore, afterward a justice of the United States Supreme Court. When Major Craig heard of the surrender of Cornwallis, General Rutherford being then near Wilmington, the British hastily left the Cape Fear River, but the Tories continued to give trouble, and Colonel

Kenan was in active military service as late as the spring of 1782, at which time he aided in operations against a large number of Tories who had gathered on Waccamaw River and were committing depredations in New Hanover, Bladen and adjoining counties, also threatening to plunder the town of Wilmington. General Lillington having died in April, 1785, on December 28, 1785, Colonel Kenan was elected brigadier-general of North Carolina for the district of Wilmington. In 1790 he was elected a member of the Board of Trustees of the University of North Carolina, and served as such until 1799. He belonged to the Masonic fraternity, and was Worshipful Master of St. John's Lodge, No. 13, of Duplin County.

The wife of General James Kenan was Sally Love. To their union were born eight children, of whom Thomas Kenan was the eldest.

Thomas Kenan was born in 1771. After representing Duplin County in both Houses of the General Assembly of North Carolina, he served three terms as a member of Congress (December 2, 1805, to March 3, 1811), and removed in 1833 to Alabama, where he died October 22, 1843, on his plantation near Selma. He married Mary Rand of Wake County, North Carolina. His eldest son, Owen Rand Kenan, remained in North Carolina and was much esteemed in his generation, was often a member of the Assembly, and during the Civil War represented his district in the Confederate States Congress. He was a warm Confederate, and sought to sustain all those measures which tended to strengthen the hands of the Government and secure the independence of the Southern people. He despised the casuistry of those who, pretending to be for the independence of the South, nevertheless lost no opportunity to obstruct the operations of the government, making futile the great loss of life and heroism and suffering of our soldiers in the field. He married Sarah Rebecca Graham, and, besides an unmarried daughter, left three sons—Colonel Thomas S. Kenan, Captain James Graham Kenan and Adjutant William Rand Kenan, all officers of the Forty-third North Carolina Regiment in the Confederate army.

The death of General James Kenan occurred on the 23d of May, 1810, and is mentioned in the Raleigh *Minerva* of May 31st as follows:

"Died: On Friday last, at his seat in Duplin County, after a long and painful indisposition, General James Kenan, a worthy, respectable citizen and aged patriot, who bore an honorable station and useful part in the Revolutionary War."

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.
S. A. Ashe.



of the Confederate Congress during the troublous period of the war. Owen R. Kenan was a man of very high character, devoted in his friendships, kindly in his disposition, social and generous, a man of wisdom and of sound judgment. He was a planter, and being successful in his planting operations, his house was the abode of hospitality, over which his wife, Sarah Graham Kenan, presided with prudent economy while rearing her children and fitting them for the duties of life.

After a preparatory course at the "Old Grove Academy" at Kenansville, and a year passed at the Central Military Institute at Selma, Alabama, Thomas S. Kenan completed the freshman course at Wake Forest College in June, 1854, and then entered the sophomore class at the University of North Carolina, where he graduated in 1857. Having chosen to seek a professional career, he passed the next two years studying law with Judge Pearson at Richmond Hill, and having received his license, entered on the practice of the law at Kenansville in 1860. He had obtained from the University the degree of A.B. on graduating, and the next year his alma mater conferred on him the degree of A.M. Hardly had he begun to practice his profession, however, before public affairs called him to another field.

There had been formed in Duplin, in 1859, a military company, the "Duplin Rifles," and in April, 1861, this company, having volunteered for a year under Thomas S. Kenan as its captain, was assigned to the First, or Bethel, Regiment, and afterward to the Second Regiment, and continued to serve in Virginia. At the expiration of the period of enlistment, the company was reorganized and assigned to the Forty-third Regiment, of which he became lieutenant-colonel. He was then elected colonel of the Thirty-eighth Regiment upon its reorganization, but declining that office, and preferring to remain with the Forty-third, he was elected its colonel on April 24, 1862.

He had already served a year in Virginia, and after some short service on the coast of North Carolina, the Forty-third was assigned to Daniel's Brigade, and was engaged in the operations before Richmond. In the following winter the Forty-third was

again in North Carolina until it joined General Lee, who was then preparing for the Gettysburg campaign, when it was assigned to Rode's Division, and it carried the flag to Carlisle, Pennsylvania. Returning to Gettysburg on the 1st of July, Colonel Kenan was in the hard fighting on Seminary Ridge on that day, and was under fire all the next day, his regiment supporting a battery of artillery on Seminary Ridge; and on the 3d he participated in the desperate assault on Culp's Hill. Leading a charge, he fell, severely wounded, and while being borne to the rear in the ambulance train the next day he was captured and confined on Johnson's Island, a prisoner of war, until March, 1865, when he was paroled, together with a number of other prisoners, but was never exchanged.

Returning home, he was elected by his county friends, before the days of Reconstruction, to the legislatures of 1865-66 and 1866-67, and he participated in passing the wise and prudent legislation of those sessions which was intended to conform State affairs to the changed conditions that had resulted from the disasters of the war. In 1868, after the negroes had been made voters, he made a gallant but unsuccessful campaign for Congress as a Democratic candidate. He moved to Wilson in 1869, and from 1872 to 1876 he served as mayor of that town; and in the latter year he was nominated by the Democrats for the position of attorney-general of the State. That was the great campaign in which Governor Vance and all the strong men of the Democratic Party made every effort to rescue North Carolina from the dominion of the Republicans; and Colonel Kenan performed his part, making an extended canvass and contributing by his unremitting exertions to the general result. The Democrats gained an overwhelming victory, and the next January he entered upon the duties of his important office, and served so acceptably that he was re-elected in 1880. For eight years he was attorney-general, and also the reporter of the Supreme Court decisions, and in both capacities he gave great satisfaction. About a year after the expiration of his term, the office of clerk to the Supreme Court becoming vacant, he was selected by the court as its clerk, for his long attendance on that court caused him to be intimately

known by all the judges, who had come to admire and greatly esteem him. Courteous, intelligent, a master of the details of his office, he has continued since 1886 to give the highest satisfaction in discharging the important duties of his position.

He has found great pleasure in promoting the success of his alma mater, and for many years has been a trustee of the University and president of its alumni association. He is one of the liberal contributors of that body to improvements in buildings, etc., of that institution, and also to the establishment and maintenance of the schools at Kenansville, his native town; member of the Executive Committee of the Confederate Memorial Association, a corporation operating under the auspices of the United Confederate Veterans. The authorities of the "University College of Medicine," Richmond, Virginia, upon its reorganization, adopted the policy of appointing some of its trustees from States other than Virginia (the majority, however, residing in Richmond), and Thomas S. Kenan and Rev. Egbert Smith (of Greensboro) were selected from North Carolina. Governor Jennings of Florida and Bishop Peterkin of West Virginia were also of this class of trustees.

He has held high office in the Masonic order, and was a director of the Orphan Asylum at Oxford established by that fraternity, and takes a great interest in that institution of charity. He has also manifested laudable feeling in the fortunes of the old veterans, and has ever exerted himself for their benefit, both in the matter of pensions and having suitable provision made for them in the Soldiers' Home; he has also been active in securing the State publication of the records of the war, which reflect so much credit on the soldiers and the people of North Carolina.

On many interesting occasions he has served in official capacities, his well-known taste, judgment, gallantry and elegant carriage and deportment, no less than his honorable public services and distinguished appearance, leading to his selection for such positions, which he always adorns. Indeed, on nearly every occasion that appeals to patriotism or that affects the welfare of the State or of society he is consulted as one whose personal char-

acter, wide acquaintance and public services give an assurance of success to whatever he undertakes.

During the course of his long career he has made many notable addresses, and has made several interesting publications, among them being an account of his experience as a prisoner of war and a brief history of his regiment, in which he has written with that modesty which is innate in his nature. He has also made contributions toward securing the publication of interesting historical matter relating to early times in his native county of Duplin.

On the death of Hamilton C. Jones, in 1904, creating a vacancy in the position of president of the State Bar Association, Colonel Kenan was chosen to that post of honor by his professional brethren in North Carolina.

On the 20th of May, 1868, Colonel Kenan married Miss Sallie Dortch, a daughter of the late Dr. Lewis Dortch of Edgecombe County, and their home in Raleigh has long been the center of an elegant social circle.

S. A. Ashe.



The childhood and youth of the youngest brother, the subject of this sketch, were spent under the guiding hand of his honored father and the sweet influence of his gentle, Christian mother. He was prepared for college at the Old Grove Academy by Rev. Dr. James M. Sprunt, and under the happy conditions of home and school life were developed in him those sweet and gentle virtues which imparted grace and beauty to the high and noble qualities inherited from a long line of honored ancestors. At the age of fifteen, in the fall of 1860, he entered the State University, and there for three years pursued his studies; but when he had reached his eighteenth year, his two brothers having met the misfortunes of war and being then confined in the distant prison at Johnson's Island, he hastened to enroll himself as a private in the company to which they had belonged, the Duplin Rifles, being Company A of the Forty-third Regiment. Though a mere youth, Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis, then in command of the regiment, appointed him sergeant-major, and in June of 1864 he was promoted to second lieutenant and given command of the left wing of the corps of sharpshooters organized for the regiment, a position of honor won by his faithfulness and his courage, but which constantly brought him into peril. In the winter campaign of 1863 and 1864, the Forty-third Regiment served with General Hoke in Eastern North Carolina, and participated in the brilliant victory at Plymouth, and then in the eventful battle of Drury's Bluff; and after a continuous march of sixty miles the regiment reached Hanover Junction on the morning of the 23d of May, and again engaged the enemy. It participated in the subsequent encounters, and on the 13th of June Early's corps was transferred to Lynchburg, Virginia, and at once began its famous series of engagements with the enemy, in which the corps of sharpshooters particularly were engaged. On the 6th of July the corps crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown, and on the 10th moved toward Washington, arriving about noon of the 11th of July in front of Fort Stevens, and within sight of the dome of the Capitol of the United States. The sharpshooters advanced within 200 yards of the fort, and there, having entrenched themselves, remained, under a

severe shelling, until the afternoon of the 12th. That was as close to the person of President Lincoln as any Confederate soldier got during the period of the war, and Lieutenant Kenan was with his sharpshooters on the advance line. Within thirty days, the command of which his sharpshooters were a part had marched some 500 miles, had participated in not less than a dozen encounters and had defeated the enemy with severe losses. Returning to Virginia, another series of engagements followed, and in the battle of Charleston, on August 21, 1864, Lieutenant Kenan was wounded and for a time was disabled; but about the 1st of November he returned to duty, and was appointed adjutant of the regiment, and held that position until the close of the war. The Forty-third, with the residue of Ewell's corps of the army of Northern Virginia, returned to Petersburg the week before Christmas, and about the middle of March went into the trenches, where they remained until the evacuation, and Lieutenant Kenan underwent all the fearful experiences of the retreat to Appomattox Court House, and there he was one of the twenty-one of Company A then paroled. There were fifty-six on the roll of the company at the close of the war, thirty-five of whom were either imprisoned or on parole or on detail, and there was no deserter from the company during the entire war.

While a student at Chapel Hill, Mr. Kenan had become engaged to Miss Mary Hargrave, then residing there, and on the 28th of March, 1864, he was united in marriage to her. They had four children—Mary Lily, Jessie Hargrave, William Rand, Jr., and Sarah Graham Kenan. Upon the cessation of hostilities, he returned home and addressed himself to the duties that devolved upon him. The same courage which had sustained him in battle now supported him under the galling misfortunes of defeat, and, with his face to the future, he set himself resolutely to the work of repairing the disasters of the war. Seeking a wider field for work, he soon moved to Wilmington, and there he made for himself an enduring name in the hearts of that sympathetic and grand community, to whom he endeared himself by his unvarying cheerfulness and kindness, both in private and public life. It has fallen

to the lot of but few men engaged in the arduous task of rebuilding broken fortunes to serve their fellow-men in so wide a range of public duties and so largely without other compensation than the pleasure derived from rendering acceptable service.

With the scars and experience of a veteran and the hopeful spirit of early manhood, he became a valued comrade, both in the camps of the war-worn veterans and of the younger soldiers of the succeeding generation; and nowhere, perhaps, is his name more honored than among the noble youth of the Wilmington Light Infantry, who with pride acknowledge their indebtedness, both for greater military efficiency and for higher moral standard, to his unselfish service for a period of three years as commander of the company.

As a citizen he excelled in usefulness; his good judgment and unusual capacity for business caused his selection to the honorable position of a member of the City Board of Audit and Finance, whose duties he performed with great advantage to the community. The same qualities led to his employment by the Federal government, under President Cleveland's second administration, as collector of the port of Wilmington, the important duties of which position he discharged with great fidelity, while displaying high administrative abilities.

But his public services were not confined to the realm of political action; his love for the school and the college of his early training was only equaled by his interest in the cause of general education, to the promotion of which he gave his best thought and most earnest endeavors. Indeed, his services to his community were large, and received the grateful recognition of an appreciative public, and he was esteemed one of the most efficient and useful members of society. In his church work he was excellent. He united with the church of his fathers, the Presbyterian Church, on the 8th day of April, 1875. After a period of four years he was ordained a deacon, and then served as treasurer of the church. For fourteen years he gave his time and labor to this office, performing its duties with the same diligence and efficiency which characterized the conduct of his private business concerns. Eleven years after he became a member of the church he was ordained a

ruling elder, and for a period of seven years, unless sick or absent from the city, the session enjoyed the benefit of his counsels and received encouragement from his cheerful and hopeful spirit. The same qualities which made his life so useful in other walks of endeavor endeared him in a peculiar degree to his Sabbath-school class and made him a welcome visitor in the chambers of the sick, to which he administered with kindness and a generosity that was in accord with his lovely nature.

His later and riper years developed more and more that love for his fellow-man which led to his sharing the burdens of others, and his cheerful smile chased the cloud of trouble from many an anxious brow and brought joy to many a careworn face. While such was his bearing outside of his domestic circle, within his family and among his kindred who shared the intimacies of his home-life, his presence was a constant benediction.

Unhappily, death likes a shining mark, and Mr. Kenan was called hence on the 14th of April, 1903, in the fifty-eighth year of his age, sincerely lamented by the entire community in which he lived.

S. A. Ashe.





JOEL LANE

AT the beginning of the last decade of the eighteenth century, the ground whereon stands North Carolina's capital city was the plantation of a country gentleman well known in the war for independence, which had recently closed. This gentleman, Colonel Joel Lane, was one of five brothers, and a son of Joseph Lane of the county of Halifax, who died about the year 1774.

Many years before Wake County was established, Joel Lane had lived on the land which afterward formed part of its territory. It was on the 4th of June, 1771, that the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions of the new county assembled for the first time, and Joel Lane, as well as his brother Joseph, was a justice of that tribunal. Both of these gentlemen continued to sit as members of that court up to and including the war of the Revolution.

In the early organization of the colonial militia of Wake County, Joel Lane was one of its field officers, being officially returned as lieutenant-colonel of Colonel John Hinton's regiment in 1772. The militia of Wake County were not ardently zealous in the cause, but under Colonel Hinton served in the forces of Governor Tryon in 1771, when the insurrection of the Regulators was quelled, and their conduct at the battle of Alamance, May 16, 1771, was highly commended. And as they acted well under their leaders on that occasion, so, when the Revolution came on, under the same leadership, they were staunch Whigs and patriot soldiers.

When the Provincial Congress of North Carolina met at Hillsboro at the inception of the Revolution, in August, 1775, Colonel Lane was one of the delegates from Wake County. On September 9th that Congress elected him a member of the Committee of Safety for the Hillsboro district, Wake being one of the counties which formed that district. He was also a delegate from Wake County to the Provincial Congress which met at Halifax in April, 1776, and in that year he also served as commissioner of supplies for Wake County. He was entry taker of Wake County in 1778-79. In August, 1776, the Council of Safety met at his house and took measures for Rutherford's expedition against the Cherokee Indians, and in June, 1781, the legislature met at Bloomsbury, which was the old name of the county seat of Wake, and as Colonel Lane's house was the largest building in the neighborhood, it was used as a meeting place. This residence is still standing on Boylan Avenue, near the western confines of the city of Raleigh. When about to adjourn, the Assembly passed a resolution paying £15,000 in paper currency for two weeks' house rent, with pasturage for the horses on which the members rode to the meeting. At that time the Tories were very active, having captured Governor Burke, and a regiment of militia were called into service to protect the legislature from surprise and capture.

During thirteen sessions of the General Assembly of North Carolina, beginning with 1782 and ending with the year of his death (except in 1793), Colonel Lane was State senator from Wake County.

After the Revolution, when the University of North Carolina was established, Lane became one of the trustees of that institution, and offered it a gift of a square mile of land near the present village of Cary on condition that the University should be located thereon.

North Carolina having decreed by a convention ordinance that the State capital should be in Wake County, there were several citizens therein eager to sell a site to the commissioners who had the matter in charge, seventeen different tracts of land being offered from which to choose. The principal lands considered were a tract

owned by Colonel Lane and one near Neuse River owned by his father-in-law, Colonel John Hinton. The Lane tract was chosen, and its owner conveyed it to the State on April 5, 1792. It has been charged that Colonel Lane's influence was not only reinforced by the persuasive eloquence of his friend, Willie Jones of Halifax, who was one of the commissioners for the selection of the tract, but that Lane also won their favor by entertaining them at his residence. Colonel Lane's name is perpetuated by Lane Street, in the city of Raleigh.

When North Carolina was a colony, and the Church of England was established by law, Wake County was composed of only one parish, it being known as the parish of St. Margaret. The Lanes were then adherents of the Church of England, and held to that faith after the Revolution, when many left it, largely through hatred of anything savoring of Great Britain, and also, perhaps, because there were no church services held in the parishes.

Colonel Lane was twice married, first to Martha Hinton, daughter of Colonel John Hinton; secondly to Mary Hinton, sister of his first wife. A list of his children and other facts about his family will be found in a pamphlet published by the present writer in 1900. See "Joel Lane, Pioneer and Patriot," by Marshall De Lancey Haywood. A sketch of Colonel Hinton, Lane's father-in-law, will be found elsewhere in the present work.

Colonel Lane died on the 29th of March, 1795, and his unmarked grave, near his former residence, has now been built over by one of the residences in that section of Raleigh.

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.



ALEXANDER LILLINGTON

AMONG the many illustrious descendants of Major Alexander Lillington of Albemarle was a grandson who bore the same name. John Lillington, a son of the old president of the Council, married Sarah Porter about 1690, and their son, Alexander, early became an orphan, and was raised by his uncle, Edward Moseley, who was also his guardian. He accompanied the Lillington connection in the settlement of the Cape Fear, and his plantation was on the northeast branch, just opposite that of Edward Moseley. It was known as Lillington Hall, and was very extensive, containing many thousand acres of land, which, however, were better adapted to the growing of stock and cattle than for agriculture. Young Lillington grew up in the midst of his kinspeople, the Moores, Swanns, Ashes, Moseleys and their connections, and developed into a man of herculean proportions, while noted for the vigor of his intellect and determined resolution. While his elder kinsmen naturally held the public offices, he doubtless shared in their councils and participated in forming their plans.

In 1765, when the Stamp Act was passed, the people of the Cape Fear determined that it should not be enforced in the province. So when, in January, 1766, two merchant vessels were detained at Brunswick because of the violation of the Stamp Act, it would seem that the gentlemen on Rocky Point, which had long

been the home of the speakers of the Assembly and the center of political action, at once devised measures to procure their release. By arrangement, bodies of armed men collected at Wilmington from the neighboring counties and formed an association, and appointed three directors to govern their movement, selecting for that purpose the speaker, John Ashe, Alexander Lillington and Thomas Lloyd. And there being thus established a civil head, Colonel Hugh Waddell was appointed commander of the military forces. The three directors, accompanied by the mayor and corporation of Wilmington, and all the gentlemen of the neighboring counties, and by Colonel Waddell and his troops, marched upon Brunswick, and there forced the British cruisers to surrender the detained merchantmen, and they took from the governor's mansion Mr. Pennington, the controller, and made him swear not to distribute the stamps, and also exacted the same oath from all other officers except alone Governor Tryon. The estimation in which Alexander Lillington was held at that period is plainly seen by his selection as one of the directors on that occasion. In 1771, when Governor Tryon formed his army to suppress the Regulators, Alexander Lillington accompanied him with the rank of colonel, and he doubtless continued in the service as a militia officer.

In 1774 he co-operated with those who stood up boldly for the liberties of the people, and was one of the Committee of Safety. In March, 1775, Governor Martin mentioned that John Ashe was raising troops in New Hanover and Robert Howe was training them in Brunswick. These were close kinsmen of Lillington, and about the same age, and that he co-operated with them admits of no question; and when it became necessary, in July, to burn Fort Johnston and dislodge Governor Martin and drive him from North Carolina soil, he doubtless was one of Ashe's lieutenants in that enterprise. In August, 1775, the Provincial Congress determined to raise two regiments of 500 men as Continentals, and John Lillington, the son of the subject of this sketch, was a lieutenant in the First Continental Regiment. A battalion of minute men was provided for in each district, each battalion to consist of ten companies of fifty men, and Alexander Lillington was appointed

colonel of the minute men of the Wilmington district. He at once applied himself to enlisting men in that service. The sentiment of the people was divided. Many apprehended that the measures taken by the leaders were too extreme. They felt no oppression. They were under no hardships. There was no invasion of their personal rights. The burden of the leaders was to carry the people into rebellion on an abstract principle. It was a hazardous undertaking, and the result was extremely doubtful. But the heart of Alexander Lillington did not quail. He joined with others, with the greatest activity, to fix the people in resolute antagonism to Great Britain, and was zealous in securing the enlistment of his ten companies.

In the meantime, Governor Martin had perfected plans for the invasion of the province and the subjugation of the people. Five thousand British troops were to be landed on the Cape Fear, and the King's standard was to be erected in Cumberland County, beneath which the Highlanders and Regulators were to assemble and then march to Wilmington and effect a junction with the British army. In anticipation of the arrival of the British troops, the signal was given, and General McDonald marched his Highlanders and Regulators to Campbellton, where they were quickly confronted by Colonel Moore with his Continentals and other forces, hastily called out in the emergency. Colonel Lillington's minute men, having embodied, concentrated at Wilmington, and then were marched to Moore's camp at Rockfish, and thence to Elizabethtown and Moore's Creek Bridge, where Colonel Lillington began making entrenchments. The route taken by McDonald was uncertain, and Lillington soon hurried toward Corbett's Ferry, reaching Colven's Creek, when he received orders to return to the bridge. There he threw up entrenchments somewhat further off from those first begun. That evening Colonel Caswell, who commanded the minute men of the New-Bern district, arrived with his command, and took post in the rear of Lillington's line. The next morning at early dawn General McDonald's forces attempted to force a passage, but were met by a murderous fire from Lillington's command and repulsed. Some of Caswell's companies then crossed

the creek lower down and assailed them on the flank, and a rout and panic ensued. The commissions of colonels of minute men were dated from the day their organizations were completed, and Colonel Caswell ranked Colonel Lillington, having a senior commission, and Caswell and the men under his command were thanked in public resolutions.

While a spirit of independence had been manifested in Mecklenburg County, yet public thought had not been directed in that channel until the winter of 1775, and the battle of Moore's Creek was the first battle fought where the American soldiers were animated with the purpose to strike for independence. The victory then gained was most important in its results. It not only defeated the plan of invasion, but it strengthened the hands of those who now had independence in view. Whereas the Provincial Congress had not long before unanimously declared with great solemnity that the thought of independence was not harbored, now with equal unanimity, the Provincial Congress instructed its delegates in the Continental Congress to declare for independence. In this first battle, that was so important, it was said that Lillington did the fighting and Caswell got the glory; indeed, a stanza of an old song ran:

"Where Lillington fought for Caswell's glory."

When the British army proceeded to Charleston, the North Carolina Continentals and Colonel Lillington with his minute men also hastened to meet the enemy at that point. During the succeeding years Colonel Lillington so efficiently discharged his duties, that on the promotion of General Ashe, the brigadier of that district, to a major-generalcy, Lillington was, on the 4th of February, 1779, appointed brigadier-general of the district. In July of that year it was contemplated that he should lead 2000 men to South Carolina to replace the brigade of General Butler. General Butler's North Carolina militia formed the right of the first line and Sumner's Brigade formed the left in the battle of Stono, on the 20th of June, 1779, and covered themselves with glory. The enlistment of the militia being about to expire, Lillington was

preparing to relieve General Butler; but at that time some Virginia forces passed through the State to the south, and the necessity of sending North Carolina militia disappeared; but in December Lillington was directed to command such a detachment. Drafts were made from the regiments of the eastern counties to the number of 2000, and Lillington, about the first of the year, crossed the South Carolina line and joined General Lincoln; and he served with Lincoln in front of the enemy until the period of enlistment of his troops had expired, which was just as Charleston was closed up by the besieging British. There were, however, some 500 of his militia who remained in Charleston and were surrendered, and who, according to the capitulation, were paroled to return to their homes, but not to take up arms again until exchanged. It is interesting to observe that during this campaign General Lillington wrote to Governor Caswell: "I think myself very happy in the appointment of Major Dixon and Major Nelson, and could freely wish your Excellency would recommend these gentlemen to the Assembly if there should be more militia sent to the southward." That recommendation was followed, and Major Dixon had command of a militia force at the battle of Camden, and the fine conduct of himself and his North Carolina militia drew unstinted praise from Colonel Henry Lee, the historian of that campaign.

There was much activity in the border counties after the battle of Camden. In January, 1781, Major Craig seized Wilmington, and the Tories became very aggressive. General Lillington at once called out his brigade, and took post at the Great Bridge, ten miles from Wilmington, where a battle ensued, and the Americans retreated to William Jones's plantation, near South Washington. On the capture of Wilmington, the brigades of Brigadier-General Caswell and of General Butler were ordered to the Cape Fear section, but when Cornwallis reached Hillsboro, on February 20th, Governor Nash, who was at New-Bern, directed Major-General Caswell, to whom had been committed the command of all the militia of the State, to march the militia of the eastern counties to Halifax, and then where most needed; and the

brigades of Brigadier-General Caswell and of General Butler were ordered to leave the Cape Fear section and support General Greene. At this critical time Major-General Caswell seems to have been very inefficient, perhaps because of ill health; and while some effort was made to aid Greene against Cornwallis, Lillington, with a very inefficient force, was left alone to confront Craig. In his trying circumstances he did the best he could. He again occupied Great Bridge, and despatched a detachment to guard the exit from Wilmington between the two rivers. Indeed, at different distances from the town the militia under Lillington guarded all the avenues of communication. But Craig's men, mounted on excellent horses, would dash out with celerity and impetuosity, often surprising the militia detachments. A bloody occurrence, known as "the massacre of the eight-mile house," took place on the Sound road from Wilmington to New-Bern, where about twenty of the militia were butchered. Harnett was captured in Onslow and General John Ashe at Rocky Point. But the patriot leaders were so resolute that they could never be suppressed; and, outside of a small circle in the immediate vicinity of Wilmington, while they could not successfully resist Craig's troopers, they always closed in behind them and retained possession of the country. Many families moved away from that region, even a considerable number living in Duplin going to the West and to Virginia for safety. Others were disaffected. There was no ammunition, and the country had been largely denuded of arms and supplies in the years previous. Baron Glaubeck commanded a squad of cavalry armed with clubs instead of sabers, and they used their hickories so effectually that they took many prisoners. On the 25th of April, Cornwallis marched northward, and Lillington retreated to Kinston, and, realizing his impotency, deemed it best to discharge for a time his militia, that they could return to their immediate neighborhoods and suppress the roving bands of Tories who were rising throughout that region. Cornwallis's march struck terror among the people, and almost every one quit his habitation and fled. The enemy made havoc and desolation. Every kind of stock was driven from the

farms, houses plundered and the country laid waste. Many outrages were committed, not merely by the troops, but by camp followers. Craig constructed fortifications on Rutherford Creek (seven miles east of Burgaw), on the road to New-Bern. Lillington encamped at Richlands, Onslow County. In June Governor Nash was near Kinston, where also Major-General Caswell stationed himself. Caswell was in command of all the State forces and, at the head of the Council Extraordinary, in full control of State affairs. But he seems to have been utterly paralyzed. There appears to have been no particular effort made to strengthen Lillington or to aid Colonel Kenan in Duplin. As far as appears, there was an astounding relaxation of vigorous effort on the part of General Caswell. At length Craig marched through Duplin to New-Bern, and for some time that region was a scene of dire calamity. The Tories burned the houses of the Whigs and shot them, and the Whigs burned the houses of the Tories and hanged them. The retaliation was fierce, relentless and vigorous. A picture of the situation is given by Mr. Dickson of Duplin in a letter of 1784:

“The Tories rose and apprehended, and took several of our principal and leading men and carried them to Wilmington. There were numbers of our good citizens, thus betrayed, perished on board prison ships. This so alarmed the inhabitants that none of us dared to sleep in our houses for fear of being surprised. In the meantime, the governor of the State and several others of the first character were surprised in this manner by some who had been personally acquainted with him and carried and delivered to the guards in Wilmington, notwithstanding the attempt of sundry parties of the militia to rescue him. Matters being thus in confusion, there was no subordination among men, but every proprietor raised and commanded his own little party and defended themselves as they could. At length we got collected about 400 men under Colonel Kenan in Duplin, and about 200 under Colonel Brown in Bladen. Colonel Kenan’s militia had not made a stand more than ten days when Major Craig marched his main force and drove us out of our works. Then he staid several days in Duplin, and the Royalists gathered together very fast, and we were now reduced again to the utmost extremity. The enemy were now more cruel to the distressed inhabitants than Cornwallis’s army had been before.”

Hundreds of negroes were seized and carried off and the planters were rendered penniless. Major Craig marched to New-Bern, plundered the town and destroyed the stores. He then started toward Halifax, but after going some thirty miles, heard that Wayne was expected there with a Continental force, and he hurried back through Onslow to Wilmington. During this period that portion of the State was defenseless, and General Lillington was virtually without men, arms or ammunition. But his spirit never faltered, and as soon as opportunity offered he again made some head, suppressed the Tories and re-established his lines, hedging in the British regulars and confining them to the southward until, in November, Rutherford came to the rescue, and Craig departed from the Cape Fear.

Even after that the Tories were very aggressive along the South Carolina line, and Lillington was engaged in quelling them as late as March, 1782, when, indeed, they were threatening to march upon Wilmington, and expected to seize ships there and make their way out of the country in that manner.

General Lillington died about the middle of April, 1785. A letter from Mr. Maclaine, dated the 16th of April, 1785, says:

"Poor General Lillington is to be interred this afternoon. He very lately lost his youngest daughter, and his surviving son has been dangerously ill. The loss of his two favorite children in so short a time, and his own age and infirmities must have sat very heavy on him."

He married Miss Watters, and was survived by his son, John Alexander Lillington, whose descendants still reside in North Carolina.

S. A. Ashe.



JOSIAH MARTIN

AMONG the ancient English families of Norman origin is that of Martin of Lockinge, long resident in Berkshire, and among whose members is recorded the name of Josiah Martin, the last of the royal governors of North Carolina. This family was founded by Martin of Tours, one of the followers of William the Conqueror. Among the many alliances contracted by this family, some connect it with the old nobility, while one of its members married Rees Ap Griffith, Prince of Wales. Samuel Martin, the grandfather of Governor Martin, settled on the island of Antigua, in the West Indies, and died about 1695. His son was another Samuel, whose second wife was a daughter of Lieutenant-Governor Edward Wyke, of the island of Montserrat, and widow of William Irish. To this marriage, on April 3, 1737, was born Governor Josiah Martin. Another son, Henry, was created a baronet in 1791. One branch of the Martin family settled on Long Island, in New York, and Governor Martin married his first cousin, Elizabeth Martin, daughter of Josiah Martin of Long Island.

Governor Josiah Martin was bred a soldier, and held a commission as major in the army when he was appointed governor of North Carolina. He came to New-Bern by way of New York, and stopped long enough in the latter colony to get married. There

he also had a consultation with Governor Tryon on the condition of affairs in North Carolina. After a voyage of nineteen days, Martin reached New-Bern, and took the oath of office on the 12th of August. Governor Martin made several personal visits to the seat of the late troubles with the Regulators, and by his kindly interest in their behalf gained their good will to such an extent that most of them were Loyalists in the Revolution.

Governor Martin not only had the usual subjects of contention with the Assembly to deal with, but new ones now arose of still greater import. In 1771 it had been ascertained that a tax of one shilling per poll, originally laid in 1748 to pay a certain appropriation, had fulfilled the requirement, and the Assembly, believing that it ought no longer to be collected, passed a bill to that effect. The governor declared that this was a fraud, and rejected the bill. The Assembly prepared a resolution indemnifying the sheriffs for not collecting that tax, but before the resolution could be entered on the journal the governor dissolved the Assembly. Speaker Caswell communicated the purport of the resolves to the treasurers, and they did not require the sheriffs to account to them for this tax. The governor issued a proclamation requiring the sheriffs to make the collection, and an issue was joined which was never settled, but was a constant source of conflict. At the next Assembly, January, 1773, the Tryon Court Law, which, as usual, had been enacted only for two years, was about to expire, and the controversy over this law now took a different turn. Theretofore the differences chiefly arose over the purpose of the Assembly to secure the independence of the judges, their appointment for good behavior and with certain qualifications. Now a new difference arose, the Assembly proposing to give a right of attachment against the effects of foreign debtors, which the British merchants objected to. The difference was irreconcilable. The governor would assent to no Court Bill that the legislature would pass, and after 1773 there were no courts except those of the magistrates in the province. While the Stamp Act had been repealed by Parliament, the right to tax America had not been

relinquished, and such taxes were imposed by Parliament, which caused friction between the Assembly and the governor. The legislature that met on the 4th of December, 1773, appointed a committee to correspond with the other colonies, and the year 1774 opened with North Carolina in full communication with the provinces at the North. Continental matters were now reaching a crisis. A cargo of tea was thrown overboard at Boston, and the port of Boston was closed. It was said that Governor Martin did not propose to convene an Assembly, and on the 3d of April Colonel Harvey, who was speaker of the Assembly, declared that then "the people will convene one themselves," and that subject was considered by leading men of the province.

When the news reached Wilmington of the distressed condition of Boston, whose commerce was entirely arrested and the people without employment or provisions, a meeting was held, on the 21st of July, of the inhabitants of the district of Wilmington, of which William Hooper was chairman, and it was resolved "that we consider the cause of the town of Boston as the common cause of British America," and that "it is expedient that the several counties of this province should send deputies to attend a general meeting at Johnston Court House on the 20th of August," because of the present alarming state; and a committee was appointed "to prepare a circular letter to the several counties of this province expressive of the sense of the inhabitants of this district." That committee issued that address, and deputies were elected as recommended, but it was determined to meet at New-Bern instead of Johnston Court House. This was the first Provincial Assembly. It appointed Hooper, Hewes and Caswell to represent North Carolina in the General Congress to be held on the 20th of September. From that time onward the march of events was steady and rapid. Committees of Safety were appointed in the towns and counties. Early in March, 1775, the governor was astounded at the formation of troops in New Hanover and Brunswick. In April his Council deserted him, and when he convened the legislature, on the 4th of April, the second Provincial Congress also met. Resolu-

tions were adopted and associations formed in the various counties, and the fabric of the established government was falling to pieces. Toward the end of May the governor was driven from his palace by the hostile demonstrations of the people of New-Bern, and he sought safety at Fort Johnston, where he arrived on June 2d. On the 31st of May the committee of Mecklenburg County passed resolutions establishing a free and independent government, and ordered the embodiment of the people into revolutionary companies. It being apprehended that the governor was to collect a force at Fort Johnston, on the 19th of July John Ashe led the troops of the lower Cape Fear to Brunswick and burned Fort Johnston, driving the governor to his vessels, and he proposed by fire rafts to drive the British cruisers out of the harbor. Governor Martin now formed a plan to subjugate the province. He was in communication with the Highlanders and disaffected Regulators of the back country, and proposed that a large British army should be landed on the lower Cape Fear and the Indians should fall on the western frontier. His plan was adopted by the British Government, and in February, 1776, the Highlanders rose, and the fleet and British regiments arrived, but their juncture was defeated by the battle of Moore's Creek, and soon the British forces left to make the attack on Charleston; however, leaving a force on the lower Cape Fear. Governor Martin accompanied the troops to Charleston, and four years elapsed before he returned to North Carolina.

He accompanied Cornwallis in his two invasions; and from Charlotte issued a flaming proclamation calling on the people to return to their allegiance; and later, from Hillsboro, he also issued a similar proclamation. Indeed, he probably was of great use to Cornwallis in the organization of loyal bands throughout the central part of the province. Concerning his services, Cornwallis wrote in 1781: "I have constantly received the most zealous assistance from Governor Martin during my command in the southern district. Hoping that his presence would tend to excite the loyal subjects in this province to take an active part with us, he has cheerfully submitted to the fatigues of our campaign; but

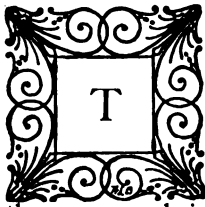
his delicate constitution has suffered by his public spirit, for, by the advice of the physicians, he is now obliged to return to England for the recovering of his health." But his health was not restored, and he died a few years later, April 13, 1786, in London.

*Marshall De Lancey Haywood.
S. A. Ashe.*





ALEXANDER MARTIN



HE founder of the family in America was Hugh Martin, a Presbyterian minister, who emigrated from County Tyrone, Ireland, in 1721, and settled in Hunterdon County, New Jersey, where his five sons were born. They were Alexander, James, Thomas, Samuel and Robert, the governor being the eldest and Robert the youngest. The five brothers came South shortly before the Revolution and settled in Virginia, but all except Thomas soon afterward removed to North Carolina.

Alexander was born in 1740, and graduated at Princeton University, then Nassau Hall, in 1756, at the age of sixteen. His scholarship must have been remarkably fine, as shown not only by the fact of his graduation at so early an age, but from the further fact that his staid old alma mater conferred upon him, in the midst of a busy life, the highest honor she could bestow, the degree of Doctor of Laws (LL.D.).

In 1772 he settled at Guilford Court House, which was then situated near the edge of the battlefield, and was subsequently named Martinsville in his honor. When the battle was fought he was a member of the Council Extraordinary. He must have become a citizen of the State before 1771, as Foote and Caldwell both state that he and Rev. Dr. David Caldwell were present at the battle of the Alamance, and made fruitless appeals to

sides for peace. That a young stranger should have been selected to accompany that eminent divine upon so difficult, dangerous and thankless an undertaking was the highest tribute to his personal character, judgment and patriotism.

In 1771 he was apparently a resident of Rowan County, as his name appears among the officers of that county, signed to an agreement, dated March 7, 1771, with the committee of the Regulators to submit all matters of grievance to arbitration. What office he held does not appear from the paper; but Ruple, in his History of Rowan County, says that he lived in Salisbury until Guilford County was erected, and that he was frequently commissioned by the Crown to hold the District Court at Salisbury, having presided over that court as late as the 1st day of June, 1775.

On March 18, 1771, he and Colonel John Frohock wrote to Governor Tryon giving an account of their agreement with the Regulators, and urging a policy of justice and conciliation. The answer of Tryon was extremely sarcastic, written in the pride and insolence of power to one whom he never dreamed would, by the choice of a free people, be his successor in the glorious years to come.

In his letter of April 12, 1771, to the Earl of Hillsboro, Governor Tryon speaks of Alexander Martin as "Colonel Martin." So at that early age Martin was evidently a man of position and influence.

In 1774 and 1775 he was a member of the Colonial Assembly from Guilford County. He was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the Second Regiment from this State in the Continental Line on September 1, 1775, and was promoted to the colonelcy of the same regiment on April 10, 1776, which he held until November 22, 1777, when he resigned.

In December, 1775, he led two companies of regulars, accompanied by Colonel Rutherford and others, against the Scovellites in South Carolina. Wheeler says: "He, with his regiment, was in the battle of Brandywine, 11th September (1777), where Lafayette was wounded, and was near him when he received the wound.

In the attack of Washington on the British at Germantown, October 4, 1777, he was present when his general, Francis Nash, was killed." In 1779 he was elected State senator from Guilford County, and again in 1780, 1781, 1782, 1785, 1787, and 1788. In 1780 he was elected speaker of the Senate, and again in 1781 and 1782, as we then had no lieutenant-governor, an office which was not created until the constitution of 1868.

After the terrible disasters occurring in the South during the year 1780, the legislature, meeting in September, created a Board of War "to direct and control the military of the State," and elected as its members Governor Martin, John Penn and Oroon-dates Davis. Of this remarkable body, whose powers seem to have been as ample as they were undefined, Governor Martin was the chairman and admittedly its dominating spirit.

Governor Graham, in his admirable historical lecture delivered at New York in 1858, in speaking of this board and its members, says that its creation "was utterly at variance with the plain precepts of the constitution;" but that its members "undertook the task devolved upon them in the most devoted spirit of patriotism, and with a proper sense of its magnitude, and executed its duties with fearlessness, ability and eminent public benefit." Stronger commendation could not come from a higher source.

In the following year the Board of War was discontinued and a "Council Extraordinary" created, who, with the governor (Nash), were invested with the powers of the government during the recess of the legislature, and indefinitely, if the invasion of the enemy should prevent the holding of elections and the meeting of the Assembly at the usual time. This council was composed of Governor Martin, Governor Caswell and Allen Jones.

Upon the capture of Governor Burke by Fanning, in September, 1781, Governor Martin, by virtue of his office as speaker of the Senate, succeeded to the governorship, and became in name as well as in fact the head of the State government. Governor Burke returned the following year, and resumed his office for the remainder of his term; but was soon again succeeded by Governor Martin, who was elected in the fall of 1782 and again in 1783.

The constitution of 1776 provided that: "The Senate and House of Commons, jointly, at their first meeting after each annual election, shall, by ballot, elect a governor for one year, who shall not be eligible to that office longer than three years in six successive years." This provision compelled the retirement of Governor Martin at the end of the year 1784. He was immediately re-elected as senator from Guilford County, and was again made speaker of that body, succeeding Governor Caswell, who had succeeded him as governor.

In 1786 he was elected by joint ballot of the two Houses of the General Assembly one of the five delegates to the Federal convention called to meet in Philadelphia to frame the Constitution of the United States. This convention convened on Friday, May 25, 1787, and among those present, Governor Martin's name appears first among the delegates from North Carolina, on page 139 of Volume I. of Elliott's Debates. As usual with all his duties, he took an active and intelligent part in its proceedings; but for some reason both he and William R. Davie were absent when the Constitution was signed, and hence their names do not appear to that immortal instrument, in the formation of which they took so deep an interest, and the ultimate adoption of which by their own State was so largely due to their efforts. In the same year Governor Martin was again elected to the State Senate, and again became its presiding officer.

This legislature called a constitutional convention to meet at Hillsboro in July, 1788, to consider the adoption of the Federal Constitution. Governor Martin was a candidate for the convention, but was defeated by his old friend, Dr. David Caldwell, who was an intense Republican and bitterly opposed to the adoption of the Constitution.

The defeat of Martin was practically the defeat of the Constitution for the time being, as the convention, by a vote of 184 to 84, more than a two-thirds majority, determined neither to adopt nor reject the Constitution, but simply to recommend a bill of rights and twenty-six amendments; and it then adjourned *sine die* to await the action of the other States. Governor Martin was im-

mediately returned to the State Senate, and again elected speaker.

The Constitution having been adopted by a majority of the States, the government of the United States went into operation in the spring of 1789. The 4th day of March was set for the meeting of Congress; but a quorum of the Senate was not obtained until April 6th, and General Washington was not inaugurated as President until the 30th day of April.

Prompt action on the part of North Carolina became imperative, and a new constitutional convention was called. Both the convention and the General Assembly met at Fayetteville on November 2, 1789.

The Federal Constitution was adopted, and Governor Johnston and Benjamin Hawkins were elected senators. This necessitated the immediate election of governor. In this hour of supremest trial, the heart and mind of the people turned to Alexander Martin.

He was immediately elected governor, and the old North State began her magnificent career as one of the United States of America under his directing hand. He was again elected governor in 1790 and again in 1791, thus for the second time serving out the full number of terms allowed by the constitution.

Six times governor of this State, once by succession and five times by direct election, Governor Martin has left a record that has never been equaled and seldom approached. Governor Caswell was elected four times and Governor Vance three times.

Of Martin's wonderful career as governor, Colonel Wheeler, whose extreme Jeffersonian leaning made him by no means partial to our great Federalist, simply says, on page 182 of his history: "He [Alexander Martin] conducted the affairs of the State in a troubled and perilous period with great dignity, unswerving fidelity and scrupulous integrity." Justice could say no less, and eulogy need say no more.

In 1793 Governor Martin was elected to the Senate of the United States, and served his term with his habitual ability, fidelity and distinction. While not agreeing with the extreme views of

Hamilton, he was a staunch Federalist and a devoted follower of Washington, whose personal friendship he so long enjoyed.

He strongly supported Adams's administration, voted for the Alien and Sedition acts, and at the end of his term retired to private life with the great party to which he belonged.

About 1789 Governor Martin moved his residence to the new county of Rockingham, which was cut off from Guilford in 1785, and thereafter resided on a plantation, to which he gave the name of Danbury, situated on the south bank of Dan River, at the mouth of Jacob's Creek. Here he lived until his death, in 1807, possessing ample means and exercising the most generous hospitality. Among his guests was General Washington, who spent several days with him on his return from his Southern trip in 1790, arriving there about the first week in June of 1791.

Governor Martin was always a warm friend of our State University. As governor, he earnestly recommended its support by the State. In 1790 he became one of its trustees, and remained so until his death. He was president of the Board of Trustees in 1792-93, but gave up this position upon his election to the United States Senate. Another proof of his wonderful popularity is shown in the action of the legislature, which promptly struck from the map of North Carolina the names of the counties of Tryon, Bute and Dobbs, and yet retained the name of Martin County, although it had been named in honor of Josiah Martin, the royal governor. No one would raise his hand against a name that stood so high on the patriot roll. Governor Martin represented Rockingham County in the Senate in 1804 and 1805.

Upon his death, in 1807, his body was placed in a vault constructed in a beautiful wooded bluff overlooking the river. Here his remains rested in peace for thirty or forty years, until a great freshet in the river caused the water to rise above the level of the vault, into which it flowed. He was devoted to the river, and it seemed strangely pathetic that its waters should, after so many years, come as if to take once more in their fond embrace all that remained of him it loved so well, "grieving, if aught inanimate

e'er grieves, over the unreturning brave." As the vault was injured, his remains were moved and buried elsewhere, but at what spot no one seems to know, and it is impossible to obtain even a clue from the conflicting statements. It is a singular coincidence that he and General Greene should both have slept so long in unknown graves.

Robert M. Douglas.



and Burwell (afterward Judge A. Burwell) and by General D. H. Hill and Mr. James P. Irwin.

A taste for study developed early, and from his boyhood he was devoted to books. The straitened circumstances of the family, arising from the death of the father, and the general poverty of the country, growing out of the war between the States, made it necessary for the aspiring youth to overcome difficulties in securing a liberal education, and after spending a year and a half in Finley High School, at Lenoir, North Carolina, he acted for a time as salesman, first in a book store at Charlotte and afterward in a shoe store. He took his college course at Davidson College, North Carolina, showing rare gifts as a student and as a debater in the literary societies of the institution. He was a member of the Philanthropic Society, from which he received the Declaimer's Medal in 1876 and the Debater's Medal in 1877, besides representing the society in the annual inter-society oratorical celebration in 1876. He was an omnivorous reader, and intensely fond of the classics. He graduated with the degree of A.B. in 1878, and having decided to make the ministry of the Gospel his life work, he matriculated the same year in Union Theological Seminary, Prince Edward County, Virginia. Here he did excellent work, and, graduating in 1881, left such an impression upon the professors that two years afterward he was called back to his theological alma mater as assistant professor of Hebrew. Mecklenburg Presbytery ordained him as an evangelist in 1881, and for one year he preached as a home missionary for the Swannanoa, Red Oak and Oak Forest churches, near Asheville, North Carolina. In 1882 he was called to the pastorate of the Presbyterian Church at Millersburg, Kentucky. From thence, after a year of successful work, he returned, as already stated, to Union Theological Seminary to become assistant professor of Hebrew and Old Testament literature.

For this work Providence had been preparing him all the time, and he now found himself in a position for which he was eminently qualified, and which suited his scholarly tastes and habits. He soon showed by his success as a teacher of Hebrew and

exposition of the Old Testament that the authorities of the seminary had made no mistake in choosing him for this important service. When Dr. B. M. Smith became enfeebled by old age, Dr. Moore was, in 1889, put in full charge of the department. He inspired the students with his own enthusiasm for Hebrew and for the study of the Old Testament, for he made the dead language of the prophets a living language, and illuminated these ancient writings with splendid analysis, exposition and illustration. He soon came to be recognized as one of the leading Hebraists of his time. Bishop Jackson of Alabama, who attended his summer school of Hebrew at the University of Virginia, said: "I learned more about the principles of Hebrew under Dr. Moore in three days than I had learned at the seminary in three years."

While a student of all contemporary literature in his department, Dr. Moore never became infected with the destructive principles of what is called the "higher criticism." He believed in the inspiration of the Holy Scriptures, and handled them reverently as the Word of God. Indeed, one great part of his mission has been to defend the Bible against the attacks of skeptical critics, to confirm the faith of his students in the Book of Books and to steady the religious convictions of the thousands who read his magazine articles on this subject.

In 1885, at the age of twenty-eight, the degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred on him by Central University, Kentucky, and in 1892 he was made a Doctor of Laws by Davidson College, North Carolina. Dr. Moore's influence soon came to be felt far and near, and he was offered professorships in Princeton, McCormick and Louisville Theological Seminaries, the chancellorship of the South Western Presbyterian University, the presidency of several colleges in succession, some of them offering three or four times as much salary as he receives in Union Seminary. All these he declined, determined to devote his services to his alma mater.

In 1905 the office of president was created by the directors of the seminary, and Dr. Moore was unanimously elected to fill it,

in addition to his Hebrew professorship, being given an assistant in that department.

When it became apparent that the seminary could not any longer attain its highest usefulness under the changed conditions in Prince Edward County, Dr. Moore took a leading part in securing the removal of the institution to Richmond, Virginia.

This undertaking was one that called for the exercise of all his tact, energy, courage and eloquence. Naturally, there was opposition on the part of many, who for various reasons conscientiously believed that the removal would be a mistake, and would be injurious to all the interests involved; but Dr. Moore, with a far-seeing judgment which subsequent events have fully justified, was convinced that the change proposed was necessary to the highest development and usefulness of the institution. Having once made up his mind, he did not for a moment waver, though sometimes the undertaking seemed almost hopeless. The people of Richmond offered a beautiful site and \$50,000 in money subscriptions toward the erection of new buildings, and Dr. Moore determined that the seminary should go to the capital city. He addressed himself to the task of raising the additional amount necessary for the consummation of the scheme. It was an extremely difficult task—there was a general depression of business—but our Scotch-Irishman persevered, and the money was raised.

Mr. George W. Watts of Durham, North Carolina, subscribed \$50,000, since increased to \$80,000; Mr. William Wallace Spence of Baltimore subscribed \$25,000, afterward raised to \$30,000. In addition to these magnificent donations, he secured a number of other subscriptions, large and small, from generous friends, who had been inspired to take an interest in the enterprise by his arguments and magnetic personal influence. The offer of funds and site was at length laid before the Board of Trustees of the seminary and accepted by them subject to the approval of the controlling synods of North Carolina and Virginia. The former consented with little opposition, but it was evident that in the synod of Virginia it would not be so easy to secure concurrence

in the scheme to remove Union Seminary from Hampden Sidney, where it had stood from the beginning of its history, and about which so many hallowed associations had gathered.

The question was first brought up at a meeting of the Virginia Synod in Danville by the opponents of removal and vigorously debated, the result being that the synod declined to pledge itself against removal, the proposal of the Board of Trustees not yet having been laid before it. The speeches on both sides were earnest and eloquent, and a Methodist minister present said it was the ablest debate to which he had ever listened. Dr. Moore's speech on this occasion was a brilliant example of oratory and argument, characterized by the utmost courtesy, but yet impassioned, illuminated with superb illustration, edged with keenest satire, and carrying conviction to the overwhelming majority of the body. The next year, at Charleston, West Virginia, the synod of Virginia had before it the formal request of the Board of Trustees for permission to move the seminary to Richmond, and there ensued a battle royal that none present will ever forget. Here again Dr. Moore led the fray, and by a memorable address, which thrilled all who heard it, won a complete and final victory for his cause. Now the institution is established at the capital of the Old Dominion, in buildings and on grounds comparing favorably with any in America, and has an assured future of large usefulness. The progress of the seminary since it came to Richmond is one of the most inspiring chapters of the recent history of the church. Its assets have increased nearly a quarter of a million dollars in that time. Dr. Theodore L. Cuyler, "the old man eloquent" of Brooklyn, recently said of this seminary: "I know of no theological institution that is doing better work than the Union Seminary of Richmond, Virginia. Its atmosphere is deeply spiritual and practical, and it is training the type of ministers that our country needs."

During the whole period of Dr. Moore's arduous work in the seminary, he has taken time to write a vast number of newspaper and review articles of great merit, and to take a leading part in founding and conducting the *Union Seminary Magazine*.

As a preacher Dr. Moore ranks among the foremost. His sermons are models of pure English style, of lucid exposition, reasoning and expression, and his delivery magnetic and graceful, while his passionate but restrained earnestness carries conviction to the hearts and consciences of his hearers with irresistible force. His services have been in demand all over the country, and he has declined a great number of calls to the pastorate of the largest churches. For a number of years there has not been a vacant pulpit in the Southern Presbyterian Church that he could not have had if he wished it, and the same has been true of many pulpits in the Northern States and in Canada.

One of the charms of Dr. Moore's character is his utter lack of self-conceit. With all his splendid endowments and popularity, he is modest and humble-minded in the extreme. His deep piety without cant and the simplicity of his faith in God, together with his unquestioning belief in the doctrines of the Holy Scriptures, give wonderful power to his preaching.

At one time a distinguished minister who had never heard Dr. Moore, while the guest of a pastor in Richmond, remarked to his host, "I do not suppose your Hebrew professor, Dr. Moore, can preach." The host answered by handing him a written sermon of Dr. Moore's which he happened to have lying on his table. When the guest had finished reading the sermon, with tears trickling down his cheeks, he said, "I can't preach."

Dr. Moore's versatility is remarkable, and few men do so many things well, and in ordinary affairs he shows the practical wisdom and resourcefulness of a consummate business man. Dr. Moore is known and beloved in many quarters far beyond his own city and the Southern church; and his lectures at Northfield, Geneva, Chautauqua and other places have extended his reputation and influence. In 1888, in Philadelphia, before the General Assemblies of the Northern and Southern Presbyterian churches, he delivered an address on Home Missions that lifted his hearers to the highest pitch of enthusiasm.

In 1892, at Toronto, before the Pan-Presbyterian Council, he read a paper on the Training of the Ministry in View of the

Drifts of Theological Thought in Apologetics and Criticism, which made a profound impression.

In 1896 he delivered the annual lecture on the Stone Foundation at Princeton.

In 1902, in view of long and arduous service, he was requested by the trustees of the seminary to go abroad for a year for the sake of his health. He traveled through Europe, Palestine and Egypt, sending back from time to time most instructive and interesting letters. On his return he published a charming volume on his journeys, entitled "A Year in Europe," which ran to three editions within a single year, and which the publishers declare to be the most popular book they have ever brought out.

Dr. Moore is favored with a commanding presence, being tall, straight and graceful, with most attractive face and flashing eye. In society he carries with him a combined dignity and graciousness that draw toward him all who come within the range of his personality. His fine sense of humor and refined wit, joined to elegance of speech and sympathetic appreciation of what others say, coupled with his patrician appearance and bearing, make him a prince in any company.

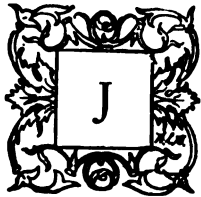
A great blessing came to Dr. Moore when he was married, May 18, 1886, to Miss Loula S. Fries of Salem, North Carolina, who has been ever since his devoted and inspiring helpmeet. Happy is any one who is privileged to be a guest in the home where she is the gracious hostess. God has blessed them with four most interesting children, two boys and two girls, and it is easy to see in their manners that they have been trained under influences the most refining and religious, and that nothing has been left undone to fit them for the places they are to occupy when they come to adult years.

Dr. Moore is now in the prime of life, and gives promise of many years of useful work for God and man.

Robert P. Kerr.



JAMES MURRAY



JAMES MURRAY, who was long an influential factor in public affairs in the province of North Carolina, belonged to an ancient family in Scotland, being the eldest son of John Murray of Unthank, in the shire of Roxborough, and his wife, Anne Bennet, who was a daughter of the Laird of Chesters. Born on the 9th of August, 1713, at the age of nineteen he was apprenticed to a merchant of London, William Dunbar, who was engaged in the West Indian trade. At a later period, when his apprenticeship had expired, Murray began an export trade of his own, chiefly with the lower Cape Fear section of North Carolina; and, apparently because of the appointment of Gabriel Johnston as governor, on September 20, 1735, at the age of twenty-two, he embarked from Gravesend for Charleston, with the determination to make his home in North Carolina. On the 27th of November following he arrived in Charleston, and there came near being deterred from proceeding further by the "strange stories" and general abuse of the Cape Fear country with which the Charlestonians regaled him. Having reached Brunswick, he there did a thriving mercantile business for a while, but was greatly disgusted by the lack of demand for wigs among the colonists, who contented themselves with the covering which nature had made for their heads. To an English gentleman who contemplated shipping some merchandise to a son who was in the

Cape Fear country Murray wrote: "It must be something else than wigs, for I have not been able to sell one of them, though I opened them both in Charleston and here."

Governor Johnston immediately on his arrival had determined to promote the settlement at Newton, or New Liverpool, afterward Wilmington, and that had been the destination of Murray, but at first he could not obtain a house there, and he temporarily located at Brunswick; but in 1736 he built at Wilmington and moved there, and became a strong ally of Governor Johnston in his purpose to make Wilmington the emporium of the Cape Fear region at the expense of Brunswick. This action led to a violent antagonism with the Moores and their connections and others whose interests centered at Brunswick, which for some years defeated the governor in carrying out his instructions. And Murray and the governor's friends habitually spoke of the contest as one between "the family" and the government.

Murray soon became an active and zealous Wilmingtonian, and Johnston advanced him rapidly to posts of honor and influence. In 1738 Murray visited Great Britain, and when he returned to America in 1739 brought with him his cousin, John Rutherford, afterward member of the Council, receiver-general, etc., and in that same year Murray himself was appointed a member of the Governor's Council, and also collector of the port of Brunswick, and moved his office to Wilmington. Murray and Rutherford returned once more to England and Scotland in the fall of 1741, and came back to North Carolina in February, 1743. In 1744 Mr. Murray went to Scotland and married his cousin, Barbara Bennet. He remained in Great Britain for five years, returning to North Carolina in 1749. His wife did not join him till August, 1750. About the year last mentioned Murray decided to abandon mercantile life and to take up his abode on a plantation, and he carried this resolution into effect a few years later. In 1755 he speaks of having burned one hundred thousand brick for his house, which was building. About all the brick used in colonial houses, and almost invariably described as having been "made in England," probably had an origin somewhat similar.

Bricks were manufactured in North Carolina as early as the days of John Lawson. Saw-milling, tanning and the culture of silk were among the industries which engaged the attention of James Murray after removing to his plantation.

In 1753, shortly after the death of Governor Johnston, which occurred in 1752, Murray became secretary of the province and clerk of the Council. This was during a sort of inter-regnum, when the president of the Council was acting governor. Soon after the arrival of Johnston's regular successor, Governor Arthur Dobbs, some friction arose between him and Murray, whereupon he suspended Murray from office, in 1757, until the King's pleasure should be known, and John Rutherford was suspended from the office of receiver-general at the same time. Both were reinstated later; and the order made in 1762 reinstating Murray also restored to him his precedence in the Council, whose members ranked by seniority in service, and he thus became first member of the Council, his only senior having died while the recent suspension was in effect.

Mrs. Barbara Murray, wife of James Murray, died on the 19th of February, 1757. He was married a second time, November 30, 1761, to Mrs. Thompson, *née* Mackay, widow of Dr. Thompson of Charleston, South Carolina. This marriage took place in Boston.

In 1765 Mr. Murray, with his family, removed to Boston, where his sister and one of his daughters were living, and he engaged in large operations there, and never returned to North Carolina. In Boston he had many friends, and the surroundings were at first pleasant. But with the Revolution (in which he was a Loyalist) came trials and misfortunes, and he died an exile at Halifax, Nova Scotia, in 1781. For fuller particulars of Mr. Murray's life after leaving North Carolina the reader is referred to the volume from which the information contained in this sketch is drawn, viz., "Letters of James Murray, Loyalist," by Nina Moore Tiffany, assisted by Susan I. Lesley, printed at Boston in 1901.

Brevet Brigadier-General Thomas Clark of the North Carolina Line in the Continental army was a nephew of James Murray,

being a son of his sister Barbara, who married Thomas Clark of the Cape Fear section. William Hooper (signer of the Declaration of Independence) married a sister of General Clark, and hence a niece of Mr. Murray. Hooper's relatives, like Murray, were Loyalists, and their difference of political sentiments caused him much pain. In writing to one of Mr. Murray's daughters on the subject Hooper said: "One painful idea, however, will ever intrude itself upon me—that if I am right, my friends, my intimates, my relatives are essentially wrong; and errors are this day more than speculative—they extend to practice."

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.





FRANCIS NASH

"From the first dawn of the Revolution I have been ever on the side of liberty and my country."—*Dying words of General Nash.*



FRANCIS NASH, fourth son of John and Ann Owen Nash, was born at Templeton Manor, the homestead of his father, in Prince Edward County, Virginia, about 1742. I have given some account of his ancestry in the sketch of his brother, Governor Abner Nash.

His father was a well-to-do planter, and gave his sons such an education as befitted their condition. Francis Nash certainly had a good English education and some acquaintance with the classics.

The two brothers, Abner and Francis, seem to have come to Childsburg, now Hillsboro, in late 1762 or early 1763. Francis located there, while Abner in a few months went elsewhere. Childsburg had then all the roughness and rawness and raggedness of a back country settlement. It had been the county seat about nine years of a county that was great in territory, but small in population. At this time there were about a dozen dwellings in it, and all of these except three or four were simple log cabins. Two at least of the frame buildings were taverns. Only two of the streets had been laid off, and these at their north and west ends were mere broad roads through a forest. The courthouse was built of logs, while the jail was a small log cabin sur-

rounded by a high stockade. There was no resident minister of the gospel, no church and no schoolhouse. There were two or three small stores on the corners near the court-house. Edmund Fanning had come a few months before, and, besides practicing law, was a partner in one of these mercantile establishments. Francis Nash brought some capital with him, and he also invested in a store.

With the coming of these young, energetic and ambitious men the town took on new life. The population of the county was increasing at the rate of 400 or 500 per annum, and the settlements about the county town were becoming more numerous year by year. Governor Tryon became the patron of the town soon after his arrival in the country. At his suggestion its name was changed to Hillsboro in 1768, in compliment to the Earl of Hillsboro. In 1767 Rev. George Meiklejohn, a tall, dark, raw-boned Scotchman, with harsh features, slow, deliberate manner and the broadest of dialects, came as minister in charge of St. Matthew's parish. In the same year a market house, with wagon ways through it, was built over the intersection of King and Churton streets, and a handsome church was completed soon after. New streets were opened and much more commodious buildings were erected. In 1768 or 1769 Edmund Fanning and Francis Nash, as merchants, gave way to William Johnston and Ralph MacNair, two well-to-do Scotchmen. Mr. Johnston formed a co-partnership with James Thackston, while Mr. MacNair retained Francis Nash and probably John Dowell as partners.

Though the men outnumbered the women, there was with the new stocks of goods some show of dress and fashion. Mr. Fanning was notoriously careful of his person, and his raiment was of the most expensive material and the newest cut. In this little society he was the model of the lesser beaux. Mr. Nash, not so much of a dandy, is said to have been handsome, and though high spirited, singularly gentle, generous and sympathetic. The social life of the town at that period was, however, almost entirely devoid of the ameliorating influence of women. Quite frequently there were dinner parties, but composed wholly of men. There

was some culture, too. Besides, Mr. Fanning, Mr. Johnston, Mr. MacNair and Mr. Thackston were all educated gentlemen, well acquainted with books other than their day books and ledgers. And Mr. Meiklejohn, with his abundant but cumbrous classical learning, his Scotch fondness for strong drink and his Scotch capacity for resisting its influence, must not be forgotten. To be able to drink steadily and freely with all the guests without getting drunk was a great accomplishment in those days.

Speaking generally, each period of a people's life has its own virtues and its own vices. The society of these little towns at this period reproduced, of course in a very small way, English social conditions. The vices of the time were love of display, drinking, gambling and lack of true respect for woman's virtue. There was a courtliness in a gentleman's intercourse with women then which we rarely see now, but their virtue was a citadel that they themselves must guard. If he should choose to lay siege to it and be successful, why he was not to blame. Especially was this true in his relations to women of an inferior rank.

There was, however, a generosity that accompanied these vices, which to some extent redeemed them. I mention these things here because the unscrupulous demagogues of the period used them very efficiently in exciting the antagonism of the country people against the merchants, lawyers and officials who resided in the town.

In May, 1763, Francis Nash qualified as a justice of the peace and clerk of the County Court. He seems also to have been an attorney, but when he was licensed I have been unable to ascertain. This clerkship was the most important and lucrative of the county offices. The annual income from it was about £100 sterling. In 1764 he was a representative from Orange in the Colonial Assembly. He appeared no more as a representative until after the expulsion of Herman Husband, in December, 1770.

As clerk of the County Court he was one of the officials obnoxious to the Regulators, but their hatred of him does not seem at any time to have been virulent. At their first meeting, in 1766, he sent them word that he would refund to any one aggrieved any

fee charged by him which the Superior Court might hold excessive, and this offer he repeated in 1768. The act of 1748, which regulated the fees of these clerks, was so obscure and so ambiguous that it was said that there were only two men in the province who could make out a bill of costs correctly, Maurice Moore and John Burgwin. It was perfectly natural that the construction of this law by the recipients of these fees should be very different from that put upon it by those who paid them. They were simply looking at a doubtful question from different points of view, and this, in the inflamed state of public sentiment, resulted in an irreconcilable divergence of opinion. Both constructions of the law were, no doubt, sometimes wrong, but it is not claiming too much when we assert that the Regulators were wholly unfitted to determine the matter, and so were nearly always wrong. The law, however, gave occasion for offense, and these people conscientiously believed that Francis Nash was a dishonest scoundrel growing rich from the gains which he had extorted from them. It is not at all uncommon for large masses of the people to have, for a while at least, wholly distorted and false conceptions of men in public life even now, when they are much more enlightened than they were one hundred and thirty-seven years ago. History would be untrue to its own mission if it adopted as final the estimate of Mr. Cleveland's character made by the country people of the South in 1896, or that of Mr. Roosevelt in 1904. So here, and for exactly the same reason, it would be false to itself if it permitted Herman Husband or Rednap Howell or James Hunter or any other of the Regulators to fix its opinion of Francis Nash. Fortunately, they formulated their charges against him and sent them to Governor Tryon by their chosen messengers, and there is not one of these charges that to a person who has any knowledge of legal proceedings leaves any stain upon his character. They were formulated by ignorant laymen, who, with their distorted vision, saw mountains where there were only mole hills. Indictments upon them were drawn and sent to the grand jury at the March term, 1769, of the Superior Court, and they were ignored in every instance. It is true that the Regulators said the

grand jury was packed, but this was merely the venom of defeat. There was no truth in the charge, as the jury list shows. It is true, also, that Governor Tryon states that he was convicted at the September term, 1768. There is, however, no record of this conviction. It is probable that Governor Tryon thought that he was involved in Fanning's conviction at the same term, because the excessive charge was made through him, he collecting the total amount of 9s. and 4d., as the deed was probated, and turning 6s. over to Fanning. In the sketch of the latter I have shown that the best legal opinion of the day sustained this charge. His own charge of 3s. 4d. for the probate was the one made generally until the Assembly altered it in 1770.

He seems from the first to have been interested in military affairs. He was trained in the manual of arms by an old English corporal, who then resided in Hillsboro. He was a number of years captain of a company of militia, and then passed through the other grades until he became colonel of the county. His first actual service was at Alamance.

That was an irrepressible conflict. The Regulators' first false step was the agreement to pay no more taxes unless they were satisfied that they were to be devoted to a legal purpose. That in itself was constituting a tribunal unknown to the law. It was placing themselves above and independent of the County Court, which, as their representatives, controlled the finances of the county; of the Assembly, which, as their representative, managed the province at large; and of the courts, the final arbiters in disputes between the people and officials, as well as between man and man. But they went further than this. When a levy was made upon the property of one of them, they pursued the sheriff to Hillsboro, rescued the property from him, tied him to a tree, and then, before taking their departure, terrorized the town. This was adding illegal act to illegal combination. And then they not only paid no taxes, but warned the sheriff and his deputies not to come into their country with the intent to collect taxes. To attempt it was to court inevitable disaster. Affairs were in this state in the summer of 1768, when Governor Tryon demanded

that twelve of their principal men should execute a bond in the sum of £1000, conditioned that they should not attempt to rescue Herman Husbands or William Butler at the approaching September term of the Superior Court at Hillsboro. This they refused to do. The militia was then called out to protect that court. It was composed of many of the best men in the province, and while Governor Tryon's love of display and military form gives the little army, with its numerous generals, colonels, majors, etc., all taken from civil life, a rather ludicrous appearance, yet it did protect the court and overawe the malcontents. Indeed, so effective was this measure, in connection with Governor Tryon's subsequent clemency, that for the remainder of the year 1768 taxes were paid and the disturbances ceased. Fanning, immediately upon his conviction, had resigned as register of the county; the fees of the clerk had been lessened and made definite and certain by the Assembly in December, 1767; James Watson, against whom the Regulators made no complaint, had been appointed register in Fanning's place; those convicted at the September court, 1768, had been immediately released from imprisonment, the payment of their fines suspended for six months, and only a few days later, October 3, 1768, they, with all other rioters, had been pardoned except thirteen named in the proclamation, and even these were pardoned in September, 1769; Herman Husbands had been acquitted, and though James Hunter had been convicted, judgment in his case had been arrested on account of an insufficient verdict; the duties of the sheriffs in levying executions and in distraining for taxes had been defined and regulated, and more stringent rules adopted for the settlement of public accounts. Surely, all this was enough to abate the discontent of the people and make them realize that, after all, legal methods for the redress of their grievances were the best. Yet in April, 1769, Sheriff John Lea found it not safe to serve even a *capias* upon one of the leaders of the Regulators. He was seized by them, bound to a tree and severely whipped. Of this Governor Tryon was inclined to make light. It was not endorsed by the body of them, thought he, but was merely a sporadic case. He dissolved the Assembly

in May, 1769, and the new election was held in the summer. Herman Husbands and John Prior were chosen representatives. Thus the Regulators had not only driven their enemy, Fanning, from office and secured, in many particulars, substantial reform of the law, but they had now captured two more seats in the Assembly. When that Assembly was dissolved, Herman Husbands and John Prior were again returned from Orange. This was the state of things at the time of the Hillsboro riot of 1770. There was no immediate cause for it. There was no reason why the people should be especially excited at the time. No one outside of the Regulator organization was expecting it. Every lawyer, every official, seem to have been taken by surprise. It was really the effect of a long-continued and unscrupulous agitation of a headstrong, violent and ignorant populace. The men whom they hated were all there. What fitter opportunity to administer condign punishment? Hence the outbreak was wholly personal, directed solely against the lawyers and officials. Their leaders were all there, too, and the single instance in which they raised their hands to stay the riot was in the protection of Judge Henderson. The truth is that they apprehended no consequences from the riot. They thought that the governor could not embody the militia to fight against them, or, if he did, they would not fire upon them.

After the Hillsboro riot Alamance was a necessity, in the absence of unconditional surrender on the part of the criminals.

Francis Nash was, of course, on the side of law and order, and so fought against the Regulators at that battle. To call the roll of Governor Tryon's officers is indeed to call the roll of almost all who were leading patriots in the Revolution.

The battle had many sad features, but the saddest of all was the flocking of so many to the field who were there only from sympathy for their neighbors. They had taken no part in any of the riots or rescues. They believed that Tryon and the soldiers from distant counties had come to kill their neighbors, and under such circumstances the rightfulness or wrongfulness of resistance was a matter of little concern to them. Some of these were killed

and some were wounded. What wonder that Governor Tryon, amid the wailings and lamentations of their connections, should loom up as a tyrant! What wonder that tradition should perpetuate this conception of him and should canonize the victims of Alamance as liberty's martyrs! But Liberty, at Alamance, had gone after strange gods. She was not the chaste, comely virgin of the patriot's hope and desire.

Another sad circumstance of the battle was the desertion of the people by their leaders. They would not await the event, but instead mounted their horses and made good their escape, leaving a few hundreds of their deluded followers to bear the brunt of the day. Old Man Jarvis, of the quaint diarist, in Mr. Clewell's "Wachovia," was but a type of the Regulators at large—before Alamance, breathing out threatenings and slaughter against all those who would not join them; after Alamance, cringing to all who could protect them.

The historian Williamson says that the engagement commenced with the discharge of five cannon; that "Colonel Fanning, who commanded the left wing, unused to action and deficient in courage, fell back with the whole of his regiment except Captain Nash and his company." In this Fanning is no doubt treated with injustice, but it is certain that Nash made a reputation for courage and military conduct in this battle. This led to his subsequent promotion and his prominence as a military man when a real war was imminent.

He represented Orange County in the Assembly of 1770-71 and Hillsboro in the Assemblies of 1773. He also represented the county in the New-Bern convention of April, 1775, and the town of Halifax in the Hillsboro Congress of August in the same year.

He was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the First Regiment of the Continental Line September 1, 1775; colonel, April 10, 1776, and brigadier-general, February 5, 1777.

Immediately upon his appointment as brigadier-general he was ordered to the western part of the State to expedite the recruiting service, but in March he was ordered to join General Moore

(whose niece he had married) and to proceed north with all the troops that could be collected. In April General Moore died, and on the 20th of that month General Nash set out from New-Bern to take command of the brigade. From various causes the march of the troops north was delayed, and being further delayed by inoculation for smallpox at their camp at Georgetown, they did not reach Philadelphia until the 1st of July. They then moved on to Trenton, where they were stopped by Washington until the 26th, when they were ordered back to Philadelphia. Before they reached Philadelphia the order was countermanded. Uncertainty as to the objective point of Sir William Howe, who had embarked with his army at New York, and, after some manœuvring, had put to sea, was the cause of the brigade's being stopped at Trenton and also of its return to Philadelphia. On August 22d Washington received information that Howe's fleet had arrived in the Chesapeake, and he ordered General Nash to embark his brigade and Colonel Proctor's corps of artillery if vessels could be procured for the purpose, and to proceed to Chester; or, if vessels could not be procured, to hasten toward that place by land with all the despatch he could. At Chester, General Washington, with the remainder of his army, joined them, and they moved on to Wilmington, Delaware. It is unnecessary to state the further movements of the armies, which led up to the battle of Brandywine, September 11th. The North Carolina brigade was with General Sullivan, who managed badly and was too late coming up. Germantown, October 4th, was the first battle in which, as a brigade, it took part. It is clear that if all the officers and soldiers in General Washington's army had done their duty in that battle as faithfully as did the rank and file of the North Carolina Brigade, the result would have been very different. That they fought well is the uncontradicted testimony of all, and though they were swept away by a panic which soon became universal, it was under such circumstances that veterans could not have resisted it. They had been ordered to the front by Washington himself to reinforce Sullivan, and with him had pushed on a mile beyond the Chew House, driving the enemy before them, when Sullivan's troops,

having expended all their ammunition, were alarmed by seeing the enemy gathering on their left and by the cry of a light horseman that they were getting around them, and fell back in a disorder that soon became a panic. In an overwhelming fog friends were mistaken for enemies, and what at first promised to be a complete victory was converted into as complete a defeat. It was after the brigade had passed the Chew house and through the camp of the British light infantry and had gone a half mile or more into Germantown that General Nash was wounded. He was struck by a cannon ball, which also killed his horse. It is said that Major James Witherspoon, who was an aid of General Maxwell, was killed by the same ball. As he fell, General Nash called to his men: "Never mind me, I have had a devil of a tumble; rush on, my boys; rush on the enemy; I'll be after you presently." He was borne fainting from the field, and after lingering in great agony for three days, died, and was buried in the Mennonite Churchyard at Kulpsville, Pennsylvania.

His military career was too brief for him to have gained the fame that might have been his had his life been spared. Short as it was, however, he attracted the attention and secured the respect of General Washington and his subordinates. In his despatches Washington speaks of him as a valuable officer, sent his own physician, Dr. Craik, to attend him after his wound, and paraded the whole army at his burial. General Sullivan, in writing to the president of New Hampshire, testifies to his worth. Governor Burke, then a member of Congress, writes of him that he was one of the best, most respected and regretted officers in the army. Governor Caswell said that his equal was not to be found among the officers who survived him.

As a man he was brave and high-spirited, but warm-hearted, gentle and generous. His kindness and consideration for the men of his command caused him to be censured by a few of the officers of the brigade, but as long as there was a survivor of that brigade his name was held in affectionate reverence.

He married Miss Sarah Moore, daughter of Judge Maurice and a niece of General James Moore. Her brother, Colonel Alfred

Moore, afterward became judge of the Supreme Court of the United States. Two children of this marriage survived him—Annie, who died when she was thirteen years of age; and Sarah, who afterward married Mr. John Waddell.

On July 25, 1777, he wrote thus to his wife: "Is it possible, with such an army and a Washington at their head, that Americans have anything to fear? No, my dear Sally; I now feel the fullest assurance that can be founded on human events that nothing less than the immediate interposition of Providence (which I will not suppose to be excited in favor of tyranny and oppression) can prevent us from the invaluable blessings of liberty, freedom and independence. With those assurances I rest satisfied, with the blessing of Heaven, of returning to you ere long crowned with victory, to spend in peace and domestic happiness the remainder of a life which, without you, would not be worth possessing."

He was a true friend to liberty, a true lover of his country, and as such he has been honored by his State, by its daughter, Tennessee, and recently by the Federal Government.

Authorities: County Records in Hillsboro; Irving's "Life of Washington;" 7, 8, 9, 10 Colonial Records and 11 and 12 State Records.

Frank Nash.



in a tobacco factory. But his inclination for machinery led him, at the age of sixteen, to enter a machine shop as an apprentice, where he served for four years learning his trade. The next seven years of his life he worked as a journeyman machinist in Washington, Baltimore, Georgetown, Philadelphia, Kansas City, Denver, Pueblo and St. Paul, making an extended tour through the Western country and becoming well acquainted with a large part of the United States. He had now attained such skill that he was offered a position in Washington to take charge of some large chemical works there, which, however, he resigned to become foreman of the machine shops of the Glamorgan Company at Lynchburg, having married, in October, 1883, Catherine Biggins, and being desirous of making a permanent home for his family in the vicinity of his parents. But in March, 1884, he abandoned that position to accept an offer of the Bonsack Cigarette Machine Company of Lynchburg, which was making the Bonsack machine, a new invention intended to supersede the manufacture of cigarettes by hand. The machine was considered important, but did not do its work satisfactorily, and Mr. O'Brien was employed to try to perfect it and introduce it among the various tobacco companies engaged in the production of cigarettes. As desirable as it was to use a machine for this purpose, the tobacco companies were skeptical about their practicability, and, indeed, the machine as first devised gave little hope of ever being perfected sufficiently to make it available. Shortly after Mr. O'Brien was engaged for this work he was directed to carry one of the machines to Durham and erect it at the Blackwell Durham Bull Factory. The progress with this machine was very slow and unsatisfactory, but Mr. O'Brien addressed himself to the perfection of the instrument with great skill and persistent labor, and after seven months, during which he invented many improvements, he had the satisfaction of realizing that the machine was fairly successful, and its output had increased to about 100,000 per day. In the meantime, however, the Bonsack Machine Company had refused to observe their contract with him, and Mr. J. B. Duke, recognizing the capabilities of Mr. O'Brien, and being hopeful of his ultimate

success in making the instrument do the work intended for it, obtained a contract for him, allowing him three cents per thousand on all cigarettes made by the machines, and a little later this compensation was increased to four cents per thousand, as the perfected machine largely reduced the cost of manufacturing and added to the profits of the tobacco company.

After some three years of experimenting, the machines were so perfected as to give almost continuous satisfactory service, and the number in use had gradually increased to thirty-five, turning out nearly 4,000,000 cigarettes per day, whereas in the other factories throughout the country where the Bonsack machine had been placed it had proved a failure and had been entirely discarded as useless. Thus it was that Mr. O'Brien's skill as a mechanic and his patient industry perfected that complicated piece of mechanism, the Bonsack cigarette machine, to the enormous financial advantage of his employers, the W. Duke Sons & Company, whose cigarette business was the substantial foundation of their subsequent phenomenal success, leading to the establishment of the world-wide fame of the Dukes and the organization of the American Tobacco Company, one of the greatest developments of American industry.

At the age of thirty-one Mr. O'Brien had succeeded in saving \$1000, which stimulated his zeal to secure a competency, and since then, by the exercise of economy, foresight and judgment, taking advantage of favorable opportunities opened to him by the loyalty of his friends, he has been enabled to accumulate a handsome fortune, being now one of the capitalists of Durham. But while engaged in building up a large estate, Mr. O'Brien has not been neglectful of matters that appealed to his philanthropic impulses or to his public spirit. He contributed the first \$1000 toward founding the orphanage at Nazareth, and was largely instrumental in its establishment. He donated a lot worth \$6000 as a site for the Catholic Church in Durham, besides making liberal contributions for its erection. He was one of the first to make a handsome contribution toward the removal of Trinity College to Durham, and his liberal donations to educational and charitable

objects have been numerous and extensive. Born a poor boy, and having worked himself up beyond want, he appreciates the difficulties that many deserving people encounter in life, and he has always manifested a spirit to be useful to the meritorious and to give cheerful assistance when needed. While his beneficence toward his church, the Roman Catholic, is especially noteworthy, his liberality is not confined to that object, but is dispensed with a generous hand to many charitable purposes.

Successful in business, Mr. O'Brien has become interested in many of the enterprises that have contributed to the growth and importance of Durham. Although a modest and unassuming man, declining responsible positions rather than seeking high places of trust, he has still become a director of the Loan and Trust Company of Durham and a director in the Erwin Cotton Mills and of the Durham Savings Bank, and he has long been the superintendent of the American Tobacco Factory in Durham, a position which has afforded a fine field for the exercise of his mechanical talent, excellent judgment and fine capabilities. In politics Mr. O'Brien has always affiliated with the Republican Party. He has been chairman of the Republican County Executive Committee in Durham ever since 1894. In 1896 he was a delegate to the Republican National Convention at St. Louis, and in 1904 he was a delegate to the national convention at Chicago, and he has represented Durham County in all the Republican State conventions since 1898, and also in the congressional district conventions; and since 1902 he has been a member of the Republican State Executive Committee. Indeed, in recent years he has manifested a great interest in political matters, and has become a strong influence in the management of his party affairs in this State. He has, however, not sought for himself any political preferment; still, for two years, from 1900 to 1902, he served as an alderman for the city of Durham, taking a great interest in whatever concerned the prosperity and development of his community.

In early youth Mr. O'Brien's particular tastes led him to find recreation and exercise in rowing, and in recent years his favorite amusement and relaxation has been fishing and hunting, and he

has established a large game preserve in the northern portion of Durham County, where he and his friends find interesting sport.

While his natural mechanical turn and the circumstances of his life led Mr. O'Brien to become a machinist, for which, indeed, he has a genius, his success in life he attributes to the influence of a good home, which inspired him to make the most of his opportunities; and this purpose was increased by his association with the forceful men with whom he came in contact in the course of his business career.

Being asked to offer some suggestion that might contribute to the strengthening of sound ideals and be useful to youths in attaining true success in life, Mr. O'Brien says: "I would emphasize the absolute necessity of being truthful in all things; abstinence from all intoxicants, strictly honest in all business relations and charitable in judgment toward those with whom we may differ."

Mr. and Mrs. O'Brien have four children, and he has a charming home circle blessed with the presence of a noble, Christian wife and three fine sons and one lovely daughter.

S. A. Ashe.

On the 27th day of January, 1906, after the above sketch was prepared, Mr. O'Brien died at his home in Durham.



of light into deep forests and poured the currents of trade into wide reaches of back country. He possessed the true pioneer spirit. He did not build upon other men's foundation. He went to the frontier. He was a man of conscious power, bold, self-reliant, independent. He never waited for a leader, he blazed the way. He projected great enterprises without counsel with others. He saw things with his own eyes. He took sure aim and drove the shaft to the center of the mark.

The beginnings of his life were simple. He was reared on the farm. He was the son of Anderson Page, a planter and a worthy citizen of Wake County, North Carolina. He was born ten miles north of Raleigh, August 30, 1824. He was the fifth born in a family of twelve children. His home was one of comfort, but not of wealth. The Page family was one of marked intellectuality. It was a branch of the famous Page family of Virginia, a family that has been known for intellectuality and high worth for generations. Young Page inherited the virtues and the intellectual strength of the family. His youth was spent in the midst of scenes and of employments that helped to fashion his strong personality. His education was rudimentary, only such as could be obtained from the neighborhood schools.

In these early years he showed the passion of his soul for adventure. He loved the open fields and the deep forests. There was in his heart the spirit of daring and of bold undertakings. He believed that he could do things. When but a youth he took the contract for furnishing "stringers" for the construction of the Raleigh and Gaston Railroad. This was the beginning of his long career in the lumber business.

He had barely reached his majority when we find him rafting logs down the Cape Fear. This threw him for several years into the unbroken forests of that region, where he lived the hardy and daring life of the pioneer.

It was while engaged in this business, with his headquarters at Fayetteville, that an event occurred that had much to do with the happiness and successes of his after life. In his social life in Fayetteville he was thrown into the company of Miss Catherine

Frances Raboteau, a young woman of rare personal charm and of superior intellectual and spiritual power. They were married in Fayetteville July 5, 1849. Heaven showed great favor to young Page when it gave him this good woman to be the companion of his bosom. In the annals of the commonwealth there has hardly appeared a woman who has surpassed her in the qualities and affairs of a true wife, of a capable and devoted mother and of a genuine and luminous Christian. She was the keeper of a home that was singularly pure and sweet and nourishing, the abode of hospitality and the dispenser of charity.

In the early fifties Mr. Page moved to what is now the town of Cary, and practically built the larger part of that town. Here he engaged in many manufacturing and industrial enterprises, but his adventures here were never very successful; they yielded a competent income, but never any large increase. They were really failures as compared with the successes of his later years. But there was no loss of faith, there was no weakening of confidence, there was no weariness of spirit, there was no arrest of effort; but brave, cheerful, expectant, he turned his face to the future and hoped for the full fruition that came at last to his labors. Mr. Page lived in Cary about twenty-five years, and they were years of deep and profound experiences. It was during these years that he developed into the full stature of a large and generous manhood. It was in Cary that he took his true rank as a citizen and a man. It was here that he came to leadership among his fellow-men. There was one charm upon the life at Cary that was never lifted, and that mellowed and softened with the advancing years: it was the place where his children were born, and where the bright morning of their youth was spent, and where the home was full and the circle unbroken. Rarely has a home been so rich in its own life, and rarely has a home made so rich a contribution to the better life of the world.

In 1879 Mr. Page moved to Moore County and located at Aberdeen. It was almost like beginning life anew. When he arrived in Moore he was less than a poor man—he was \$10,000 in debt, and he was fifty-five years old. He had come to the time in life

when most men despair of retrieving lost fortunes. But he girded himself for the most strenuous effort of his life, and took up his work with confident assurance of success. Mr. Page through all his long business career seems never to have doubted his own wisdom to plan and his own power to achieve. He never for a moment thought of failure. He had faith in his own mental processes, and he had an energy that was unappalled in the presence of mightiest difficulties. In the new field into which Mr. Page had projected himself he went back to the passion of his earlier years, the lumber business. He began operations with the enthusiasm and expectancy of a young man. He was reinforced at this point in his business equipment with the sympathetic and heroic co-operation of several of his noble sons, who had just come to the years of vigorous young manhood. Success in this new field was not long delayed. Mr. Page threw himself into the vast reaches of the pine forests of this region, and within a few years he was one of the largest manufacturers of lumber in North Carolina. The superior quality of the product of his mills and the unquestioned integrity of his business methods gave him great favor in the markets of the country, and put his shipments at a premium. The things that marked the career of Mr. Page as one of the State's most successful business men were his distinct originality, his unwearied energy and his unquestioned uprightness of character. These were the forces that he brought into full play in the achievements of his life. He carved out success with his own strong arm and with his own personal worth. He stemmed the current. He compelled success. He won it by his own well-directed efforts and by his own great strength of character. This was especially true of his undertakings in Moore County. It was a bold strategy that marked his movements at this time, and he not only held his position, but he advanced to distant heights and planted the flag of conquest in regions undreamed of in the beginning. He became one of the State's wealthiest citizens, among those who accumulated wealth in the sweat of their face.

Simultaneously with the expansion of his lumber business, Mr. Page entered upon the most enduring work of his life, the

building of the railroad now known as the Aberdeen and Asheboro Railroad. He very soon extended his lumber business into Montgomery County; and as he pushed his way up into this vast forest region he laid the track of his road, and opened up the country and brought it into closer contact with the great currents of business and of progress. To-day there are populous and thriving towns where there were slow-moving hamlets or deep forests. A new and a better day has dawned upon the land. Wealth has come with her hand full of blessing; education has brought her treasures of wisdom and of learning; Christianity has quickened her pace and multiplied her forces. And all this advance in the better life of the country was made possible because of the pioneer work of Frank Page.

In 1890 Mr. Page retired from the lumber business and gave himself solely to the operation and perfecting of his railroad. He built two lines of road, the Aberdeen and Asheboro, in Randolph County, and a branch road reaching from Biscoe to Mt. Gilead, all in Montgomery County. These two lines measure about eighty miles, and constitute the largest line of road built by any private citizen of the State.

In this work Mr. Page made his largest contribution to the constructive resources of the commonwealth, and also laid the enduring foundation of his own large estate. This entire line of road was built under his own eye and according to his own common-sense judgment. He employed a civil engineer, but when the plans of his engineer did not suit him he brushed them away and worked his own plans.

Mr. Page operated his road until 1898, when he turned it over to his sons and retired from business. He was now an old man, having served his generation with much effectiveness and with the poise of a righteous purpose. The evening hour came to him as to the traveler spent with his journey, who has been long upon the road and who welcomes the repose and rest of the night, that he may be ushered into a more glorious morning. He died in Raleigh, North Carolina, October 16, 1899.

Rarely has the State reared a son that has equaled him in the

magnitude of his labors. He was a great builder. He was a constructive force in the world. He made the solitary places to be glad. He was an honored servant of the State. He won his rank among the chief citizens of the commonwealth by the works that he did and by the high life that he lived. "Whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant."

In his private life, in his home and in the company of his friends Mr. Page was a man of attractive personality. He had a commanding presence, he was of noble stature. He had a mind of ready comprehension; he was alert and engaging in conversation; he was full of humor; he had a keen relish for a good joke; he was fond of innocent mirth. He loved the social hour with his family and his friends. His hearthstone has been the scene of many a bright evening where mind sharpened mind and where the heart was at its best. That charmed circle has known all the changes from profound discourse to diverting anecdote.

In his citizenship Mr. Page was a man of large public spirit. He had a concern for the common good. He was the friend of education. He joined himself to every movement of his times that sought the general welfare of the people. He was the implacable foe of the whiskey traffic before opposition to that business took organic form in North Carolina. It is one of the traditions of his road that he would receive no consignment of whiskey over his line. It is known to his intimate friends that he built the Park Hotel in Raleigh because he wanted to see in the capital of his State a first-class hotel without a saloon.

Mr. Page was a man who put the whole force of his life back of the church of Christ. He was a man of simple faith. There was perfect sincerity in his allegiance to Christ. He was never a formalist. He was never a sentimentalist. He was just a brave, strong man, doing his work with the intimation of immortality in his bosom and an humble trust that Christ would open to him the gates of life. He held membership with the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. For many years he bore its burdens and carried its interests in the communities where he lived. He was honored with various official positions at the hands of his brethren.

He lived in their confidence and love. His lot was cast with them, and his heart said unto them in the language of confiding Ruth: "Thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God." For years and years Mr. Page was a helpful contributor to the building of nearly every church, white and colored, that was built in his section of the State. He was one of the founders of the Methodist Orphanage at Raleigh, being at the time of his death the largest benefactor of that beneficent institution.

Among the notable achievements of his life, the following may be put to record:

He built the Park Hotel and the Academy of Music at Raleigh.

He manufactured enough lumber to have built ten cities of the size of Raleigh.

He built the Aberdeen and Asheboro Railroad.

He built a character of true proportions and of enduring worth.

He built a home that gave to the world three daughters and the following sons: Walter H. Page, Robert N. Page, Henry A. Page, Junius R. Page and Frank Page.

J. N. Cole.



strong. After leaving Randolph-Macon College, he went to Johns Hopkins University, where he held a fellowship in Greek during the first two years of the University under Professor Basil L. Gildersleeve. The spirit of the University in those early days, when Johns Hopkins was the first to give the opportunity for graduate work, and when the brightest men came from the leading Universities of America, was especially stimulating.

After a vacation in Europe, a year of teaching in Louisville and some lectures at the summer school at Chapel Hill, he decided to go into journalism. He could find no place in North Carolina, so by advertising he got a position as reporter at a very small salary in St. Joseph, Missouri. He became in a year the editor of the paper on which he began work as a reporter. He frequently went to Kansas City and St. Louis, where he had the chance to see Western life, which has always had a fascination for him. He began, in addition to his work as reporter and as editor, to write for the magazines—first for the *Atlantic Monthly*, of which he became editor many years later—articles dealing especially with the South. He made a tour of the South, and sent articles to the great dailies. With wide open eyes he had seen from his youth some of the limitations of the Southern life of that time, especially when contrasted with the West, and he wrote frankly about them in a simple and direct style that attracted attention.

In 1881 Mr. Page went to the Atlanta Exposition as special correspondent for the New York *World*, then under the editorship of W. H. Hurlbut. While in Atlanta he received one day a telegram from the *World* summoning him to New York. He wrote reviews, literary notes and editorials. Best of all, however, he was sent to Washington, where he was thrown in contact with many distinguished men. He followed with keen interest a long debate on the tariff.

A change came in the editorship of the *World*, and Mr. Page, along with other members of the staff, resigned. While on a visit to his father in North Carolina he was persuaded to start the Raleigh *Chronicle*, of which he was editor for a year or more.

was associated
J. OLDHAM
the Sentinel

The files of this paper make very interesting reading—never was there such a stirring of dry bones in the old State. With courage and insight the young editor wrote what he thought about everything that took place; he advocated policies that were revolutionary in his day, but are now accepted as fundamental. He stood for industrial education and for the development of public schools. But the paper did not pay; the editor lost all the money he put into it, and he went back to New York “without a dollar or a job.” Without any regular position, for a year or more he wrote for the magazines and newspapers. He could make a living with his pen. A wider association with authors and newspaper men then came. His work found recognition from the New York *Evening Post*, of whose staff he was a member for a year or two. He was then offered first the management, then the editorship, of the *Forum*, a position which he held until 1895. A reading of that magazine for those years shows that it was then far better than it ever was before or has been since. As editor, Mr. Page displayed those qualities that have characterized all his later work. He knew what people wanted to read and he knew the men who would give it to them.

In 1895 he was called to Boston as literary adviser to Houghton, Mifflin & Company, and in the following year was given the additional position of editor of the *Atlantic Monthly*. At forty years of age, then, he had won his way to a position that had been held by James Russell Lowell, James W. Fries, William D. Howells, Thomas Bailey Aldrich and Horace E. Scudder. The *Atlantic*, which had been identified in a special way with the group of New England authors, was much broadened under Mr. Page's editorship. He put it into more vital connection with the life of the country. A typical incident was his putting the old flag on the cover at the time of the Spanish War.

Although Mr. Page was now living an almost ideal life in Cambridge, under the shadow of Harvard University, and although he was connected with one of the two great publishing houses of America, he found a salaried editorship too narrow. He wanted a magazine that would be his own, and consequently a publishing

house. So in 1899 he and Mr. F. N. Doubleday (formerly with the Scribners) organized the firm of Doubleday, Page & Company, which in six years or less has made its way to a leading position among American publishers. They have been the publishers of many already recognized standard authors, such as Kipling, and have made the reputation of new writers, like Norris and Miss Ellen Glasgow. In addition to a constantly increasing business, they have established with great success *The World's Work*, *Country Life in America* and the *Garden Magazine*. Of these, the *World's Work* is Mr. Page's special magazine. Its object was well indicated in the first number. "It is with the activities of the newly organized world, its problems and even its romance, that the magazine will earnestly concern itself, trying to convey the cheerful spirit of men who do things." The editor's survey of the events of the month is one of the most penetrating and statesmanlike interpretations of contemporary life. The magazine has thus come to occupy a distinct place in national life—it is thoroughly characteristic of the spirit of the editor, his alertness of mind, his aggressiveness, his modernness and cosmopolitanism.

Personally, Mr. Page is one of the most attractive of men. He has the enthusiasm and hospitality characteristic of the South. Nothing gives him more pleasure than to have his friends, especially those from North Carolina, at his home near Englewood, New Jersey. His wife and four children (two of them already graduates of Harvard) add to the joy of his life as well as to the pleasure of his guests. He is a most interesting conversationalist, his talk teeming with anecdotes and incidents gathered from his extensive travels and his wide acquaintance with prominent men.

As a citizen he is interested in public affairs. His voice and pen have been in evidence in the municipal contests of New York City, while the problems of the nation engage his serious attention. During recent years his most signal service to the South and to the nation has been in connection with the General and Southern Education Boards, organized primarily to inaugurate and stimulate a movement for better public schools throughout the South. His accurate and vital knowledge of Southern affairs, and the

nce placed in him by men of the South and of the North, made him one of the most useful men in this work. His book on "The Rebuilding of Old Commonwealths" is really the expression of the movement. No other man has seen so clearly or stated so forcibly and directly the significance of manual education in the South in establishing a democratic republic. Few men have ever heard him or read him who do not believe that he is profoundly interested in his native section, and that furthermore he is doing constructive work in bringing about a finer civilization. His travels in all parts of the world have made his observations on Southern life all the more valuable. Nothing he has said or done has been with a view to helping any unnecessary movement looking to greater freedom of thought and to the general welfare of the people.

Edwin Mims.



upon the public, and is a man to be reckoned with when any interest of the public is involved. Some of the brightest things that have been said in the press of our State in recent years, and that have been said with a directness of aim and with an impact of argument that was well-nigh irresistible, have been said by Mr. Page. An article from his pen always means that an occasion has arisen when something should be said, and that there is a man present to say it, and to say it clearly, bravely, justly. Few men have been so daring as to enter the lists against him whenever he has championed a cause; and those that have entered have felt the shock of a terrible antagonist, and have been left unhorsed upon the field. Among the notable papers that have appeared in our State press in our times were Mr. Page's articles opposing the nomination of Judge Walter Clark for the Supreme Court bench in 1902. It required an overmastering conviction and the heart of a brave man for Mr. Page to oppose Judge Clark, a man of unsurpassed ability and the most popular and influential citizen of the State. So forceful and cumulative was Mr. Page's argument against the nomination of Judge Clark that many citizens believed that the Democratic Party would have retired from the field any other candidate having a weaker hold upon the people than Judge Clark. Mr. Page is just a private citizen, giving himself to his work and living a life removed from public notice; but he has gifts that fit him for the affairs of State and for the most conspicuous public services. Had he chosen one of the professions, he would have doubtless come to an elevation that few men attain. Had he chosen journalism, he would have made a great editor. Had he chosen law, he would have taken rank with the masters. Had he chosen letters, he would have had companionship with the great spirits of literature.

But his work has been in other fields. He is a man of manifold business interests. But his chief business is in connection with his office as president of the Aberdeen and Asheboro Railroad. He has filled this office with marked ability, and has won the confidence of the public as an honest and capable railroad man. He is really regarded as an expert in railroad affairs. This was

recognized when he was appointed by Governor Aycock in 1904 on the committee to investigate the management of the Atlantic and North Carolina Railroad. The presence of Mr. Page on this committee with other worthy members gave the public to know that the investigation would be thorough, fair and efficient.

Mr. Page's home is in the town of Aberdeen, Moore County, North Carolina. He takes a very real interest in the affairs of his community. He is a strong and influential man among his own people. They look to him as a leader. Every good cause finds in him a ready and brave champion. He is known as the friend of the poor and helpless. Under his strong arm they find protection. He is a fearless fighter of evil wherever it shows its head. No one ever questions which side Henry Page will be on in all issues that arise in the life of the country. He is always on the side of justice and of the better life of the people, and he is there to stand until the last man falls or until the last stronghold of sin is taken. In 1905 Mr. Page was elected president of the convention of the Anti-Saloon Leagues of North Carolina at its session in Raleigh, and he was recognized by the entire citizenship of the State as a fit and worthy head to that great movement.

In politics Mr. Page "stands in his own boots and carries his sovereignty under his own hat." He is an independent Democrat. He takes a profound interest, as all true citizens should, in all political questions. He is really an earnest student of politics. He is never an indifferent spectator when matters touching the public good are at issue. He believes in political parties, but he believes that no true man should ever become a partizan and blindly follow a party in the support of corrupt men or of wrong measures. On one occasion, when asked as to what suggestions he would make to young Americans for the strengthening of sound ideals in our American life, Mr. Page said: "Above all other things, cultivate the habit of thinking for self, and resist the common disposition to stampede at the cry of any leader, and do not form the habit of getting excited too often."

Mr. Page has been from his boyhood an earnest working member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. He is one of

the strong men of the church in North Carolina. He is a man upon whom the church leans in her times of greatest human need and to whom she looks for safe counsel. In the midst of his many business engagements and of pressing demands upon his time, his church has never asked a service of him that he did not readily give. He has been honored with various official positions in his church. He is a member of the Board of Missions of the North Carolina Conference. He is a member of the Board of Trustees of Trinity College. He has often been a delegate to the annual conference of his church. He is a member of the official board of his local church, being a steward and also the superintendent of the Sunday-school.

Mr. Page belongs to a notable family. He is the son of the late A. F. Page and Catherine Frances Raboteau, his wife. He was born in the town of Cary, North Carolina. He was educated at the local village school and at the celebrated Bingham School at Mebane, North Carolina. His parents showed wisdom in rearing their children. They were not suffered to spend their youth in idleness. When not in school, they were put to useful labor. Young Page's time was divided between his books and hard work on the farm and in the cotton factory. In this way he grew up a healthy and well-developed youth, with a hand trained for labor and with a passion for learning.

On November 4, 1885, Mr. Page was married to Miss Eva L. Pleasants of Louisburg, North Carolina. From this marriage there have been born six children. Mr. Page's home is the conception of an artist, embowered, yet sunlit, a poet's ideal, peaceful, sweet, nourishing, capacious, a trysting place for friends, a shrine for literature and religion. Those who know Mr. Page as a brilliant and forceful writer, as a capable business man and as a commanding influence in the State, have some conception of the strength of his manhood; but they know him best who know him in his home as the gracious and engaging host, as the dispenser of hospitality and as the student among his books.

Mr. Page is still a young man. We cannot now forecast the career that awaits him, we cannot now know the public service

to which his State may yet call him; but in the nearby years to come, if he should live, and if North Carolina should want a man to fill the office of governor that will be a true leader of her people in the paths of virtue and to the highest ideals of government, and if she should turn from her politicians to the ranks of her private citizens to find such a man, she can find him in Henry A. Page.

J. N. Cole.



blood. It would be impossible for him to belittle either their ideals or their deeds.

The lessons he has learned in his study of those historic days have not tended toward the paralyzing of his faculties, but rather to the increase of his faith and hope; for with true philosophic spirit he has not stood looking at the past, but to it, for whatever of chivalry, of inspiration, of manhood, it had to give him, and with face to the future, he has sought nobly and earnestly not to fall behind the men of the past in his contribution of head and heart which go to make a State.

It was the boast of Benjamin Franklin that he was the youngest son of the youngest son for five generations back. While Mr. Page has not this magic number with which to conjure, yet it can be claimed for him that he is a worthy son of a noble sire—of this fact he has given ample proof.

He was born at Cary, Wake County, North Carolina, on the 26th day of October, 1859.

His father was Allison Francis Page, better known as Frank Page, as he was called the State over. His mother before marriage was Miss Catherine Frances Raboteau of Fayetteville, North Carolina.

No one will ever know how to draw the line between what he inherited and what he afterward acquired. A very simple problem as it relates to things material, but very difficult, yea, impossible, as it relates to one's spiritual possession. That the inherited was great no one will deny, and certainly the acquired no one will despise; for he has wrought in unison with their high purposes and lofty ideals, and few things would grieve him more than to know that in any of his undertakings he had been actuated by motives unworthy of them.

At a very early age he was taught that boyhood days were not at all to be spent in play or idleness, so he was given tasks commensurate with his ability, and made to understand that only by performing these duties could he hope to be excused. And who will say that this lesson to lay to till the work was done has little to do with shaping and molding the fine character?

Some one has said that God hates a quitter. If this be true, then Mr. Page's name should stand high on the list of those whom he loves; for perseverance and tenacity are characteristic of the man. In the first place, he believes that a man should be convinced that the cause he espouses is a right and worthy one, and therefore deserving of the best that is in him, and that not for an hour only, but so long as is needful. This accounts for his few failures and his many successes. Right cause, right motive, adequate strength and power, and you have the mainspring of all his actions.

His early school days were spent at the high school in his native town—Cary. Afterward he attended the famous Bingham School at Mebane, North Carolina. He has always had a fondness for reading, and, fortunately, for those books that have added to his fund of useful knowledge.

He has the happy faculty of making friends, and more important still, of retaining them, and every year does but add to the long list. This is but in keeping with that saying of the wise man: "He that hath friends must show himself friendly." There are none more friendly than he and none more sincere therein. But friends are not all that he has asked of Heaven nor not all that has been given.

On the 20th of June, 1888, he was married to Miss Flora Shaw of Manly, North Carolina. These two together, with three boys and one girl, form a charming and happy family. Into this sacred place we dare not come, even though we approach it with bare feet and bowed head. It is holy ground, for over its portals we read their prayer, their chief desire: "That our sons may be as plants grown up in their youth; that our daughters may be as cornerstones polished after the similitude of a palace." Full well they know: "Happy is that people that is such a case; yea, happy is that people whose God is the Lord."

Having known and shared in the blessings of two good homes, that of his parents and of his own, Mr. Page stands ready to champion the cause of this divine institution, and believes that in no other field could he so well conserve the highest interest and welfare of his native land. He believes in and works for its

inviolability, its stability and perpetuity. To the home he gives precedence of all those sources of influence which go to the making of manhood. High above all the clamors, the tumults and strifes incident to a life spent in making sweeter, clearer, better the conditions surrounding those whose highest interest he has ever sought, there has sounded for his encouragement and strengthening the one clear, sweet note of his mother's voice. And for its message he has had an open ear and a willing hand.

Whatever he has touched he has made better; for his faith has been that upon every man there rests the responsibility to recover, to redeem, so far as in him lies, the waste and barren places, and to make smooth and safe the highways over which human feet are to pass.

He is a pronounced optimist, not because he himself has succeeded, but because his mind is sound and his heart is in the right place. Believing in men as he does, he is seldom discouraged in his services for them, and therefore is enabled to accomplish much for their betterment.

Long ago Mr. Page learned that success in any sphere of life is impossible unless one gives strict attention to details, however small or trivial they might seem. Therefore he has sought to learn not only the main facts of the business in hand, but all the facts. In this he has saved himself and others much trouble and loss. He has dignified and exalted the small things, knowing that they go to constitute the large, and so, by strict application in high endeavor here and there, in little and great, he has fitted himself to fill the places to which he has come.

Statistics are about as communicative as the sphinx. It has its place, so have they. The following numerals give starting and ending points, nothing more: Mr. Page was associated with others in the manufacture of lumber at Aberdeen, 1880 to 1888; and from 1888-1900 was general manager of the Page Lumber Company, Aberdeen, North Carolina. From 1890-1902 he was treasurer of the Aberdeen and Asheboro Railroad Company, and in 1902 was elected its vice-president, which position he still holds.

He was mayor of Aberdeen from 1890-98. Representative from Montgomery County to the North Carolina General Assembly from 1901-03. In 1902 he was elected by the Seventh Congressional District as a member of the Fifty-eighth Congress, and afterward was elected as a member of the Fifty-ninth Congress. During the year 1901, while in the State legislature, he was chairman of the Committee of Insane Asylums, in which position he labored with great zeal to help those most unfortunate ones. The allowances which he sought to secure were liberal and just, not unworthy the great cause of these helpless wards of the State. While in Congress he has never sought to gain favor with his constituents by filling the public eye with spectacular performances; but in a quiet, dignified and businesslike way he has held steadily to his work, giving to it his best thought, and thereby has made a record well worthy of the man. By virtue of a clean life, by wise counsel and a bright and well-stored intellect, he has in hall of Congress and in caucus chamber proven himself worthy "to stand before kings."

To all these places of private and public trusts he has brought a clear head, a clean heart and a strong arm. How well he has wrought and what he has accomplished one will have to learn from other than himself; for he does not speak of himself nor parade his deeds. If he has vanity, then his wisdom is far in excess; for the first you have no exhibition of, the latter is known to those to whom he is known. The knowledge of having done some good is far sweeter than the praise of men, however sincere or well meaning it may be.

Years ago Mr. Page connected himself with the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, the church of his parents, and has striven so to live his life that no blame or hurt would come to the cause of his Master. One thing is sure, that whatever else he may do, he will not capitalize his religion into the coin of the world to barter and trade for material aggrandizement or political preferment. He is not a pietist, nor a pharisee, nor a puritan; but a sane, healthy human being, who loves men not because they are good or bad, but because they are his brothers. He does not

consider that religion lies in outward form or semblance, but in character, and only there.

He has often been honored—that's the way he views it—by serving as a lay member of the district and the annual conferences of his church. His most notable service in this connection has been as chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Methodist Orphanage at Raleigh, North Carolina. To this institution he has given unstintedly of time, means and personal service. While filling so large a place in the political life of the State, he has fully realized that to be zealous and active in church work might subject him to the adverse criticism of men low born, low bred and lower descended, yet he has not faltered nor swerved from the course he conceived to be right, and thus many a good cause has been the richer thereby.

Judging Mr. Page's future course in life by what we already know of him, we feel assured that whatever opportunities may come to him, he will accept them with humility becoming a true man, and not regard them as occasions for ministering to personal pride or vanity, but as God given, to be turned to good account in helping to bring nearer

"That one, far off, divine event
Toward which the whole creation moves."

John H. Hall.





PARKER QUINCE



AMONG the earnest and zealous patriots of the Cape Fear during the Revolution were the different members of the Quince family. Richard Quince, the first of the name to settle on the Cape Fear, came from England about 1740 and located at Brunswick, where he engaged in merchandise and in planting. In 1741 he was excused from jury duty as being a Freeman of one of the Cinque Ports, England. He came from Ramsgate, England, where he continued to own property, and where the other members of his family resided. Among his other possessions was the fine plantation of Orton, which in the division of his estate on his death in 1778 passed to a son, Richard. His children intermarried with the Walkers, the Davises, Moores and the Hasells, and his descendants are allied with many of the first families of the Cape Fear. His second son, Parker Quince, the subject of this sketch, was also a merchant, and became famous for his humane and patriotic efforts for the relief of the suffering people of Boston when that port was closed by Great Britain and the inhabitants had to depend for sustenance upon their sympathizing friends. In July, 1774, when the news came that the port of Boston had been closed, the people of the district of Wilmington, embracing the Cape Fear counties, met at Wilmington, and subscriptions were opened in behalf of

Boston. In a very few days a vessel load of provisions was obtained, and Mr. Parker Quince, who himself was a liberal subscriber, generously made an offer of his vessel to carry the provisions to Boston, and went with it himself.

Other supplies were also collected, both in Anson County and at New-Bern and in Pitt County, as well as in other communities. While Parker Quince was setting this example of fervid patriotism, his brothers, Richard and John Quince, were members of the Committee of Safety.

In those first days of resistance to the mother country, when there was need of leadership, for it is always the first step that costs, it required nerve and resolution to make the fatal cast of the die. Merchants have ever been proverbially cautious and conservative, but Parker Quince did not hesitate. He crossed the Rubicon and burned his bridges behind him. He associated himself with John Ashe, Robert Howe, Cornelius Harnett and those other patriots who threw themselves into the breach and sought to lead the people to the standard of liberty. He stood with the foremost before public sentiment had crystallized, and placed at hazard his life and fortune for the rights of his countrymen. He represented the borough of Brunswick in the Provincial Congress of April, 1775, and was active in promoting measures of defense. Not a politician, but a merchant and man of business, his ripe experience and his advice were of invaluable assistance in giving direction to the details of administration in that formative period of State affairs. While he did not aspire to military command, he was ready to shoulder his musket and share the fortunes of his neighbors in the field. In organizing the militia of his county, his brother Richard became first major of the regiment and he the second major. He represented his borough in all the succeeding provincial congresses, and was one of those who, when Brunswick, his home, was within the power of the invading British forces, in April, 1776, instructed our delegates to the Continental Congress to concur in making treaties with foreign nations and declaring independence.

He and his brothers and the younger members of his family

continued to render faithful and efficient service in behalf of their country until at length their efforts and sacrifices resulted in victory and peace.

After the war he moved to Wilmington, Brunswick being deserted, and died toward the close of the century, entirely respected by his community.

S. A. Ashe.



and the primal forest, emigrated to Virginia, founded there a home for himself and became a well-known planter of the Old Dominion. This was the grandfather of the subject of this sketch.

Richard Joshua Reynolds was born in Patrick County, Virginia, July 20, 1853. He is the second living son of Hardin W. Reynolds and wife, Nancy Cox Reynolds, and is sixth of the fifteen children born to them. Mr. Hardin Reynolds was one of the largest, if not the largest, slave-holder and planter in Virginia; was also a merchant, trader and manufacturer of tobacco. He was noted for his ability, shrewdness, uprightness and hospitality; had served as captain of the militia, and filled various other offices of honor and trust, and was well known and regarded not only in Virginia, but in the surrounding States. He was the pioneer tobacco manufacturer of his section, and was the first to import into it improved farming machinery. The older citizens of the community to this day relate interesting stories told them by their forbears of the general commotion caused by the Reynolds's threshing machine, the first that had appeared in the community.

The mother of R. J. Reynolds was Nancy J. Cox, daughter of Mr. Joshua Cox of Stokes County, North Carolina, and granddaughter of the celebrated Joshua Cox, patriot and warrior of the Revolution, a soldier whom Wheeler, in his History of North Carolina, speaks of as the *fidus achates* of Colonel John Martin.

As a boy, Mr. Reynolds was active, strong and vigorous, and the work on the farm laid the foundation for the remarkable constitution which has enabled him to put forth successful efforts along so many lines. He is by instinct, leaning and habits fond of horses, of all outdoor life, and the daily tasks given him as a boy and executed with exactness and care proved blessings for the future. When a mere boy, war between the States came on. His older brother went to the front, and was captain in the Confederate service at the age of sixteen years, and before he was seventeen he was advanced to the rank of major. The responsibilities of affairs at home naturally fell upon the shoulders of the next male member of the family, so early in life he assumed responsibilities. He attended school at home, "studied little and

learned less," but at once developed a love for mathematics. Later he was a student of Emory and Henry College, but left there in 1871, before graduation. At this time his father, older brother, Major A. D. Reynolds, and brother-in-law, Judge A. M. Lybrook, were engaged in the manufacture of tobacco at the home place, and Mr. Reynolds, then a boy, undertook to dispose of the product. There were no jobbers and few railroads in that day. The business was a wagon trade, driven over the mountains to the populous sections of the country, and a successful trip was the shortest possible haul and back home with the most money. Cash was not the only consideration of these sales; any kind of property was accepted in the deal which in the ultimate wind-up would yield the greatest number of dollars. This was known as peddling tobacco, and Mr. Reynolds, in his hours of recreation, in which he too seldom indulges, takes delight in recounting his early trades and the many experiences of his wagon trade. With a two-horse wagon load of manufactured tobacco, out through the gaps of Southwest Virginia into East Tennessee and Kentucky, out for a trade—horses, wagon, harness and tobacco—all in the deal, and a boy of sixteen or seventeen up against the shrewdest speculators and the best of business men. Trade anything so you make profit, and walk home with money rather than ride back empty-handed. In this primitive but hard school Mr. Reynolds learned the lessons of life, took those lessons to heart deeper and closer than most men, and in the conduct of his present immense business the successful and well-laid plans by which he has won the fame of a great merchant and manufacturer are those simple lessons learned when a boy, intelligently applied to great affairs involving millions. Feeling the need of additional education and preparation for business, he entered Bryant & Stratton's Business College of Baltimore in 1874. There he wasted no time, but spent every moment in hard application to learning business methods. Upon his return home he took charge of the factory of his father and others, superintended the manufacture of the tobacco, introduced new and improved methods, and ran it with marked success.

At this time the business of manufacturing plug tobacco was

assuming large proportions and taking definite shape. Greater transportation facilities, improved conditions from the poverty of the Reconstruction days and the decrease in the revenue tax tended to establish the manufacturer in fixed localities, and to open the door to improved methods and enlarged business. Mr. Reynolds studied the situation carefully, considered location and opportunities for mastering this great trade, and became convinced that the opportunity was offered at Winston-Salem, North Carolina. With extraordinary foresight, he at once purchased property in Winston, erected a factory in 1875, and began, with a capital not exceeding \$10,000, that great enterprise which was destined to be the largest manufactory of flat goods plug tobacco in the world. From the beginning to this good hour the business increased from year to year, and addition after addition was built to one factory and then to another. In 1888 he incorporated his business into the R. J. Reynolds Tobacco Company, taking in with him the heads of departments heretofore employed, including his brother Mr. William N. Reynolds, and later taking in his brother Mr. Walter R. Reynolds. From time to time the capital stock has been increased to meet the demands of the business, and this company has now reached the magnitude of a yearly output of 27,000,000 pounds of plug and twist tobacco, the employment of 4600 operatives in its various departments, and having a capital of \$5,000,000 of full-paid stock. As the originator and builder of this tremendous business stands Mr. R. J. Reynolds, knowing and overlooking every department, daily giving time to the details of both manufacture and sale, and formulating the plans upon which moves this enormous enterprise. Although a busy man, Mr. Reynolds has found time to travel in all parts of this country and in Canada, and with his wife recently spent many months in Europe. He always combines in these trips to a remarkable degree business with pleasure and education with recreation and rest.

In politics Mr. Reynolds has always been a Democrat, but in some recent issues involved in national politics his sympathies have not been in accord with the Democratic platform. The idea which

he most often advances in any political discussion is that two equally balanced parties are necessary to obtain good government. Of course, Mr. Reynolds never held official position—too busy a man for that. From time to time his services have been demanded by his friends for the furtherance of business projects, yet he has retained but few positions. Save the presidency of his own company, the chief places now held by him are directorships of the Virginia-Carolina Chemical Company and Southern Cotton Oil Company.

In the growth, development and improvement of the State and his city Mr. Reynolds has always taken the deepest interest, and is ever ready to assist with counsel, advice, time and money. Many educational, charitable and philanthropic institutions have had cause to rejoice in the interest and generosity of this successful man. The endowment of the hospital in Winston-Salem was made possible through his liberal donation. Guilford College, the Oxford Orphan Asylum, the Baptist Orphanage and every religious denomination and every charity of his own community could testify to his kind and unostentatious liberality. He employs, of course, many colored people in his factories, and his interest in their welfare led him to donate a large sum for the purpose of founding the Slater Hospital. This is the first hospital for colored people founded in the South by a Southern man.

Mr. Reynolds was married on February 27, 1905, to Miss Mary Katherine Smith, a charming and an accomplished lady. She has the rare gift of business sense, studies and knows the details of her husband's work, and is a constant source of help and an inspiration to his best endeavors. Mrs. Reynolds is a daughter of Mr. Z. T. Smith of Mount Airy, North Carolina, and comes of Revolutionary ancestry. Her father is the nephew of General Gaines of Lake Erie fame, and of the family of President Zachary Taylor; her mother springs from the same ancestry as Andrew Jackson, the hero of New Orleans.

Mottoes or rules rarely ever govern the lives of successful men; but when asked to give one of the secrets of his success, Mr. Reynolds replied: "Being able to overcome looking on any task

put on me as hard or disagreeable, and finding real pleasure in working out a task that others would not do."

Coming of strong ancestry, brought up in the lofty regions of the Appalachian range, toil on the farm, and early enduring the hardships of camp and travel combined to make Mr. Reynolds a fine specimen of the physical man, unaffected by the ordinary extremes of temperature and having powers of endurance and capacity for labor. In appearance he is tall, well proportioned and erect as an Indian. He has the roughly lined features of strength, the darker complexion of his mother's race and with eyes bright and piercing—of that indescribable color which flashes out from hazel. In mental make-up this man is masterful and original. This writer once heard him say: "If I had to work under the direction of another, a man could be had to do the work as well as I for \$50 per month." This is practically true, and demonstrates his chief characteristic. His plans and their execution are the work of his own thought, devised and worked out by a mental process entirely original. Like men of this particular gift, he has great power of mental concentration, often rendering him thoughtless of surroundings. In general consultation his opinions do not rise above the ordinary views of an intelligent person, and to obtain the best from him, the proposition must be submitted to him for consideration. His brain then becomes his own workshop, and his deductions therefrom are clear and masterful. This is the genius of the man. Mr. Reynolds is a worker, and although busy as few men are busy, he is always ready to see and talk with friends or to give his attention to any matter of public concern.

In manner Mr. Reynolds is to-day as simple and unaffected as when, a mere boy, he began business in Winston, retaining old-time friends close to him, and all approach him with the ease of familiar friendship. At his home he is as hospitable as a king. Mr. Reynolds is a member of the Masonic order and of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

In the possession of the great wealth he has acquired there is no element of the miser. He uses money only as a means to

accomplish other ends, and is lavish in his aid of those in any way under his protection. Indeed, he presents a striking instance of a rich man who has made his own money by a life of labor, and sees in it only the means of enjoyment for himself and others.

Now, in the prime of life, of a vigorous body, clear mind and good health, one may well think that great achievements may still result from his energy and abilities. Such may well be predicated upon the past of this man, certainly one of the most remarkable men living to-day in North Carolina.

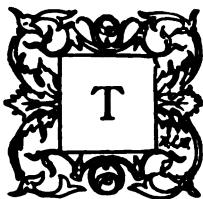
W. A. Blair.





NATHANIEL ROCHESTER

"In this man there was such great strength of body and mind that, in whatever station he had been born, he seemed as though he should make his fortune." —*Livy*.



THE exigencies of the Revolution forced business men to become something other and greater than mere fortune hunters. They must plan and scheme as well for their country as themselves. They must be ready, if called upon, to participate in the government. As members of the Home Guard (thus comprehensively and appropriately designated in the Civil War), they must, on the approach of the foe, shoulder their muskets or draw their swords in defense of their homes. Their knowledge of trade must be devoted to the service of the government in the purchase of supplies and in the management of its finances. And well did these merchant soldiers do their duty in North Carolina during the Revolution.

Of them was Nathaniel Rochester. He was born in Cople Parish, Westmoreland County, Virginia, February 21, 1752. He was descended from Nicholas Rochester, who came from Kent County, England, to Virginia, in 1689. His father died when he was about two years old, and his mother married Thomas Critcher in 1754. The Critchers, bringing young Rochester with them, came to Granville County, North Carolina, in 1763. He attended the school of the Rev. Henry Patillo.

About 1773 he removed to Hillsboro and joined Colonel Thomas

Hart in a mercantile establishment. He was a delegate from Hillsboro in the Provincial Congress which met at that place in August, 1775, and represented Orange County in the two Halifax congresses of 1776. By the Hillsboro Congress he was appointed second major of the Orange militia. The first Halifax Congress promoted him to be lieutenant-colonel of the Southern Orange regiment.

He was paymaster to the battalion of minute men in the Hillsboro district, deputy commissary general of military and other stores for the use of the Continental army and paymaster of the Hillsboro district brigade of militia. Besides, he was a member of several commissions appointed to forward the general objects of the war. He was a representative from Orange in the first House of Commons after the ratification of the State constitution, but his seat was vacated in May, 1777, by his acceptance of the office of clerk of the County Court of Orange.

In 1782, he, with Colonel Thomas Hart, removed to Washington County, Maryland, and near Hagerstown set up a flour mill and a rope and nail manufactory. In Maryland he was a member of the Assembly, judge of the county court and postmaster of Hagerstown. In 1808 he was a Presidential elector and also president of the bank of Hagerstown. Prior to 1800 he had begun to invest in lands in Western New York. In 1802 he, with Charles Carroll and William Fitzhugh, purchased the 100-acre Allen Mill tract in Fallstown (now Rochester). In May, 1810, he removed to New York and settled near Dansville. There he built a paper mill. In 1812 he established a flour mill at Fallstown. In 1815 he removed to Bloomfield, Ontario County. In 1817 Fallstown was incorporated as Rochesterville, and in 1818 he took up his residence in that town. He was a Presidential elector in 1816, was prominent in the movement for the Erie Canal, was instrumental in the creation of the new county, Monroe, in 1821, was its first representative, 1821-22, and in 1824 was an organizer and the first president of the Bank of Rochester.

He was an Episcopalian and one of the original members, if not the founder, of St. Luke's, in Rochester.

He died in that place May 17, 1831, and in 1834 the town of Rochesterville ceased to exist and the city of Rochester took its place.

Thus he was a member of the General Assembly of three States, Presidential elector in two, banker in two, and merchant and manufacturer in three, besides holding many minor positions of trust in all of them.

The beautiful and prosperous city of Rochester is a fit memorial for so honorable, so enterprising and so useful a business man as Nathaniel Rochester.

Authorities: Encyclopædia of American Biography; Lippincott's *Gazetteer*; 10 Colonial Records, and 11 and 12 State Records; Records in the Court-house at Hillsboro.

Frank Nash.



Reading, who were actively engaged; his ships brought supplies both of food and clothing for the use of the American army through what the British were pleased to term the "contemptible port of Ocracoke." At a later period, when his younger brother, Willie Blount, was governor of Tennessee, he rendered material aid to the government by contributing money toward the defense of New Orleans under General Andrew Jackson. John Gray Blount was a man of great force of character and indomitable energy; while he lived he was pre-eminently the leader of Beaufort County, which he several times represented in the Assembly. He conducted a large mercantile business, and is also known to history as the largest landowner that ever lived in North Carolina, having possessed large tracts of land in the eastern and western counties and in Tennessee, and it has been said that his holdings extended from the Atlantic to the Mississippi. He was a direct descendant of Captain James Blount, who came to Virginia from England in 1655, and died in Albemarle in 1686, an officer in the Life Guards of Charles II., and a younger son of the house of le Blount, one of the oldest baronies in England. He was also a grandson of John Gray, a "Scottish gentleman," who settled in Bertie County; and of Lionel Reading, who settled on Pamlico River in 1701, and on whose plantation Fort Reading was erected in 1711. Lionel Reading was a leading citizen of that time, and his name appears as a member of the Assembly that appealed to the Lords Proprietors against Cary.

John Gray Blount's wife, Mary Harvey, daughter of Colonel Miles Harvey of Harvey Hall, Perquimans County, was a lineal descendant of Thomas Harvey, deputy governor in 1694, and a near relation of the patriotic John Harvey, moderator of the Provincial Congress that met in New-Bern in 1774. The Harveys were an English family of distinction.

His Rodman ancestry was no less distinguished. The first of whom we have any record was John Rodman,¹ an Irish Quaker, banished from Ireland for refusing, from conscientious motives, to remove his hat in a Court of Assizes; he died in the island

¹Genealogy of Rodman Family. (Charles H. Jones, Philadelphia.)

of Barbadoes in 1686; his son, John Rodman, removed to Newport, Rhode Island, in 1682, and in 1684 he purchased a large tract of land on Block Island, which remained in his descendants for a century. He is described in the history of Block Island as a skillful physician and devoted Quaker. On the 26th of July, 1698, he was admitted a freeman of the city of New York, and in the document conferring this freedom of the city upon him he is described as a "chirurgion." He owned land at the foot of John Street, and what is now known as "Burling Slip" was called "Rodman's Slip" after him, and is so marked upon old maps of prominence, the first of the line being Walter de Pelham, who held the Lordship of Pelham, Hertfordshire, England, in 1294; his descendant, Sir Thomas Pell, a gentleman of the bedchamber to Charles I., was the first Lord of Pelham Manor, Westchester, New York; he died in 1669; his nephew, Sir John Pell, was second Lord of the Manor, and Marcia Pell was his lineal ancestor of the city of New York. The Pells¹ were an English family of descendant.

A great writer has said that we are only bundles of our ancestors; if this be true, the subject of our sketch possessed an unusually fortunate blending. He very early gave promise of inheriting in a remarkable degree those qualities of mind that form the intellectual giant, and those graces of spirit that make the true and tender friend, beloved by his fellow-men. An ardent love of study, a quick perception and an easy mastery of his lessons were pronounced traits in his boyhood.

He entered the University at Chapel Hill in 1832, at the age of fifteen, and graduated in 1836, with the first distinction, at the age of nineteen. He was a close student during his collegiate days, and devoted his spare time to general reading. His habits and deportment, so noticeable during his school-boy days, were more strikingly manifested during his four years at college. Dr. W. L. Stamps, one of his classmates who survived him, said a short time after his death²:

¹The History of Westchester County. (Bolton.)

²University Magazine, February, 1894, p. 212.

"I never saw Judge Rodman after we left Chapel Hill, but I recollect well his appearance at that time. He was the brightest man in the class, and easily led it, taking the highest distinction."

After leaving college, he studied law under Judge William Gaston of New-Bern, North Carolina, and was licensed by the Supreme Court to practice law in 1838. He ever looked back to this association with the noble and learned Gaston as one of the most delightful and congenial periods of his life. He opened an office in his native town of Washington, where his talents and accomplishments enabled him soon to secure a large and lucrative practice. He was a strong and forcible speaker, his manner was easy and pleasant. He was not an orator, yet a good speaker; his style of speaking was so simple and entertaining, his arguments so clear, powerful and convincing—using as few words as possible to convey his meaning—that he was always listened to with the closest and most fixed attention. It has been said that "while his argument was logic on fire, a jury and his hearers would listen as if attentive to an oracle of wisdom."

He was a splendid pleader, giving his cases most thoughtful study, and when they reached a trial, he always had them in full preparation. He would only appear on the side of the defense in criminal cases. He was looked upon as the leading lawyer in the eastern section. One of the most important criminal cases in which he appeared as counsel for the defense was the case of the State *v.* George W. Carawan, made famous at the time by its tragical ending. Mr. Rodman's argument for the defense was a masterpiece of ingenuity, and was pronounced¹ by a competent critic, Hon. R. S. Donnell, equal to Judge Gaston's celebrated defense of Tinker.

Later, when he was associate justice of the Supreme Court, it was said² that "his dissenting opinion in the case of *Watts v. Leggett*, 66 North Carolina Reports, p. 200, as to the rights of

¹Obituary of Judge Rodman, by S. T. Brown, in *Washington Progress*, March, 1893.

²*North Carolina University Magazine*, February, 1893, p. 222.

children under the homestead act, would alone make a lawyer's reputation."

In 1842 he was a candidate for the legislature, House of Commons, but was defeated. He was a Democrat, and at that time the county of Beaufort was largely controlled by the Whig Party, yet he was beaten by only a small majority, and, it seems, in consequence of election frauds prevailing.

William Blount Rodman was never a politician in the usual meaning of that word, although he felt a deep and lively interest in the leading questions of the day, and was well versed and informed upon the principal issues both in this country and Europe, taking a profound interest in the eminent men of all nations. He did not seek political honors, but devoted himself to his law practice, which embraced the courts of Beaufort, Pitt, Martin and Hyde counties, with his cases in the Supreme Court. He had large farming interests, and greatly enjoyed the pursuit of agriculture, which he conducted, in the fashion of the time, through the medium of overseers to direct the work of the slaves. He was noted for his kindness to his dependents, and after the Civil War and a short interim of freedom many of his old slaves returned to his plantation, where they continued to labor on wages; and in every instance the superannuated were given by him, and his son since, a home free as long as they lived.

In 1854 he, with the Hon. B. F. Moore and Mr. Asa Biggs, were appointed by the legislature to revise the North Carolina Code. This important and laborious task was well performed; and Mr. Moore, who at that time was recognized as being at the head of the profession, was much impressed with Mr. Rodman's legal knowledge and ability, and often spoke of him as one of the quickest and best-equipped lawyers in the State.

In the campaign of 1860 he was a Breckenridge elector, and, with the Hon. Haywood Guion of Lincolnton, was an elector for the State at large on the electoral ticket of Jefferson Davis for President of the Confederate States. Hon. Haywood Guion and Judge Rodman were warm personal friends, though in the later years of their lives they rarely met.

In the fall of 1861 his name was advocated to represent his district in Congress; his patriotic sentiments in declining are expressed in an open letter, in which he said:

"But now, when a public enemy is at the threshold of the county in which I live, threatening its inhabitants with invasion, I think it my duty to discard all other thought than that of joining my fellow-countrymen in taking up arms to repel the invasion. Such is my purpose, and so long as this invasion lasts I am ambitious of no other employment than that of a humble soldier in the cause of our country."

He strongly and enthusiastically advocated the doctrine of States Rights and Secession. His ideas on this subject are best expressed in an opinion delivered by him some years after, while Supreme Court judge, in which he uses this language: "The States must have jurisdiction to try offenses against their own laws or they cease to be States. It is a power necessarily inherent in a State. It alone makes a State." The *News and Observer*, published in Raleigh, of July 14, 1877, referring to the opinion, says: "He tells the whole story in these brief sentences, that deserve to be written in letters of gold." He was always a States' Rights Democrat, and in all national elections, except for General Grant, he voted the Democratic ticket.

True to his convictions, when the State seceded, he raised a company of heavy artillery, of which he was captain. This company was first stationed on the north side of Pamlico River, and afterward participated in the battle of New-Bern, retiring with the army to Kinston, at which place Captain Rodman was appointed brigade quartermaster to Branch's Brigade with the rank of major, and with the brigade went to the army of Northern Virginia, where he took part in the battle of Mechanicsville and other engagements.

Mr. Rodman and Camilla Holliday Croom, daughter of Willie Jones Croom of Greensboro, Alabama, were married September 1, 1858. He was devotedly attached to his lovely and brilliant young wife, and it was especially a sacrifice of happy life to leave her and his infant children for the service of his country, but not a moment did he demur as to his duty. His letters to his wife

during the war speak continually of his anxiety for their safety and of his longing to be with them, though never of his desire to leave the service until the fight was over. Writing from Virginia, he says: "I shall visit you in a fortnight—that constitutes my happiness. This world but for you would be a 'world without a sun.' I would not care to live in it. But one thing prevents my going into Pennsylvania with General Lee in the spring—the fear of leaving you and our dear little ones fatherless—God bless you—the only tie I have to earth."

In 1863 Major Rodman was appointed by President Davis judge of a military court attached to the army of Northern Virginia with rank of colonel, and with jurisdiction to try all military offenses committed by persons below the rank of brigadier-general. Upon the evacuation of Richmond he went with the army of Northern Virginia to Pamplin's Station; and, learning that General Lee would surrender, he left that army and made his way on foot to Greensboro, reaching that point in time to surrender with General Joseph E. Johnston.

In the early part of the war he had purchased a farm about five miles outside of Greensboro, North Carolina, thinking it would be a safe home for his family, and there he now remained for some months. The fall of the Confederacy was a bitter disappointment to Colonel Rodman; broken in spirit and wearied in body, he dreaded the unhappy fate that had overtaken his beloved State and the entire South. In the autumn of 1865 he returned with his family to their home in Washington. There he found desolation indeed; blackened chimneys marked the spot where happy homes had stood, farms were laid waste and ruined, bridges had been destroyed and there was literally no transportation; only a few people remained of the hitherto growing population; there were no laborers to be had; the picture was one to strike despair to the most courageous heart. He had suffered immense private losses from the reverses of war, but he bravely determined to "make human endurance equal to human suffering," and in a short time resumed the practice of his profession, and undertook to cultivate some of his desolated estate.

In 1868 came the period of the greatest distress in our entire history. Realizing the great importance of preserving the purity and conservatism of the laws of his native State, and seeing the dangers threatening our jurisprudence from the party then in perfect control, Judge Rodman braved the disapproval of some by permitting himself to be sent to the convention of 1868 by the Republican Party. He did what he thought best, and in this convention he was distinguished for his conservative views, and his influence undoubtedly contributed to the defeat of some of the extreme and unwise provisions sought to be engrafted upon our fundamental law.

The following is an extract of the resolutions passed by the bar of Washington after his death in 1893:

"He was the author of that provision in the article on Revenue and Taxation which fixes the proportion between the tax on property and on polls, which, it seems, had never previously appeared in the constitution of any State. Also the provision which fixes the proportion between State and county taxes, and that which provides that no income tax shall be levied upon the property from which the income shall be derived, and also that which prohibits the legislature from chartering private corporations by special act except in certain cases. He was appointed by the convention as one of three commissioners to prepare and report to the legislature a code of the laws of North Carolina. As the constitution had substantially abolished the existing laws of practice and procedure, it was necessary that they should be promptly supplied by legislation, and the commissioners agreed to adopt the Code of Civil Procedure of New York, which had been in use in that and other States for several years. Alterations were necessary to adapt it to the judicial system of this State, and these were principally made by Judge Rodman. The acts on criminal procedure, draining lowlands, landlord and tenant and marriage were drawn by him, and stand on the statute books substantially as he drew them. As a lawmaker he was exact, painstaking and conscientious. Other important laws were prepared by him, some of which were adopted and now form a part of the present code. At the election for justices of the Supreme Court, in 1868, he was elected an associate justice, and remained on the bench until the expiration of his term, in 1878. His opinions may be found in Vols. 63 to 79, inclusive, in the reports of the Supreme Court, and constitute a fitting and lasting memorial of his great learning and industry. The profession is particularly indebted to him for his intelligent interpretation of the Code of Civil Procedure. His opinions upon consti-

tutional questions were perhaps the most important rendered by the court of which he was a member, while those relating to other subjects are replete with learning, and manifest the acuteness of intellect for which he was so much distinguished. It was a transition period in our judicial history, and many novel and perplexing questions came before the court, and many of these were of far-reaching importance. It may be said without fear of contradiction that the opinions of Judge Rodman upon such questions were regarded by the profession as exceptionally able, and a perusal of the reports will illustrate the great services he rendered at this important period in the history of the State."

He was associated on the Supreme Court bench with Judges Pearson, Reade, Settle, Dick and Bynum. His judicial and social relations with them were of the most cordial and friendly kind. This was conceded to have been a strong court, and Judge Rodman was considered one of its ablest members. He loved the law, and contributed no little toward preserving the fount of justice and equity pure and unsullied. He was a great judge, and has left his mark upon the jurisprudence of his time. He was above and beyond the ordinary mold of men; his breadth of view and the loftiness of his character created an atmosphere about his personality that was intuitively felt by all who met him; and yet he was so modest and unassuming that he was easily approached; plain, simple and dignified in all his ways, his courtesy was invariable, and he was especially kind to young lawyers.

It was in the home circle that his beautiful character was most distinctively portrayed. His home, of all places on earth, was the most attractive to him, and when not professionally engaged, he would always be found there, and he never left it at night. Though a deep thinker, he was delightful in conversation; the play of his fancy and his sense of humor were exceedingly delicate and refined; he was one of those rare men who could tell you something, and intelligibly, about any matter or subject that might incidentally arise in conversation or debate. Thoughtful, sympathetic and indulgent to his children, ever alive to their wishes and wants, with a heart as warm and unselfish as was ever implanted in the human breast, and impulses responsive to love and

tenderness, it can well be conceived how joyful was the family tie and how intense the sorrow when death had broken it.

His oldest son coming to the bar in 1883, a partnership was formed under the name and style of W. B. Rodman & Son, which continued to the time of his death and until, in 1901, his youngest son, Wiley C. Rodman, in turn came to the bar and associated himself with his brother, when the firm name became Rodman & Rodman.

May 26, 1887, after only a brief illness, his loving and devoted wife was borne to the realms beyond; he never recovered from the great sadness of that separation, though he bore it with meekness and characteristic fortitude. For some time his health was feeble, but his excessive will-power and endurance enabled him to appear in his office almost daily up to a few weeks preceding his death. His mental faculties were perfect up to the moment of dissolution; increasing bodily weakness came on, the threads of life, weakened by age and worn by the impress of inward care and affliction, were broken, and the end came, though it seemed but a tranquil, reposed and undisturbed sleep, so serenely did the ebb of life pass out and was gone. He died at 4 o'clock on the morning of March 7, 1893, at his home in Washington, North Carolina.

On March 9, 1893, during the session of the Supreme Court, "Mr. Batchelor announced the death of Hon. W. B. Rodman, formerly associate justice of this court, and after appropriate remarks by the chief justice, the court adjourned in honor of his memory."

The meeting of the bar of Washington, held May 31, 1893, to honor his memory, was presided over by Chief Justice Shepherd, who appointed a committee of three, consisting of Judge G. H. Brown, C. F. Warren and E. S. Simmons, to prepare a memorial sketch, with appropriate resolutions; they performed their work with deep and impressive feeling, and each, in language fitting, paid eloquent tributes to Judge Rodman's memory and to his great services to the State. The memorial and resolutions were presented to the Superior Court, then in session, and it was

directed that they be spread upon the minutes as a part of the record. The leading papers of the State commented in appropriate terms upon his death, and in his home and among his friends deep and lasting grief was felt, for they knew that in this world they would rarely, if ever, see his like again. He whose thirst for knowledge and greater truth had been perpetual had passed beyond the portals and beheld the Love "that moves the sun in Heaven and all the stars."

John H. Small.



Holliday, a prominent and wealthy planter of Greene County, where he died December 14, 1818.

Endowed both by nature and inheritance with mental and physical gifts of the highest order, he has built wisely and well upon this God-given foundation; and to-day his character and his life stand forth in perfect symmetry, for he has nobly endeavored to fulfill his duty to his Maker and his fellow-men. Duty and honor have been his watchwords from earliest youth. He was born February 19, 1862, in the old hotel in Tarboro, where his family were temporarily residing, as war refugees, having left their luxurious home in Washington on the approach of the Federals. Stirring times were those; men's hearts were on fire with patriotic devotion to their country and the cause they knew to be righteous. His father, then Captain Rodman of Rodman's Battery, writing from Swan Point, on Pamlico River, where he was at that time stationed, comments in loving terms upon the "interesting soldier who has made his appearance in our family in the midst of war." Young Rodman's youth was spent in years fraught with privation and sacrifice to his parents—those terrible years of war, when the father was continuously absent with Lee's army in Virginia and the young mother, with three infant children, herself a stranger among strangers, lived on a plantation near Greensboro, North Carolina; her problem was to induce the slaves to perform the labor necessary to support the family and themselves—to those unacquainted with the conditions there can be no conception of her trials and her difficulties. Later, on their return to Washington, in the fall of 1865; greeted by the ruin and desolation of their home and property, ensued another era of sacrifice and straitened circumstances, accompanied with patient endeavor to rebuild.

At this period in our history, owing to the changed methods of employing labor and the great destruction of all agricultural interests, his father found it difficult to practice law and pursue agriculture on the same scale that he had done before the Civil War; his affairs were in such a condition that it was often necessary, during his absence at the sittings of the Supreme Court in Raleigh, to send William, a boy of nine to fourteen years, to the

plantation, twenty miles from Washington, to assist the overseer in making payments and carrying out the special directions of his father; he was also often called upon at this early age to direct the shipment of cotton, corn and other produce; he would, moreover, young as he was, drive unaccompanied to New-Bern, a distance of thirty-six miles, on a lonely road, meet the train and bring his father home.

September, 1878, at the age of sixteen and a half years, he entered the freshman class at Chapel Hill, where he ranked well in his studies and with his companions. In consequence of his father's advancing years and the difficulty of caring for both the law practice and the farming interests, he was unable to complete his University course, and remained there only two years. This was a keen disappointment to both the father and the son, but it seemed inevitable. Professor Graves wrote to Judge Rodman urging him not to take William from college; that he considered his mathematical talent to be of a superior order, and that he wished exceedingly to have him graduate. This was a great compliment coming from such a source. But the necessities were urgent, and upon his return home, in June, 1880, he again took up the hard work of superintending the management of a large plantation in a remote country neighborhood. Though abandoning his cherished ambition of obtaining a University degree, no murmur of disappointment escaped his lips, but with true courage and perfect obedience to his father's wishes he accepted the task laid upon him and labored faithfully. By his prudence and fine management much was accomplished, his father was saved many harrassing difficulties and perhaps the sacrifice of a fine landed estate.

However, he took his law books to the farm, and every spare moment was devoted to their study. In this way, with occasional recitations in Washington, he prepared himself, and in September, 1883, he secured a license to practice law, a few months later entering his father's office as junior partner. His success at the bar was rapid, for his great energy, talent and singleness of purpose soon gave him an enviable reputation. From this time on

his talents and activities were used in the cause of good government and for the elevation and betterment of his town and county. In 1881 he enlisted as a private in Company G, First Regiment, North Carolina State Guards (known as the Washington Light Infantry), served as non-commissioned officer until 1890; elected captain, then major, of the First Regiment in 1892; in 1894 he was promoted to colonel, which rank he held with recognized ability until increasing duties compelled his retirement from the State Guard at the expiration of his term in 1902.

He served three terms as mayor of Washington, beginning in May, 1891, and ending in May, 1895. The municipal government during his administration was conducted on a basis of practical business, strict integrity being the rule throughout.

He was chairman of the Congressional Executive Committee from 1890 to 1904, and chairman of the Beaufort County Executive Committee from 1898 to 1904. In 1892 he was made a member of the State Executive Committee, which position he still holds. He is a Democrat of the sterling sort, and since attaining his majority he has given powerful aid in the numerous victories obtained in the county and congressional district. He has been a zealous worker and a brilliant leader in the Democratic Party. The Beaufort County Convention of 1900, by a rising vote, adopted the following resolutions:

"WHEREAS, The Hon. William B. Rodman, the able and fearless leader of the Democracy of Beaufort County for the past two years, under whose wise and able leadership the Democratic Party achieved that splendid and glorious victory of 1898, and under whose leadership a grander and more glorious victory will be achieved in August, 1900; therefore be it ability and integrity of the H. W. B. Rodman, and appreciating his
"Resolved, That this convention, having unlimited confidence in the services to the party, hereby expresses its hearty approval, and hereby declares its desire that Mr. Rodman should be elected as its chairman for the next two years."

The Elizabeth City *Economist* of July 30, 1904, said in an editorial:

"We know something of Colonel Rodman's leadership, and, with admira-

tion for his brilliant qualities and his fidelity to party interests, have followed him through many hard-fought fields."

November 10, 1898, the *Gazette-Messenger* of Washington, in an editorial, said as follows:

"We desire to call the attention of our readers to one of Beaufort County's honored sons, who has done his full duty, and to whom the Democrats of the First Congressional District and Beaufort County owe a debt of gratitude they can never repay for his untiring effort in this campaign. Of course, every reader of the *Gazette-Messenger* who has kept in touch with the masterly manner in which the campaign has been conducted in this county and district, and the Herculean task the Democratic Party undertook to accomplish—for example, the election of Mr. Small, and to do so to overcome Skinner's 6040 majority two years ago—will know that we refer to our townsman, Colonel William B. Rodman, chairman of the Congressional Executive and County Executive committees. From the time Mr. Small was nominated and our county candidates placed in the field, at the sacrifice and neglect of his large and growing law practice, up to the closing of the polls Tuesday, never for a moment has Colonel Rodman relaxed his zeal to redeem the First District and place Beaufort County in the Democratic column as of yore."

On the occasion of the meeting of the Democratic convention of Beaufort County, June 1, 1904, the *Gazette-Messenger* of next day said:

"The convention was called to order by Colonel W. B. Rodman, the chairman of the County Executive Committee, and that veteran of Beaufort County Democracy—the man who has led the grand old party to victory many years. His speech was burning with enthusiasm and old-time zeal. He is a Democrat of Democrats, and the delegates appreciated his address by voluminous cheering. In closing he said that with the adjournment of this convention he would lay down his mantle, as his other duties would demand his entire time; 'yet,' thundered the speaker, 'I am ready at all times to render my party service.' 'Here I am, send me,' should ever be his slogan. . . . The convention adjourned, and each chairman of the different precincts met and elected Wiley C. Rodman, Esq., chairman of the County Executive Committee to succeed Colonel W. B. Rodman. We feel confident that he will prove a most worthy successor to his distinguished brother."

As a lawyer, William Blount Rodman has had splendid success, winning and retaining perhaps the largest practice of any attorney

in the eastern part of the State. As a land lawyer he is considered unusually good, being a practical surveyor, and having gained much from association with his father in this branch of research, as well as himself possessing the true faculty for tedious investigation. His efforts in the interest of his clients have been untiring, and in the forum of the law he has won many signal victories. Before a jury his argument is sweeping and conclusive; there, as on the stump, his appeals are logical and clear, being rather to the judgment and good sense of men than to their emotions. In fact, he is a man of magnificent intellect, clear headed, sagacious and practical. In recognition of these characteristics, and entirely unsought by himself, the General Assembly of 1903 elected him jointly with Professor N. Y. Gully of Wake Forest and Judge T. B. Womack of Raleigh as a commission to codify the statute laws of the State. In the time allowed for its completion this has been a stupendous task; its completion by the commission is regarded as an unusually meritorious accomplishment, and it has already won plaudits from the profession at large.

Among other positions of trust held by Colonel Rodman are these: Director in the Bank of Washington, director in the Haven's Oil Company and the E. Peterson Company, and, until the recent sale of its interests in Washington, attorney for the Old Dominion Steamship Company at that point.

In 1904 it was thought that he would be a candidate for the position of Superior Court judge to succeed Judge George H. Brown, but to the surprise and disappointment of his numerous friends he declined that honor, and a few months later opened a law office in the city of Charlotte, where he was warmly welcomed by the legal fraternity. He has recently won marked success in several important suits in Mecklenburg County. And on the death of the Hon. Charles Price, in October, 1905, he was appointed division counsel for the Southern Railway Company, a legal position of great importance.

In appearance he is tall and distinguished looking, with rather a dark complexion and an intellectual face, illumined by quick and penetrating grey eyes. In disposition he is reserved; and it has

been said that he will smile and give no word until his intention is *un fait accompli*; on the other hand, he is perfectly frank with those who win his confidence. In society he is a favorite, although his busy life has not permitted him to indulge greatly in its diversions. He has friends in all walks of life who are devotedly attached to him. He is generous in thought and deed, and always broad and enlightened in his views on all questions. His veneration for spiritual and religious subjects is deep and sincere, and by baptism and training he is a member of the Episcopal Church.

In his early manhood he sought and won the love of one of Washington's most beautiful and accomplished girls, Miss Addie Fulford, daughter of the late Nathaniel S. Fulford, a successful business man of that city. Their marriage took place October 17, 1888, and their life since has been singularly happy; their greatest misfortune, the loss of a remarkably bright little daughter, Addie, at the age of five years, occurred March 1, 1901. Their remaining children are William Blount Rodman, Jr., Nathaniel Fulford, Camilla Croom and Hannah Fulford Rodman.

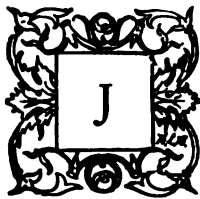
Colonel Rodman has been a tower of strength in Beaufort County, and it would be impossible to estimate the amount of enduring service that he has rendered to his family, his friends, his county and his district—he has given freely of his talents and his time for the welfare of all, with no thought of personal aggrandizement. He is now in the prime of a vigorous manhood, with a future full of promise. It is upon the lives and characters of men like this that we build a nation's greatness—our pride, our joy in times of peace, our rock of defense when frowns a darker destiny.

John H. Small.





JOHN CROOM RODMAN



JOHN CROOM RODMAN of Washington, North Carolina, was born in the city where he now resides on December 27, 1870, of a line of ancestry, both paternal and maternal, which has during the past two hundred and fifty years furnished some of the most brilliant and distinguished leaders in the legal as well as the medical profession. Governor Thomas Harvey and Captain James Blount in North Carolina were two of the State's vigorous and influential citizens in the latter half of the seventeenth century, while Dr. John Rodman of New York and Rhode Island, another distinguished ancestor, was at the same time an influential man in that section of the country.

His father, William Blount Rodman, a native of North Carolina, was a man of great intellectuality, and with a most profound sense of justice; and he served with distinction in the Confederate army of Northern Virginia under General Lee. Entering the army in 1861, he was successively promoted until, in 1863, he became judge-advocate of a military court connected with the army of Northern Virginia with the rank of colonel, which position he held until the close of the war in 1865. In 1868, only three years after the close of that great struggle, North Carolina again showed her lofty appreciation of his ability in placing him on the Supreme Court bench as associate justice, a position he held for

ten years. His mother, Camilla Holliday Croom, was a woman also of unusual intellectual strength, and unquestionably exercised much influence in the development of the intellectual life of her doctor son. In early life, young Rodman was very fond of athletic sports, and took an active interest in everything of the sort appertaining to the village life. He was sent to the best schools of the community, and later attended Trinity School at Chocowinity, and became a student at the University of North Carolina, where he remained one year. Spurred on with an active zeal to begin his life's work early, he left Chapel Hill in 1890 and matriculated for the study of medicine at the Bellevue Hospital Medical College of New York City. Here he passed two years of industrious application, and in 1892 the college faculty conferred upon him the worthily won degree of M.D., and having just attained the age of twenty-one, he hurried back to his native State and attended the session of the State Board of Medical Examiners, where he made a very high grade and received the license to begin the real duties of his chosen profession.

Not fearing, as many young medical men do, the uncertain influence upon their practice of the familiarities and intimates of their boyhood years, he returned to his native town, now growing into a charming little city, and announced himself a physician.

Of course, at the start there were the usual difficulties encountered by the young professional man to face and overcome, but with an earnest purpose to succeed, an innate love for his chosen profession, and a zeal and industry worthy of his ancestry, he went bravely to work amid the people who had heard his earliest childish prattlings and had known him as a boy. Of a medium stature, with a large head, a smiling mouth, and a keen, piercing eye, betokening good humor, with deep powers of penetration, his success has come to him as it comes to the modest man who works and waits. Devoted to his work as a physician, yet he has found time for diversion and interest in other things which concerned the welfare of his people, and in 1901 he was elected for two years commander of the North Carolina division, United Sons of Confederate Veterans. He was also for a term surgeon-

general of the same organization. He is an enthusiastic Pythian, serving as District Deputy Grand Chancellor for two years.

When at Chapel Hill, a student at the University, he was an ardent adherent of Delta Kappa Epsilon, and shortly after attaining his majority he became a Mason. In politics he has always been a Democrat from a fixed and vital principle of belief in the rule of the people by the people.

His heart has ever been with his profession, and the chief honors which have come to him have been in the line of duty, as it were. He has held a commission as acting assistant surgeon and physician to the Marine Hospital service at Washington, and has, from the day of his entry into the Medical Society of his State, enjoyed the friendly regard and appreciation of its members. He has served in various minor positions, and in 1903 was elected vice-president of the State Medical Society of North Carolina. Dr. Rodman was active in the organization some years ago of the Sea-Board Medical Association of Virginia and North Carolina, and served it as secretary for some time. He is also a member of the staff of the Fowle Memorial Hospital, and contributes of his energy and skill to the success of that excellent institution. In religious faith he is a staunch adherent of the Protestant Episcopal Church.

Unlike most young Æsculapians, Dr. Rodman was slow to succumb to the charms of femininity, but as the generality of bachelor doctors, to his Waterloo came at last, and on June 7, 1904, he was happily married to Miss Olzie Whitehead Clark of Wilson, North Carolina. They have one son, John Croom Rodman, Jr., born June 17, 1905.

S. A. Ashe.

Bern, and all of the eastern counties being open to their depredations, Mr. Rountree removed his family to Haw River, and later to Raleigh. Soon after the war he engaged in the banking, cotton and naval stores business in New-Bern, and in the cotton and naval stores commission business in New York, and having strong connections in North Carolina, he quickly established a prosperous business. In 1873 he removed to Brooklyn, New York, where he has continued uninterruptedly his successful career.

His son George, the subject of this sketch, having been born in Kinston, began his education there in the excellent school of which Rev. J. T. Foy, D.D., now of St. Louis, was principal, where he was so well prepared that, in 1873, at the age of eighteen, he entered the sophomore class of Bethany College, West Virginia. Here he proved himself to be a good student, and made such progress that after two years at that institution he determined to complete his education on broader lines at Harvard, from which college he graduated in 1877, receiving the degree of Bachelor of Arts. While at Harvard he devoted his time especially to the study of the classics, political economy, constitutional history and metaphysics, and thus he acquired a mental discipline which made it comparatively easy for him to master the most difficult and abstruse subjects when he entered upon his professional duties. His inclination and analytical mind led him to the law, for which his talents, his learning and his habits of application admirably fitted him; and on his return from Harvard, he began the study of law at Raleigh, North Carolina, under the instruction of Hon. George V. Strong, one of the brightest and most painstaking lawyers of his day. On receiving his license in 1878, he formed a partnership with his uncle, A. J. Loftin, Esq., who was in active practice at Kinston. But his health had suffered from several successive years of severe application to his studies, and his constitution not being robust, after a year at Kinston he found it necessary to make a change, and he joined his father in New York, entering the office of Rountree & Company, with whom he remained three years. By this association and daily intercourse with his father, a man of strong mind and of great energy and force

in the accomplishment of his undertakings, he became familiar with the principles and methods of commercial transactions.

Circumstances again led him to the South, and in 1884 he engaged in the wholesale shoe business in Richmond with W. B. Wills, but soon finding it distasteful, and his health having been restored, he again formed a law partnership with his uncle at Kinston under the firm name of Loftin & Rountree, where he engaged in active practice for several years.

On October 27, 1881, he had married Miss Meta Alexander Davis, and in 1890, desiring a wider field for business and social intercourse, he removed to Wilmington, where he at once took rank with the foremost lawyers of the Cape Fear section. From this time his practice has been connected with some of the State's most noted cases.

He was one of the counsel for the State of North Carolina in the case of *South Dakota v. North Carolina*, instituted in the Supreme Court of the United States to collect some bonds, which were issued soon after the war, and whose payment was contested by North Carolina. On this case alone, which is probably of greater importance to the South than any other case ever decided in the Supreme Court of the United States, he spent more than a year in hard study, and prepared the general brief for the State of North Carolina, which has been pronounced by competent lawyers to be a very able document, and the argument was approved and largely adopted by Mr. Justice White in his dissenting opinion in that case.

Mr. Rountree has no fondness for politics, and has never sought office, but he is a student of civil government and political science, and withal believes that it is a man's duty to serve his State whenever called upon to do so. In 1898, when the negroes by virtue of their majority had wrested the government of Wilmington from the whites, and the commercial and social prosperity of the city was threatened, Mr. Rountree gave all his time and thought to the problem, and was one of those who led the popular movement which purged the city of incendiary characters, and restored the government to the whites. It was on this occasion that

he was elected a member of the General Assembly of 1899. After the exciting campaign of 1898, followed by so signal a victory for white supremacy, it became apparent to thinking men that such a limitation of the elective franchise as would exclude the vicious and ignorant vote was absolutely necessary for the welfare of the State. Following the inclination of his own mind and the suggestions of many leading men of the State, including Hon. F. M. Simmons, chairman of the State Democratic Executive Committee, Mr. Rountree made a close study of the constitutional questions involved in a restriction of the suffrage, and on the convening of the legislature he was made chairman of the Committee on Constitutional Amendments. As chairman of that committee, he put in final shape the act which has become the suffrage amendment to the constitution, and in doing so it was his purpose to remove, as far as practicable, every danger of interference by the courts. He opposed strenuously every attempt to insert the "understanding" clause on the ground that it was not just to leave a citizen's right to vote to the juggling of a registrar, who probably would not understand the meaning of the constitution any better than the applicant to vote, and insisted upon the simple proposition of knowing how to read and write any section of the constitution as the proper test. Mr. Rountree maintained as a matter of law that the State could restrict the suffrage in any way it deemed wise, provided it was not done because of "race, color or previous condition of servitude." He maintained further that the right to vote should depend on character and intelligence, and that a voter might acquire the capacity to vote either by inheritance or education; that a man could, and probably would, inherit from his ancestors, who had practiced them for generations, that civic judgment and good sense which would enable him to vote intelligently on public questions, even though he could not read and write; and if a man, white or black, had not had the opportunity to acquire this capacity by inheritance he should do so as far as possible by education. It was upon this fundamental principle that the amendment was based, which is not a discrimination within the terms or spirit of the Constitution of the United States.

His thorough familiarity with all the details of the subject at once invested him with leadership, and his exposition of the proposed amendment, and of the legal points involved, were masterly, and his speech, circulated by the thousand, became the basis of the argument for the adoption and ratification by the people of that important change in their fundamental law. His connection with the preparation, passage and final ratification of that amendment, which is now, perhaps, the most important provision of the constitution, safe-guarding the prosperity, peace and happiness of the people, entitles him to be regarded as one of those whose patriotic endeavors have been of real advantage to his State and to the people of North Carolina.

While Mr. Rountree was one of the chief actors in securing the adoption of that amendment, which deprived the negroes so largely of their rights of suffrage because of their failure to possess those qualifications absolutely essential to good citizenship, he has never been animated by any hostility to that race. On the other hand, he has been the advocate of measures tending to their advancement, and the opponent of measures aimed against them, which were not, in his opinion, necessary to secure the maintenance of good government in the State. In the session of 1899, and also in that of 1901, when he was again a member of the Assembly, actuated by a broad patriotism and sense of justice, he opposed a proposed constitutional amendment providing that all the taxes paid by whites should be applied to the education of the whites, and that only the taxes paid by the negroes should be applied to the education of the negroes. This measure he considered contrary to the Constitution of the United States, unjust, unwise and inexpedient; but the act requiring separate accommodations for the races on railroad cars he advocated. Mr. Rountree introduced and advocated the passage of the act for the codification and simplification of the probate laws of the State, which was drawn by Mr. S. F. Mordecai. In the General Assembly of 1901 impeachment proceedings were begun against two of the justices of the Supreme Court; Mr. Rountree at first doubted the expediency and wisdom of the matter, but after the resolutions were

introduced he made an investigation of the charges, and felt constrained to vote for them. He was one of the managers appointed by the House in his absence to conduct the impeachment trial before the Senate, but made no argument on the trial. In addition to his professional arguments and his work in the General Assembly he has made a few addresses of more or less interest. Among these was one delivered before the Sound Money Club of Wilmington in September, 1895, in which he attempted to give the grounds of his belief that the low prices of agricultural products were due neither to the "Crime of 1873" or to the scarcity of money; another was the annual address before the Law School of the University of North Carolina in 1901, in which he endeavored to impress upon the students the necessity and importance of the study of the history and development of the law; a third was delivered before the State Bar Association at Asheville, North Carolina, in 1901, on "The Supreme Court of the United States."

In the law Mr. Rountree's reading has covered a wide range. He studies the law as a science, and practices it as a profession and not as a trade. With him the study of a legal principle is almost a passion, and he will spend weeks on a single subject, reading all the books he can obtain upon the subject, and then reflecting upon it until his mind is at ease, but the petty details and bickerings incident to a lawsuit are extremely distasteful to him. He is cautious in his office, slow to commence a suit, and never goes into the court-house until he is thoroughly convinced of his claim and has gone to the bottom of the subject; but when once convinced he is unalterable in his opinion except by the decision of the highest court, and then with reluctance. He seldom looks for decisions to support his contention, but endeavors to ascertain what the principle is that governs the subject. He is little disturbed by finding a decision against him unless the reason of it appeals to him, but continues his investigation in the endeavor to learn what the verdict of reason is on the question. He holds that inasmuch as many decisions have been overruled the courts will overrule others if convinced that they are wrong,

and "the reason of the thing" and not the decision controls him. He attributes the success of our great lawyers largely to their familiarity with the decisions of the Supreme Court of the United States and of the English courts—the source of the common law.

Mr. Rountree is a communicant of the Episcopal Church, and is very zealous in his attendance on its services. He is fond of social life, and his wife is the center of a large social circle. She is a woman of great popularity and strong personality, being the daughter of the late Hon. George Davis, the most eminent citizen who has ever adorned the city of Wilmington, distinguished for his culture and ability no less than for his personal worth and lofty character. On her mother's side, Mrs. Rountree is a member of the Polk family, which has contributed so many eminent sons to Southern life. Her mother was a daughter of General Thomas Gilchrist Polk, who was a son of Colonel William Polk, and a grandson of Colonel Thomas Polk, both patriots of the Revolution, and members of one of the most famous families in the annals of North Carolina. By this union Mr. Rountree has had five children, four of whom—three girls and one boy—are now living and sharing the blessings of a most beautiful and an ideal home life.

J. O. Carr.





MATTHEW ROWAN

IN 1730, when Burrington was commissioned royal governor, he nominated Matthew Rowan to be appointed by the Crown a member of his Council. This gentleman was then residing at Bath, where he was engaged in merchandising, carrying on the trade with Ireland, for although of Scotch descent, he was Irish born. His grandfather was Rev. Andrew Rowan, a son of John Rowan of Govan, Scotland, but in 1661 the young preacher was inducted into a charge in Antrim, Ireland, and among his sons was Rev. John Rowan, the father of Matthew, the subject of this sketch.

When Matthew Rowan first came to Carolina is unknown. It is probable that for some years he accompanied his own vessel and cargo from Ireland to Bath, returning for new goods prior to locating permanently; in 1729 he was, however, so thoroughly identified with the Bath community that he was then elected a church warden, and the next year he was a representative in the Assembly.

Burrington brought over his commission as councillor in 1731, and in January, 1732, he was sworn in; but perhaps because his domicile was in a remote part of the province he did not often attend the Council meetings. However, before 1734 Rowan moved to the Cape Fear, where he was associated with John Baptista Ashe in establishing a saw-mill on the North East River

in the vicinity of Burgaw, and in 1735 he was a justice of the peace of New Hanover County, and in 1737 he was appointed also a justice of the peace for Bladen County, where he seems to have resided. He now attended the Councils regularly, and was the supporter of Governor Johnston in the early years of his administration. In 1735 he bought, along with Governor Johnston and Colonel Innes, lots in Wilmington, and was a party to Governor Johnston's scheme to make Wilmington the emporium and principal town on the Cape Fear instead of Brunswick.

In 1736 the governor appointed him surveyor-general of the province; and the next year he and Robert Halton and Edward Moseley ran a part of the boundary line between North and South Carolina. From this appointment and employment it would seem that although at first a seafaring man and then a merchant, he had been well educated, at least in mathematics. He prospered as a planter, having at that time some twenty-five negroes, and attained for himself a high position in the esteem of the gentlemen in that part of the province. The councillors took precedence according to rank and seniority of commission. On the death of Governor Johnston, in 1752, Nathaniel Rice, who had come over with Burrington twenty years before as attorney-general, being the senior councillor, became president of the Council, but himself survived less than six months, and on his death, in January, 1753. Rowan, who was next in Council, took the oaths of office as president and commander-in-chief of the province. During his administration there were but two sessions of the Assembly in the spring of 1753 and of 1754. That was the long Assembly, which the members of the northern counties would not attend. Those were the last years of the period of disturbance during which the northern counties would not recognize the authority of the General Assembly as constituted by the Act of 1746, giving to the new counties equal representation with the five original precincts of Albemarle. But notwithstanding that disturbance, the western section of the province had received a marvelous accession of population. In the summer of 1753, President Rowan reported to the Board of Trade that "in the

year 1746 I was up in the country that is now Anson, Orange and Rowan counties. There was not then above one hundred fighting men. There is now at least three thousand, for the most part Irish-Protestants and Germans; and daily increasing." In the summer and fall of that year there was great concern felt in England about the expected hostilities of the French and Indians. In November President Rowan reported: "Last June three French and five Northward Indians came down to kill some of the Catawbas, but were met by thirteen of the Catawba Indians, who killed two French and three of the Northern Indians. The other three made their escape. The five were killed dead, so that no information could be had from them. This action was within less than two miles of Rowan County court-house during the sitting of the court." President Rowan immediately took steps to organize the militia in the several counties and provide to defend the province from anticipated attacks. The next spring the trouble came, and application being made to North Carolina for assistance by Virginia, President Rowan convened the Assembly on the 19th of February, and issued paper money to raise and provide for a regiment of 750 men for Virginia, and to finish the fort at the mouth of the Cape Fear and the one at Ocracoke Inlet, and to provide arms and ammunition for the poorer inhabitants of Rowan and Anson counties. He appointed Colonel Innes to the command of the regiment, and was active in putting the province in a state of defense. There were twenty-two counties at that time, and he formed a regiment of foot in each, and formed nine troops of horse and mentioned that he proposed forming eight more. He computed that the militia would muster about 15,000 men. At the spring session of the Assembly of 1753, a new county was laid off out of the northern part of Anson, and it was named Rowan in honor of the new president of the province, who seems to have had the good will of the northern counties and of the western settlements, as well as of the Cape Fear sections; and the two years that he administered affairs the government was well sustained. In October, 1754, Arthur Dobbs, who had been appointed governor immediately after the news of Governor

Johnston's death had reached England, but who had lingered at London for more than a year, arrived in Virginia and came over the country to his government. This terminated Rowan's administration. He continued to act as councillor until 1760, dying in that year. Several of his relatives were with him in North Carolina—one, Jerry Rowan, who, in 1734, resided in New Hanover County; another, Thomas, and his brother Acheson; and one, Robert Rowan, who, in 1754, was the major in Innes's regiment. He doubtless was the Robert Rowan who was a patriot in the Revolution, a citizen of Cumberland County, and was the first to sign the association paper of June, 1775, adopted by the committees for the Cape Fear counties. He rendered important services during the War of the Revolution, which is the more to be appreciated because of the extended disaffection throughout that region; and after the formation of the State government, he served in the House of Commons. He married Mrs. Grove, the mother of William Barry Grove, and he was of kin to the Hays and Groves, who were descendants of a Miss Rowan, probably his cousin.

The name Rowan is perpetuated in Rowan County, which was established in the spring of 1753 by the General Assembly. The King, claiming the exclusive right to establish counties, disallowed that act, but in 1756 the county was re-established. The first court, near which the Indian fight took place, according to tradition, was held in the Jersey settlement, not far from Trading Ford. At that first term the court, June, 1753, directed that "the court-house, gaol, and stocks shall be located where the Irish settlement forks"; and such was the beginning of Salisbury.

S. A. Ashe.

a fairly good acquaintance with the Bible and Catechism.

About the same time, a ruling elder of Bethpage Presbyterian Church established a Sabbath school at the same schoolhouse, which was attended by the young people of the neighborhood. The principal exercises were the reciting of the Scriptures, singing and prayer, a lesson from the Union Questions and the Shorter Catechism. It was a pretty general custom there to commit to memory and recite hymns and large portions of the Scriptures. The subject of this sketch relates that he recited one Sabbath morning the entire Sermon on the Mount, and he recollects that a girl repeated the 119th Psalm on the same occasion.

He attended three other schools in the following years, in one of which, in addition to completing Pike's Arithmetic, he studied Lindley Murray's English Grammar. But the greater part of the year was spent on the farm, only the winter months and the hot months, when there was not much to do on the farm, being available for school attendance. And though he longed for more time to study, an insurmountable wall of difficulties shut him up from the wider fields of learning till he had reached his eighteenth year. In 1837 Davidson College was established about ten miles from his home, and rumors of professors and students, of what they were teaching and what they were doing, circulated through the country and reached the ear of the farm boy and occupied his thoughts as he followed the plow or wielded his axe and hoe, and fanned the flame of long-smoldering aspirations for something different from his arduous labors in the forest and on the farm. As he thought and prayed, Providence was opening the way. In 1845 there graduated at Davidson College a young man by the name of Moses Lingle. He was employed in the fall of the same year to teach a classical school in the bounds of Poplar Tent Congregation, about six miles from the home of the boy who longed for an education. Arrangements were speedily made for him to attend this school, and he walked those six miles morning and evening for several months, spending the hours of the journey back and forth committing to memory page after page of Adams's Latin Grammar. It did not take him long to

commit the entire grammar to memory, and to read and translate the *Historiæ Sacræ* and a few chapters of Cæsar's *Gallic Wars*. But this was too good to last. Money—some money, then as now, was needed for an education. So after three months he secured a small school, made a little money and returned to Mr. Lingle's school for a few more months. Thus, alternating between teaching and going to school within two years he entered the sophomore class of Davidson College in 1847, and was graduated therefrom in 1850 with a share of the first honor and with an indebtedness of several hundred dollars. To pay off this debt was the next sacred duty, for money had been loaned to him without security, with the distinct understanding that if he lived it would be paid, but that if he died it would not be paid. So he at once resorted to teaching, the only means in sight of securing the money for discharging his obligations. Within the next four years he taught classical schools at several places and prepared a number of boys for college. This experience grounded him thoroughly in his classical studies.

For a number of years his desire had been to enter the Gospel ministry, if the way should be clear. At the age of eighteen he had become a member of the Presbyterian Church, and it was suggested to him to seek aid in his college course from the Board of Education. But he preferred to make his own way by his own efforts. And besides, he did not feel absolutely certain of his call to that sacred office. But during the last year of his teaching, near the home of his pastor, the Rev. Walter W. Pharr, D.D., he undertook some studies in the way of preparation for the ministry at his suggestion and at his direction. The chief text-book was Mosheim's *Ecclesiastical History*, which he studied carefully, made synopses of the various parts and recited to his pastor every Saturday.

In 1854 he was examined and received under the care of the Concord Presbytery. In the same year he entered the Columbia Theological Seminary, and his teachers there were Rev. George Howe, D.D.; Rev. A. W. Leland, D.D.; Rev. B. M. Palmer, D.D.; and Rev. James H. Thornwell, D.D. While in the seminary he

spent part of his time in teaching classes outside, and officiated as majordomo of a boarding club, thus meeting necessary expenses. expenses.

After two years of seminary study he was licensed to preach the Gospel by the Concord Presbytery, at Rocky River Church, July 31, 1856. Receiving calls shortly after licensure to Sharon and Providence churches, in Mecklenburg County, he was ordained to the full work of the ministry by Concord Presbytery January 9, 1857, and installed pastor of these churches.

So much has been said about the preparatory stages of Jethro Rumples life in the hope that it may teach this important lesson: that in this age and country the road to a liberal education is open to any one who is willing to labor and strive and wait and pray for it. Because of the urgent demand for ministers of the Gospel in this day, it may not be expedient for all young men to struggle through twelve years in preparation for this important work, but often the time spent in working and waiting is the best part of the preparation.

In the forty-nine years since his licensure there have been few Sabbaths, probably not more than one or two scores in all, in which he has not preached the Gospel somewhere or else been engaged in other official duties, and he has made but one change in his work in all these years. After four years of labor in Providence and Sharon churches, he was called to the pastorate of the First Presbyterian Church of Salisbury, North Carolina, and was installed pastor in that church November 24, 1860. His ministry there was soon followed by the stormy days of the war between the States. The men capable of bearing arms were soon called to the front, and none but the old men, the women and the children were left at home. Soldiers were continually passing and repassing, and the news of the bloody battles and the death of husbands, brothers and sons filled many homes with mourning. It seemed to be the young pastor's duty to remain with his people to comfort the mourning, to help the poor and to care for his young and helpless family. Nevertheless, he found time, under the appointment of synod, to share six months as missionary chaplain

in the army of Northern Virginia. He spent part of a winter near Orange Court House with General Scales's Brigade, where the soldiers built a chapel, in which continuous services were held for several weeks, and many brave soldiers were hopefully converted to God. A number of these fell on the field of battle, but a number still survive, and he occasionally meets some one of these converts, who greets him as his spiritual father. But as a matter of fact, there was little increase in the church at home during those exciting years of war. Subsequent years of peace spent in rehabilitating broken fortunes have been more encouraging. At the time of his accession to the pastorate the number of communicants on the roll was ninety, and the population of the town about 3000. After forty-five years of labor the church roll counts up 400, and the city population is in the neighborhood of 8000. In the meantime two churches in the suburbs, made up partially of members of the town church, have been organized, with an aggregate membership of eighty.

On entering upon his ministry in Salisbury, he found a full board of ruling elders and deacons, a number of them having served almost from the organization of the church in 1821. But after the lapse of forty-five years all of these venerable men have gone to their rest above, and all except five of the eighty unofficial members have fallen asleep. Now it is the children and grandchildren of the members of 1860 that listen to the voice of the pastor of bygone days. The church during this time has been faithful in labors for Christ and His cause, living in peace and harmony among themselves, and liberal in contributions to the causes of Christian benevolence. She has sent out seven young men as ministers of the Gospel, and has two missionaries laboring in the foreign field, one in China and another in Korea.

Dr. Rumble has been called upon during his long ministry to fill a number of responsible positions in the church and in educational institutions. Five times he has represented his Presbytery in the General Assembly, the first time in the last General Assembly of the undivided Presbyterian Church in Rochester, New York, in 1860. Several times he has served as moderator of his Pres-

bytery and once as moderator of the synod of North Carolina. He has served as stated clerk and treasurer of his Presbytery. In 1884 he was sent as delegate from the Southern Presbyterian Church to the General Council of the Reformed Churches, held in Belfast, Ireland, on which occasion he made a brief tour in North Ireland, Glasgow, Edinburgh, Highlands of Scotland, the lake region, London, Paris, etc.

He has been a trustee of Davidson College since 1861, for a few years its treasurer and for a score of years secretary of its Board of Trustees and a member of its Executive Committee.

Since 1861 he has been a director of Union Theological Seminary in Virginia, and in recent years a trustee of the Presbyterian Female College in Charlotte and Statesville.

In 1888 the synod appointed him chairman of the Board of Regents to organize and build up its orphans' home, now located at Barium Springs, North Carolina, and at its dedication named its main building in his honor, because the success of the institution is largely due to him.

In 1882 the University of North Carolina complimented him with the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity.

During the years 1879-80, in obedience to a request of the synod of North Carolina, he published in the *North Carolina Presbyterian* the substance of a report to the synod, in a series of thirty articles or more, entitled "Presbyterianism in North Carolina." These articles gave an account of the planting of the Presbyterian Church in North Carolina, with sketches of many of the older churches, the early classical schools, the University of North Carolina and Davidson College, together with brief biographies of quite a number of the older ministers of the synod. These have never been put into book form as they deserve, as they contain many valuable facts concerning the rise and progress of the Presbyterian Church in North Carolina. In 1881 he published a small volume entitled "A History of Rowan County, North Carolina," with sketches of a number of the older families of the county, and an appendix, containing a roll of the rank and file of the soldiers from Rowan who took part in the war of the Confederacy.

In 1884, as assistant editor of the Presbyterian Encyclopædia, of which Dr. Alfred Nevin of Philadelphia was the principal editor, he prepared for that volume nearly a score of sketches contained in it. He was also the principal editor of the Addresses Delivered at the Semi-Centennial of Davidson College, in 1887, and prepared and delivered an address on the History of Davidson College.

The foregoing list of labors in the ministry, and his connection with various educational and benevolent enterprises, and brief excursions into the domain of historical literature, are, perhaps, sufficient to show that Dr. Ruple has not been an idler in the great field of the world's work.

In the forty-nine years of his ministerial life, and especially in the forty-five years of his ministry in Salisbury, it has been his effort to emphasize the duty of preaching; and the sermons for the ensuing Sabbath engaged his attention through the previous week. It was his custom to examine his texts in the original Hebrew and Greek languages, and to get as accurate a knowledge of the meaning of the spirit as was possible to him. His early experience in teaching and making people understand things formed a habit that has clung to him all his days, so that he has never been satisfied until he thought he was teaching the people something. It was his rule to prepare two sermons each week, one written out in full and the other arranged in extensive notes. But the manuscript was not to be read in the pulpit nor committed to memory, but simply to furnish a study of the subject. The delivery seemed to be *extempore*, and was largely so in its language, but studied as to its matter. A leading teacher of North Carolina once said that his idea of a good sermon was that it should be "religious stump speaking," and this conveys some idea of what he endeavored to accomplish in his preaching.

In establishing his domestic relations he had resolved that he was never going to ask a lady to become his wife until he had a charge, nor be married until he was a regularly ordained minister. And so on the 13th of October, 1857, he was united in marriage to Miss Jane Elizabeth Wharton, the daughter of Watson and

Melinda Wharton of Greensboro, North Carolina. She was of a strict and thorough Presbyterian stock. Three of her uncles, Rev. Jesse and Rev. John C. Rankin, D.D., and Rev. Paisley Wharton, were Presbyterian ministers, and six of her uncles and her father were ruling elders in the Presbyterian Church. She was a faithful, helpful, thrifty and affectionate wife and an industrious and careful mother in training and fitting for usefulness the children that were born unto them. These were three: Watson Wharton, the eldest, died at the age of eighteen, a member of the senior class of Davidson College, in 1877. The second son, James Walker, studied law and married Miss Jane D. Vardell of Charleston, South Carolina, and died in 1894, leaving his wife and one son, James Malcolmson Rumble. The third child was a daughter, born in Salisbury in 1863, during the war, and was named Linda Lee. In 1891 she was married to Rev. C. G. Vardell, D.D., now president of the Southern Presbyterian College at Red Springs, North Carolina, where one son and five daughters cheer and gladden their happy home. Mrs. Vardell has a rare talent for music, and has enjoyed the best facilities for its cultivation to be found in this country; first as a mere child under her mother's faithful training, then at Peace Institute, and last in the New England Conservatory of Music in Boston, Mass. She has had charge of the department of music in the college from the beginning, and to her is due no small share of the unparalleled success of the school of which her husband is president.

After forty-five years of happy wedded life, Mrs. Rumble died suddenly at Blowing Rock, North Carolina, July 6, 1902, leaving Dr. Rumble alone in the home where he has spent so many years of active and useful life. In view of his increasing years, and the departure of that physical activity which has characterized his early life, his church has generously secured, during the past year, an assistant pastor in the person of Rev. John H. Grey, whose faithful and acceptable services lighten the burden of the pastor, who is now entering the fiftieth year of ministerial work.

This sketch of Dr. Rumble's long life might seem commonplace and colorless to many who have not known him in person or by

reputation. But those who have known him longest will see his real personality in it all, and will estimate his life of service at its true value. His entire life may be but named "a life of service." No man has understood better than he these words of Christ, "If any man will be great among you, let him be the servant of all," and few men have illustrated them better. His has not been what we call heroic service, though he would have been equal to it on occasion, nor has it been an ambitious, self-seeking service, though he might have won much of honor and emolument from his fellow-men if he had only sought it. Nor has it been a service of calculating self-interest; but duty done has been its own inspiration and conscious success his unfailing reward.

In bodily form and frame and presence he has been "a man of work" among his fellow-men. The writer once heard the pastor of the church of Huntsville, Alabama, say: "Come, I am hunting for a man I can put into the pulpit along with Dr. Rumble, who is to preach to the General Assembly this morning." The fact was that few men cared to be contrasted with him in form and features or in sermonic power. "*Mens sana in corpore sano.*" In the same way he towered above his generation in his life of service. He was not a born leader, and never thrust himself forward; but whenever leadership called for hard work and faithful service it was not hard to find him and to lay heavy burdens on his broad shoulders, and he was never known to shirk them. For nearly fifty years he has taken a modest but a most prominent part in all educational movements in North Carolina, and he has done faithful work in the foundations.

In the growth of the church, also, he has always found something to do as well as something to say, and his influence and power have been largely felt throughout the State, and the members of other denominations have not been slow to do him honor.

One feature of his wider service calls for special emphasis. He has done much to keep in mind the memories of the heroes of the American Revolution, many of whom belonged to this section of the State, and their descendants still dwell numerous here. The writer has lived in several other States and com—

munities, but he has nowhere found these patriotic memories so fragrant and so cherished as in the counties around Salisbury and Charlotte, thanks to the enthusiastic and painstaking researches of Dr. Rumble and other kindred spirits.

While many emphasize and admire his scholarly habits, his painstaking researches, his patient service and his consecration to truth and duty, we may not fail to note his strong common sense. This runs like a scarlet thread through all the rest to give them tone and power. This has made him the wise counsellor and trusted friend of all the generations in which he has lived and labored.

And yet as I write this I can almost hear him say, "No! no! Who maketh me to differ from another?" This, then, may be given as the key to his whole life, from eighteen to seventy-eight: "Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?"

John B. Shearer.

On January 20, 1906, Dr. Rumble, after a few months' illness, died at the home of his daughter, Mrs. Vardell, at Red Springs, and was buried at Salisbury.





ROMULUS MITCHELL SAUNDERS

BUT few men have played so large and important a rôle in public affairs in North Carolina as the subject of this sketch did for a period of fifty years. His grandfather was James Saunders of Orange County, who had four sons, among them Colonel James Saunders, a patriot in Revolutionary times, who represented Orange County in the Provincial Congress of April, 1776, that placed the State in a condition to defend the liberties of the people, and declared for independence, and William. On the formation of the new Continental regiments in 1777. William Saunders, a son of James Saunders, although but a youth, became ensign in the 6th regiment, and in February, 1779, received his promotion to lieutenant, and he continued in service with General Greene until the end of the war in 1783. Shortly after peace was won, this young Continental officer returned home and was married to Hannah Mitchell, by whom he had two sons, Franklin and Romulus Mitchell, the latter being the subject of this sketch. Mrs. Saunders dying, her husband, with his two sons, moved to Sumner County, Tennessee, where he married Miss Cunningham, a sister of Major Cunningham, who had been a member of General Washington's staff, and who had moved from Dan River to Sumner County. By this lady William Saunders had three sons and two daughters. One of these sons was Judge Lafayette Saunders of Baton Rouge, Louis-

iana, who in the Whig Convention nominated General Taylor as the successor to President Polk, whose nomination four years earlier had been secured by his brother, the subject of this sketch.

Romulus Saunders inherited a robust constitution and strong mental characteristics, which were well developed by his early training and by his active and earnest life. He was born on the 3d of March, 1791, in Caswell County, and was educated at Hyco and Caswell academies; and being well prepared entered the University in 1809, and remained a student at that institution for two years. He left the University before graduating and studied law in Tennessee under that distinguished lawyer, Hon. Hugh Lawson White, then a judge of the Supreme Court of that State; and he was licensed to practice in Tennessee in 1812. Shortly afterward he returned from Tennessee, and on the 22d of December, 1812, he married Miss Rebecca Peine Carter, and began the practice of his profession in Caswell County. Richly endowed with the elements of a successful political career, and much interested in the political questions that agitated the State, he entered public life at the age of twenty-four, along with Bedford Brown, also of Caswell County, who, like himself, was destined to a distinguished public career.

In 1815 these two young men represented Caswell County in the House of Commons, and the next year Mr. Saunders was elected to the State Senate; and then he again became a member of the House, of which body, so great was his capacity and personal popularity, he was chosen Speaker in 1819 and in 1820.

In the latter year he was also elected a member of Congress, and he continued to serve for three terms as a representative in Congress from his district. His family was strongly Democratic, and he was a warm supporter of the administration, and was closely associated with Bartlett Yancey and Mr. Macon, with the latter of whom, indeed, he was intimately thrown at his first entrance into Washington life.

In 1828 he accepted the position of attorney-general of the State, and filled it with great acceptability until 1833, when he was appointed by President Jackson one of the commissioners to ascertain

and allot amounts due claimants for injuries sustained at the hands of France. In discharging this duty, Judge Saunders won many eulogiums. Colonel Wheeler says: "The first legal talents of the nation appeared before this board as advocates; among them were Daniel Webster, Chancellor Kent, Francis Key and David B. Ogden. Such were the patient and laborious habits of General Saunders, the acumen of his intellect and the clearness of his decisions, that he won for himself the respect and esteem of all in his arduous duties." His associates on this commission were Judge Campbell of Tennessee and Judge Kane of Pennsylvania, who were men of the first distinction at that time. On the completion of this work, in 1835, he was elected a judge of the Superior Court, and for five years he rode the circuit of the State, during which time he became such a favorite with the public men of North Carolina that in 1840 he was brought forward for governor and nominated by the Democratic Convention for that office. On the formation of the Whig Party half a dozen years before in North Carolina, John M. Morehead, who had been a strong supporter of Jackson, had gone over to the opposition, and now, as Governor Dudley's term was about expiring, he was nominated as the Whig candidate for governor, Saunders being his competitor for the office. The campaign that year has been known as the "Log Cabin Campaign," the Presidential contestants being General Harrison and Martin Van Buren, the same nominees as four years before. The slogan of the opposition was "Turn the rascals out," and they had no platform or declaration of principles. The campaign was almost exclusively one of personalities, and North Carolina, as well as all other States, was the scene of unexampled excitement. Mr. Morehead was not so well versed in political history of his astute and practical opponent, Judge Saunders, who was conversant with all the phases of legislation in Congress and to whom every point and guard of political warfare were familiar. Great crowds met the gubernatorial contestants. Both were in the prime of manhood, able, capable and ambitious. Judge Saunders was the more dexterous and better informed, and he made the most powerful presentation of his

party's case for popular approval. But the majority in the State was with the Whigs, and the character of their campaign appealed most strongly to the floating masses, while the determination of the capitalists to put an end to the administration of Van Buren, which was regarded as only a continuation of the detested Jackson, led them to make every effort for success. A great demonstration was made at Raleigh, and log cabins were hauled through the streets, where many thousand people had come even from remote counties in their buggies and on horseback. Saunders was defeated by some 8000 votes, but the canvass he made added largely to his reputation and endeared him still more strongly to his party.

In the same year that he was defeated for governor, he was again elected to Congress, and in 1842 he was a strong candidate for senatorial honors. The Whigs having control of the assembly, in December 1838 had instructed the two senators, Bedford Brown and Judge Strange, who were Democrats, to vote for certain Whig measures, which they could not consistently support, and under the doctrine of instructions at that time recognized in North Carolina, both senators resigned; and on November 25th, 1840, Graham and Magnum were elected to the vacancies, Magnum's competitor being Bedford Brown, who was supported by the Democrats. Judge Strange's unexpired term, to which Graham was elected, was to end in March, 1843, and at the Assembly of November, 1842, a successor was to be chosen. The Democrats had a considerable majority in that Assembly, and Bedford Brown and Judge Saunders were the principal candidates. The party strength was not centered, however, on either. The canvass became protracted, and developed great bitterness between the friends of the rival aspirants, the particular line of cleavage being States Rights. Judge Saunders's friends claimed the honor for him, and as he was very popular and a very strong man, they stood by him with devoted zeal. After nearly a month of fruitless balloting, on the 19th of December the ballot stood, Saunders, 59; Brown, 39; Haywood, 5; Graham, 6; Badger, 2; Speight, Ruffin, Barringer and Swain, each one. It would seem from this

count that the Whigs generally refrained from voting. Christmas holiday was now approaching. Under this pressure the two leading candidates, Brown and Saunders, gave way, and W. H. Haywood, who had been speaker of the House a little earlier, was elected, the vote in the Assembly being, Haywood 95, and Graham 69. The *Standard* the next day said:

"We feel great pleasure in being able to announce that our Democratic friends, after a session of bitter, and, we must add, shameful contention, have become reconciled, and yesterday elected that distinguished son of North Carolina, William Henry Haywood, Jr., to the Senate of the United States. This was the result of compromise between the friends of other candidates, and we hope all criminations and recriminations will cease."

Judge Saunders, being a member of the House of Representatives, remained in that body until 1845. He took a prominent part in national matters. Toward the end of President Tyler's term, the question of the annexation of Texas became of much interest to the Southern people. Mr. Clay was nominated by the Whig Convention at Baltimore for the Presidency, and a month later the Democratic Convention met in the same city. Mr. Van Buren was the favorite of the Northern wing of the party, and had the support of the majority of the convention. James K. Polk of Tennessee had been the speaker of the House of Representatives, and was a candidate for the Vice-Presidency. The Southern men wished a nominee who would carry out the plans of the Tyler administration with reference to annexing Texas, even if a war with Mexico should result. Van Buren was opposed to this measure, and to defeat his nomination, which otherwise was a foregone conclusion, Judge Saunders at an early stage of the proceedings brought forward a rule requiring a two-thirds vote to make a nomination, and notwithstanding the remonstrances of Benjamin F. Butler of New York, the most active of Van Buren's managers, this rule was agreed to by a vote of 148 to 118. There were seven candidates in the field, of whom the leading ones were Van Buren and General Cass. But after many ballotings and a stormy session of three days, it became apparent that the friends of the annexation policy would be successful, and James K. Polk

of Tennessee, was nominated for the Presidency, and George M. Dallas for the Vice-Presidency. On the 17th of April Mr. Clay was in Raleigh, where he was entertained by Governor Morehead, and where he received a great ovation, speaking from the western portico of the capitol; and on that day he wrote a letter declaring against the annexation of Texas without the consent of Mexico; and that question became the leading subject in the election. Polk was elected, and he owed his nomination to the rule introduced by Judge Saunders. He began his administration by bringing on the war which resulted in the annexation of Texas and the acquisition of New Mexico, Arizona, California, a vast territory so important to the United States.

In 1846 President Polk, in recognition of the public services of Judge Saunders and his eminent ability, tendered him the post of envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to Spain, he being the second North Carolinian on whom such a distinguished position had been conferred, the first being General Davie when sent to France. Judge Saunders continued in the discharge of these high functions four years, and during the time of his residence at the Spanish Court, he was entrusted by the President with a special commission to negotiate for the purchase of the island of Cuba. This negotiation was successful, and the sale was agreed to by the Spanish premier; but the betrayal of the diplomatic secret by the secretary of legation, in the absence of Judge Saunders on a visit to Paris, giving premature publicity to the transaction, led to the defeat of the sale, and it was not consummated.

On the return of Judge Saunders to his home at Raleigh, where he had made his residence in 1831, he entered warmly into political action, and was particularly distinguished for his advocacy of internal improvements, the friends of the North Carolina Railroad especially acknowledging his valuable aid in connection with that work. In 1850 and in 1852 he represented Wake County in the House of Commons. At the session of 1852, as Senator Mangum's term was about to expire, the General Assembly had to choose a United States senator. The Democrats were in the majority, and

in their caucus James C. Dobbin, who a few months later became secretary of the navy, was selected as the party nominee. There was at this time a sharp difference among Democrats as to the distribution of the public lands among the original thirteen States, which was strongly advocated by the Whig Party. It is understood that Judge Saunders did not go into the Democratic caucus. He was voted for by some seven or eight others for ten ballots, and then withdrew his name. On the thirteenth ballot, under-work. In 1850 and in 1852 he represented Wake County in the standing that Mr. Dobbin needed but one vote to secure an election, Judge Saunders obtained the speaker's recognition, and asked leave to vote, and recorded it for Mr. Dobbin; but as announced, Mr. Dobbin still lacked two votes of an election. This contest lasted forty days, and probably over one hundred ballots were had. There was no election for senator at that session, and the State was without one senator for some time in consequence.

At that session of the legislature, Judge Saunders was elected term was about to expire, the General Assembly had to choose a judge of the Superior Court, and he held that position during the war and until 1865, when he retired from the bench and passed the remainder of his life among his books and friends at his hospitable home at Raleigh.

Judge Saunders, having lost his first wife, by whom he had three sons and two daughters, on the 26th of May, 1823, while a member of Congress, married Anna Heyes Johnson, a daughter of Justice William Johnson of the United States Supreme Court, who was a son of William Johnson and Sarah Nightengale, who was famous for her devotion to the cause of Independence. Of her it is related that after Charleston had been captured by the British, she quilted powder in her petticoats and thus conveyed it out of the city to the rebels, and it was used at the battle of Camden. Justice Johnson himself contributed a most valuable addition to the literature of the Revolutionary period by the publication of the "Life of General Greene;" his brother, Dr. Joseph Johnson, also published valuable reminiscences.

About 1831 Judge Saunders purchased from Judge Gaston the Elmwood property in Raleigh that had been built by Chief Justice Taylor in 1813, and was occupied by Chief Justice Ruffin; and there he made his home until his death, on the 21st day of April, 1867.

By his second wife Judge Saunders had two sons and four daughters. Of the former, Colonel William Johnson Saunders, an efficient and distinguished soldier in the Confederate army, still survives. One of his daughters became the wife of the brilliant lawyer and distinguished general, Bradley T. Johnson of Baltimore, Maryland.

S. A. Ashe.



which was directly responsible for the presence of representatives of the family in America.

The first of the name to come to America was Hans Christian Alexander von Schweinitz. He came to Bethlehem, Pennsylvania, in 1770, charged with the administration of the affairs of the Moravian Church in this country. On April 27, 1779, he was married to Dorothea von Wattewille, a granddaughter of Count Zinzendorf. Their oldest son was Lewis David von Schweinitz, born at Bethlehem, February 13, 1780. This son of the founder of the American branch was a man of great erudition. He was a devout churchman and prominent in ecclesiastical work, but in the midst of his labors in behalf of the church he found much time to devote to abstruse scientific research, and became one of the most distinguished American botanists of his time. His attention was devoted to cryptogamic botany, and he added the enormous number of nearly 1400 new species to the botanical science of his period. His scientific treatises were written in Latin, and his translations into that tongue included his own name, which appeared as Ludovicus de Schweinitz. His descendants have for the most part signed themselves de Schweinitz instead of von Schweinitz, evidently preferring their name in its Latinized form. It is probable that the love of science of our dear dead friend was a heritage from this illustrious ancestor. On May 24, 1812, he married Amalie le Doux, of Huguenot descent, and their second son was Emil Adolphus de Schweinitz, who served the Moravian Church in various capacities, the last of which was that of bishop. Emil Adolphus de Schweinitz married Sophia Hermann, daughter of Bishop J. G. Hermann, in 1842, and their sixth child and only son was Emil Alexander de Schweinitz, our beloved friend, whose life we are commemorating.

Descended from a cultured ancestry, Dr. de Schweinitz was by nature studious and thoughtful. His education was begun early and extended over a long period, during which he worked patiently and systematically, recognizing the value of liberal and thorough education, and earnestly striving to secure the best

possible equipment for the busy life which was to follow. He began school at an early age, first attending a Moravian school in his native town of Salem. In 1877 he was sent to Nazareth Hall Military Academy, a boarding school for boys at Nazareth, Pennsylvania, where he remained for one year, graduating at the head of his class, and receiving the first prize, a gold medal, in June, 1878. From 1878 to 1881 he pursued a classical course in the Moravian College at Bethlehem, Pennsylvania. He did not remain at that college sufficiently long to complete the course. Evidently he had a desire to receive his degree from the University of his native State. In August, 1881, he matriculated at the University of North Carolina, and so diligently had he applied himself during the preceding years that he was admitted to the senior class. He received the degree of Bachelor of Arts in June, 1882, at the youthful age of eighteen years. During the summer following his graduation he pursued a course in chemistry and mineralogy at the University of Virginia. In September, 1882, he returned to the University of North Carolina, where he remained until 1885, receiving in the latter year the degree of Doctor of Philosophy. It was during this period that the friendship between Dr. de Schweinitz and the writer began. At that time Dr. de Schweinitz possessed the same quiet, reserved disposition which is familiar to those who knew him during recent years. There was only a casual acquaintance between him and the bulk of his fellow-students, among many of whom there was, because of his reserve and a degree of diffidence, an impression that he was indifferent and lacking in warmth of heart. This impression was erroneous, for in reality his heart, if reached in the proper way, was exceedingly warm, and no man could be more loyal. His intimate friends were few in number, but those who came into close association with him found in him qualities which could not fail to command their respect and admiration. My personal recollection of de Schweinitz, the college student, is that he was by nature industrious, and was very intent upon his work; that he always stood well in his classes, more because of his industry and systematic effort than because of brilliancy:

and that beneath an exterior of seeming indifference, if not of coldness, there beat a heart of great warmth and of absolute loyalty.

He must have inspired the confidence of the faculty, for while pursuing the course of study which led to the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, he was, during a portion of the time, serving the University in the capacity of assistant professor of natural history. An historical sketch of the University published in 1889 shows that he held this assistant professorship in the year 1884-85. During his entire college life he gave special attention to the study of chemistry, and my recollection is that he had previously determined to devote his life to chemical work.

In May, 1885, Dr. de Schweinitz went abroad for the purpose of further pursuing his studies in chemistry and mineralogy. He studied at the Universities of Berlin and Göttingen, and in 1886 received from the latter the degree of Doctor of Philosophy. The obtaining of this degree was a source of great satisfaction to him, for his diploma was a guarantee of the thoroughness of his training and of the possession of skill and knowledge fitting him for any undertaking within the bounds of his specialty.

The period from 1886 to 1888 was spent in teaching chemistry, a portion of the time at Tuft's College, near Boston, and a portion at the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Kentucky.

On August 23, 1888, he was appointed assistant in the chemical laboratory of the United States Department of Agriculture, an event which gave him much gratification, for it meant to him the opening of the coveted way to scientific accomplishment in the field for which he had been so splendidly trained. He retained his connection with the Department of Agriculture to the end of his life, and the records of the department show that in recognition of his scientific attainments and of the value of his services he was promoted step by step to his final responsible position. April 1, 1889, he was appointed chemist in the Division of Chemistry; January 1, 1890, he was made assistant in the Bureau of Animal Industry; and July 1, 1896, upon the organization in that bureau

of the Biochemic Division, he was made its chief, which position he held at the time of his death.

The quality of his work during the period of his governmental service and the value of his contributions to science will be spoken of by one whose daily life brought them into close association and who is well qualified to speak with authority. Suffice it for me to say that his work was well known to and approved by the scientific men of two continents, and that his reputation as a scientist rests upon a substantial foundation. He was a member of many scientific societies, a list of which is as follows: *American*—Washington Biological; Washington Entomological; Washington Section, American Chemical (president, 1897); American Bacteriological; Medical Society, District of Columbia; American Medical Association; American Public Health Association; Washington Academy of Sciences, etc. *Foreign*—German Chemical Society; International Applied Chemical and Biological Society; French Society of Pure Chemistry. He also received the following named scientific commissions: United States delegate to Tuberculosis Congress, Paris, 1898 (vice-president); to Tuberculosis Congress, Berlin, 1899 (vice-president); to International Medical Congress, 1900 (vice-president); to International Congress of Hygiene, Paris, 1900.

In 1892 Dr. de Schweinitz was elected by the faculty of the Medical Department of Columbian University to the chair of Chemistry and Toxicology, to succeed the late Professor E. T. Fristoe. From the moment of his entrance into the faculty he worked with all the zeal of which he was capable in behalf of the cause of medical education and for the upbuilding of the Medical School and the University. In 1897 he was unanimously elected by the faculty to the office of dean, which position he held with honor and credit until the termination of his life. No one within my knowledge has been connected with the Columbian University to whom the University owes a greater debt of gratitude than Dr. de Schweinitz, and it is particularly fitting that this meeting should do honor to his memory in this hall and under the auspices of the University whose welfare was so near to his

heart. He quickly saw the needs of the Medical School, and worked with all his strength to secure the advancement of this department of the University. The school's growth under his administration of its affairs bears witness to his industry and zeal, and abundantly demonstrates the wisdom of his judgment. During his tenure of the office of dean there occurred many of the most important events in the life of the school. The University Hospital came into existence (1898), the old Medical School building was outgrown and replaced by the present commodious and well-planned structure (1902), and the new hospital building adjoining the old hospital was erected (1902). In the accomplishment of these great ends Dr. de Schweinitz played an important part. He took the keenest delight in the planning of the new buildings, and especially in the arrangement of the large lecture halls and laboratories, and the satisfactory results attained are to a large measure in the nature of a monument to his industry and executive ability. In the life history of the Medical Department the period of greatest progress corresponds to the period during which Dr. de Schweinitz was its dean.

As professor of Chemistry and Toxicology, Dr. de Schweinitz won and retained the respect and confidence of his colleagues and the admiration and gratitude of his pupils. It is left to one of his pupils to speak of him as a teacher.

In 1898 the Columbian University, in consideration of the high order of his original scientific work and of the value of his services to medicine, conferred upon him the honorary degree of Doctor of Medicine. He never practiced the profession of medicine, but devoted his entire energies to scientific investigation and teaching.

To those who knew him well Dr. de Schweinitz possessed a most agreeable personality. In his intercourse with his fellow-men he was courteous and considerate, regardless of their station in life; and he easily won the confidence and esteem of those with whom he had any considerable association. The regard with which he was held by his students was little short of affectionate. Prominent among his personal characteristics were loyalty to his

friends, directness and fairness, a love of directness and fairness in others and a contempt for deception and equivocation.

In the summer of 1903 he contracted typhoid fever. The fever, though not of a severe type, ran a course of great tediousness, and left him in a condition of prostration, from which he never fully recovered. His fatal illness began Sunday morning, February 14, 1904. In the afternoon of that day he walked from his residence to the Columbian University Hospital. It was evident almost from the beginning that he was hopelessly stricken, and of such overwhelming intensity was his illness that shortly before noon on February 15 he yielded his grasp on life. After a short funeral service in the city on the evening of the following day, his remains were carried to his native town of Salem. Tenderly borne by loving hands to the Moravian graveyard, they were laid to rest February 17 by the side of loved ones gone before.

“His life was gentle, and the elements
So mixed in him that
Nature might stand up
And say to all the world,
‘This was a man!’ ”

Sterling Ruffin.



Mrs. Spencer's life was an open book. She always said what she thought, and she had some thoughts about everything within her horizon. I was not long in concluding, and I have not since changed the conclusion, that Mrs. Spencer was one of the most remarkable persons I had ever met.

Physically Mrs. Spencer is large, strong and handsome, much above the usual size, with an imposing figure and presence. Her features, too, like her body, are strong and striking; large, lustrous eyes, full, broad, massive brow, firm, well-cut chin and a nose to Napoleon's taste. Her head and features are masculine, but they do not appear so, for a woman's feeling gives a warm glow and a sunny sweetness to her face.

Mentally Mrs. Spencer combines the intellect of a man with the intuition of a woman. She can reason out the most intricate and difficult problems, and she can also jump, and jump correctly, at conclusions. When Governor Vance was asked if Mrs. Spencer was not the smartest woman in North Carolina, "Yes," said he; "and the smartest man, too." Mrs. Spencer's great intellectual power is a case of inheritance. She and her two brothers, Charles Phillips and Samuel F. Phillips, possessed unusually strong, active and fertile brains, very similar in character and inherited from parents vigorous, sane, active and intellectual. Their father was an Englishman who might have represented the English race, and who for this reason was called "John Bull" by the students of the University. Their mother was an American, of Dutch descent, very strong in character, industrious, domestic, well educated and literary. The three children were reared in the strictest school of domestic discipline, religious discipline and educational discipline. Each grew up in Chapel Hill, a little country village, and each became here a great force of manhood or womanhood, capable of doing good service to humanity anywhere on the globe. Charles Phillips was for forty years professor in the University, probably the most intellectual professor ever there; Samuel Phillips was for twelve years, under three different administrations, the leading legal adviser, as solicitor-general of the United States, of the national government. Cornelia Phillips has surpassed both her

brothers in length of years, length of service and variety and versatility and brilliancy of service.

Lack of space forbids my dwelling fully upon Mrs. Spencer's services to North Carolina. These have been political, educational, religious and literary. In politics she was a Democrat, believing very thoroughly in the people of North Carolina and in their right and their capacity to govern themselves. She despised the carpet-bagger. Her "Last Ninety Days of the War" is a vivid and strong picture of those awful times.

Educationally Mrs. Spencer contributed perhaps more than any other person to the revival of the University in 1875, after its overthrow by the carpet-baggers. She wrote and spoke and prayed unceasingly for the overthrow of the foul gang that were polluting the University halls and for the restoration of the University to its own. Her labors, her prayers were answered. She lived to see the day of triumph, to decorate the college chapel with glad garlands and to write the hymn of rejoicing that was sung at the reopening exercises. Mrs. Spencer was always an ardent and active friend and supporter of education, in public schools, in academies, in Sunday-schools, in colleges, and especially in the University.

In religion Mrs. Spencer is a true blue, staunch Presbyterian, but she is not hide-bound nor fanatical. She has been a frequent attendant at churches of other denominations. For years, almost by her individual exertions, she kept burning the fires of religion on the altar of the little Presbyterian Church in Chapel Hill; but she found time always to bring a shining torch of faith and enthusiasm to her brethren elsewhere in the State, by letters, by messages, by trumpet calls through the columns of the *North Carolina Presbyterian*.

Mrs. Spencer was the most omnivorous reader I ever knew. When Dr. Wood's library of several thousand volumes of scientific books was added to the University library, Mrs. Spencer literally "went through it," and got what was in it. She knew almost by heart the great masters in English literature, and read and re-read them again and again. She read plenty of trash, too, but,

like Macaulay, did it quickly, and seemed able to know intuitively the contents of a trashy book. Her mind is most virile and sane. She judges for herself, and she has a judgment that might represent the average judgment, the final judgment, of her generation.

Mrs. Spencer's literary work has been varied and perhaps lacking in permanence, but it accomplished its purpose. She wrote when and where and what was needed in North Carolina; now religious letters to newspapers; now hymns and songs for University festivals; now clarion calls to the people to throw off the political yoke; now songs of triumph at the departure of human vultures from sacred seats of learning; now appeals to the young; now reminiscences of the past with golden lessons of future warning; now spicy sketches of men, women and events, shot with arrows of wit, humor and pleasantry; now volleys of hard horse-sense, overthrowing whole battalions of nonsense and folly in fashion, education, politics and religion.

But lack of space forbids me to dwell on her work in these lines. Nor do I remember her most vividly and most affectionately as a public or a semi-public character. It was as a neighbor and friend, as a housekeeper, a giver of bread to the poor, a visitor of the sick and needy, a lover of the wild woods, a friend of everybody and everything in Chapel Hill and North Carolina, that I knew Mrs. Spencer best and now remember her most vividly. Early each spring we would go out to seek the dog-tooth violets and late each fall to gather the last lingering autumn leaves. She knew every tree, bush, flower, stream and rock within miles of Chapel Hill. She knew them; for she loved them and poured out her soul upon them in song and paintings. Her skill as an artist was very great. Some of her sketches in oil of the native wild flowers around Chapel Hill I now have before me, as fresh and beautiful and as true to nature as the originals. Her own home was full of her beautiful handiwork—paintings on canvas, on paper, on china, on tiles and on plaques; nothing meretricious, no fad nor fashionable frivolity; but everywhere the genuineness, simplicity, sweetness and truthfulness of nature. Love of home was her strongest trait. She loved the very floors and doors and

walls of her habitation. It was the English and Dutch inheritance in her, the basis of the strength and greatness of these two wonderful races.

Mrs. Spencer was married to James M. Spencer of Alabama, a first-honor graduate of the University of North Carolina, and was early left a widow. Her only child, Julia, is the wife of Professor James Lee Love of Gastonia, another first-honor graduate of the University, and for some years instructor in mathematics there, now assistant professor of mathematics in Harvard University and secretary of the Lawrence Scientific School. To the rearing and education of her daughter and grandchildren Mrs. Spencer has devoted the best work of her life. Her chief ambition has always been the making of a home and the building of a family. The family fireside to-day in Cambridge, Massachusetts, is a reproduction of that other fireside of half a century ago in Chapel Hill, which in turn represented the best discipline, traditions and ideals of the English race.

North Carolina owes to herself the honoring of its most healthful, useful and noble type of woman. The State has not yet placed in Statuary Hall at Washington the statues of her two most distinguished children. Other States have placed there typical men. Let North Carolina place there her most eminent typical man, Zebulon B. Vance, and her most eminent typical woman, Cornelia Phillips Spencer, life-long friends and patriots and co-laborers for the redemption of their State from its greatest thralldom and for its everlasting peace, happiness and prosperity.

Mrs. George T. Winston.

his vigorous young mind; and the ennobling conversation of his elders imbued him with lofty aims.

Starting out with these early advantages, young Stedman received a careful scholastic training, first at the hands of the Rev. Daniel McGilvary (afterward the well-known missionary to Siam) and later at the Donaldson Academy at Fayetteville, to which place his parents had removed when he was twelve years of age. Four years later, in 1857, he entered the University of North Carolina, where he took at once a high stand. His brilliant career there in the four succeeding years attracted general attention, and he won the admiration of both students and faculty. He was chosen by the Philanthropic Society, of which he was a member, as one of its orators when the President of the United States (Mr. Buchanan) visited the University in 1859, and he was graduated from this famous institution with the highest honors of his class in 1861. His grade, indeed, was exceptional. He received the first distinction on every study during the entire four years. This was a grade much higher than an average first honor. As President Swain remarked at the time, it was unusual and occurred very rarely.

Shortly before his graduation, war was declared between the North and the South. Immediately upon leaving the University he enlisted as a private in the Fayetteville Independent Light Infantry, and served with that company in the First North Carolina Regiment at the battle of Bethel (June 10, 1861), the first battle and the first Confederate victory of the war. Upon the organization of the Forty-fourth North Carolina Regiment he was elected first lieutenant of the Chatham company (E). Soon after its organization his regiment was sent to Virginia, where he served under Lee, and in most of his campaigns. He was promoted to be captain of his company, and then to be major of his regiment. In this latter position he several times commanded his regiment in battle, and with marked gallantry and skill. He was wounded at the Wilderness, at Spottsylvania Court House and on the Squirrel Level Road in front of Petersburg. In the army, as at school and at college, he exhibited those traits which afterward characterized

his honorable career as a lawyer and as a public man. He never shirked a duty, and, except when absent from wounds, participated in every battle in which his regiment was engaged. He has the distinction of being one of the twelve Confederate soldiers who were engaged in the first battle at Bethel, and who surrendered with Lee at Appomattox. His comrades in arms say there was no braver man than he, not one more patient and enduring. As an officer, he was noted for his care for the wants of his soldiers. "There was," says a comrade, "nothing too good for the men he commanded; he wished no comfort they could not share; he required of them nothing he would not do himself; and their misfortunes sank deep into his sensitive, delicate and sympathetic nature." But these gentle traits were adorned by his habitual dignity and practice of justice, and tempered when occasion demanded by firmness.

With the end of the war, Major Stedman was compelled to begin life anew. He decided to enter the profession of law, and began its study under the late Hon. John Manning at Pittsboro, meanwhile teaching school. Upon the completion of his law course, in 1867, he settled in Wilmington, and entered upon the practice of his profession. Here he built up a large and lucrative business, and held numerous and important positions of trust.

In 1884 he received the nomination of the Democratic Party for Lieutenant-governor, and was elected to that office on the ticket with the late Governor Scales. As soon as he was nominated, he resigned the attorneyships which he held for several railway systems, believing that to be his duty upon entering public life. He made a brilliant record in office, achieving the reputation of having been one of the best presiding officers which the Senate of North Carolina had had in all its great history. No senator ever complained of his ruling; and a distinguished member of Congress from another State, who spent some time in Raleigh while the legislature was in session, declared that he had seen no one preside over a legislative body who was his superior, and but one who was his equal, the late eminent James G. Blaine.

Major Stedman has received many high honors at the hands of the Democratic Party. In 1880 he was a delegate to the National convention which nominated General Hancock for President. In 1888 he was a candidate for the Democratic nomination for governor of North Carolina. He was defeated, but only after a prolonged and memorable contest, by Hon. Daniel G. Fowle. Without doubt, he was the choice of the large majority of the Democrats of the State; but, undisturbed by the action of the convention, he ascended the platform at its close and made a speech accepting its verdict which has been handed down in the traditions of the party as one of the most lofty in sentiment, and one of the most eloquent ever delivered in North Carolina. In the campaign which followed, he left his large law practice and canvassed the entire State in behalf of his successful opponent. In 1904, in response to what seemed to be an almost universal demand, he was again a candidate for the Democratic nomination for governor. A few weeks before the convention assembled, the belief was general that he would receive the nomination. But his well-known views on public questions appeared to excite unusual efforts to defeat him, and for a second time he lost, after one of the most memorable contests in the history of the State. The occasion again brought out his noble qualities in fine relief. He exhibited next day no evidence that anything out of the common had occurred; and he made the following statement in an interview shortly afterward, which should be treasured by North Carolinians and recorded by their historian as an example to all patriots.

"My failure to receive the nomination has not caused me one moment of pain or the slightest distress. The man to whom no greater calamity comes through life than disappointment in securing an office should be accounted fortunate and happy. I value the honor and glory of North Carolina far above my own aspirations or the aspirations of any man, and I believe the success of the democratic party to be inseparably connected with the prosperity and good name of our State. So thinking, when our great party in convention assembled has declared its choice, its action should receive an honest and cheerful acquiescence. I am entirely satisfied and content with the result."

Major Stedman has made many notable addresses which were

characterized by eloquence and power, his address of welcome to the Democratic State Convention in Greensboro in 1902, and his address in Charlotte in 1904, on Lee's birthday, being models of their kind. He has been president of the North Carolina Bar Association, and is a trustee of the University.

A characteristic of Major Stedman's entire life has been his opposition to monopolies "in every shape and form." Twice he was honored by the citizens of Wilmington with public demonstrations in recognition of this fact. Especially noteworthy was the one which took place on May 2, 1881, when he was presented with a silver service which bore this inscription: "Presented to Major Charles M. Stedman by citizens of Wilmington, North Carolina, for his signal and unselfish services in destroying a monopoly. May 2, 1881."

Of his public career a well-known writer has said:

"In public life he recognizes no guide except morality and justice. As an orator he appeals to the noblest sentiments of the human heart. Love of country, fidelity to its constitution and abhorrence of falsehood are inculcated in many of his addresses. He has ever been the friend of the weak and the oppressed, and in their defense has thrown down the gage of battle to the strong and mighty. If called upon to name the cardinal faith of his political creed, I should say opposition to monopoly and the tyranny of money in every form. From his early manhood down to the present day he has ever been one of the ablest, most uncompromising and most unselfish opponents of the money power this State has produced."

Major Stedman is tall, handsome and distinguished looking. His manners are polished and engaging, and his bearing that of a gentleman of the old school. His mind is quick and logical. He is a writer of elegant English; and he possesses the gift of oratory, which he has developed to a high degree. He has a warm, impulsive heart, and probably his leading trait is his disposition to help those who suffer misfortune or who are in distress. Naturally, he is a true friend. He is charitable not only in deeds, but in his judgments of his fellowmen. His moral perceptions are acute and accurate, his moral courage extraordinary and his fortitude in adversity unlimited. His code of morals is a lofty

one, his walk in life is blameless, and he is a Christian without cant or hypocrisy.

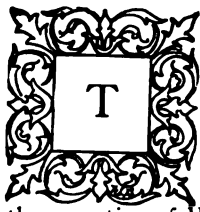
In January, 1866, he was married to Catherine DeRosset, daughter of the late Joshua G. Wright, a distinguished lawyer of Wilmington. She is in every way worthy of her husband, and devoted to his fortunes. Beautiful, accomplished, gentle and refined, she has ever been an unfailing friend to the poor and humble, to all in distress and trouble.

Edward J. Hale.





JAMES TURNER



THOUGH a native of the county of Southampton, in the State of Virginia, James Turner was brought in early childhood to North Carolina, about the year 1770, by his father, Thomas Turner, Esq., who made his home in the colonial county of Bute, which was divided into the counties of Warren and Franklin in 1779.

James Turner was born on the 20th of December, 1766, and hence was no more than a child when the war of the Revolution began; nor had he grown to man's estate when hostilities ceased. Yet youth did not keep him at home, and he fought in the army of General Greene as a private, being in the same company with Nathaniel Macon. "There were no Tories in Bute," says history; and Warren and Franklin fully measured up to the patriotic standard of their mother county. It was not until 1798 that James Turner entered State politics, being in that year sent to represent Warren County in the North Carolina House of Commons. Sessions were then held annually, and he was returned in 1799 and in 1800. At the sessions of 1801 and 1802 he represented Warren County in the State Senate. The General Assembly of 1802, on November 20th, elected Colonel John Baptista Ashe to succeed Benjamin Williams as governor, but the untimely death of Colonel Ashe on November 27th (before he was inaugurated) rendered another election necessary. When the death of the gov-

ernor-elect was formally announced to the Senate on November 29th, it was moved by Mr. Turner "that in honor to the memory of the deceased, and as a token of the respect and consideration for his patriotism and many exalted virtues, the legislature will go in mourning for thirty days," etc. This resolution was duly adopted by the Senate and concurred in by the House. On December 4, 1802, the two Houses having proceeded to ballot again for governor, their choice fell upon James Turner. Being then in Raleigh as State senator, he was at once notified; and signified his acceptance on the 6th, saying: "While I lament the melancholy cause which has made it necessary for the legislature a second time during the present session to elect a person to perform the executive duties of the State, I cannot but with gratitude return them my sincere thanks for the honor they have conferred on me, and to assure them that my utmost endeavors shall be exerted to discharge with propriety and for the interest of our common country the duties attached to the high and important office they have committed to my charge."

On the same day that the above letter was written, Mr. Turner was sworn in as governor, and served by successive re-elections for three years. The governor's term of office was then one year only, while the constitution limited his continuous service to three years. By this constitutional provision, Governor Turner's term expired December 5, 1805, and he then ceased to exercise his functions, though his successor, Governor Nathaniel Alexander, was not inaugurated until some days later. During his term as governor, Mr. Turner was elected United States senator by joint ballot of the General Assembly on November 22, 1805. His term began March 4, 1806, and he served till 1816, when ill health caused him to resign. His resignation was made known to the legislature by Governor William Miller in a special message dated November 21, 1816.

During Mr. Turner's term as United States senator, the second war with Great Britain occurred, and the administration had his firm support in measures for carrying on the war. His colleague, Senator David Stone, was opposed to these measures, and this

action by Stone brought upon him a resolution of severe censure by the General Assembly, which caused him to resign.

Wheeler, in his "History of North Carolina" (II. 439), has this note concerning the marriages of James Turner and his children:

"Governor Turner was thrice married: first to Mary Anderson of Warrenton, in 1793, who died in 1802, leaving him four children—Thomas, Daniel, Rebecca (who married George E. Badger) and Mary; second, to Mrs. Ann Cochran, who died in 1806, leaving no issue; and, thirdly, to Mrs. Elizabeth Johnson, who survived him, and who bore him two daughters—Sally P. (wife of Hon. Mark Alexander of Virginia) and Ann (wife of Henry Coleman, Esq., of Virginia)."

Daniel Turner, son, as above, of Governor Turner, was an officer of the United States Army during the War of 1812-15, afterward member of Congress, etc. He married a daughter of Francis Scott Key, author of "The Star Spangled Banner." After leaving Congress he had charge of the Warrenton Female Academy.

The death of Governor James Turner occurred at Bloomsbury, his country seat in Warren County, on the 15th of January, 1824. In commenting on that event, the *Raleigh Register* of January 20th said:

"His hospitality was unbounded, his integrity unquestioned and his sense of honor inviolate. We speak from the testimony of all who knew his worth and from our own personal knowledge."

Marshall De Lancey Haywood.



attentive to his own affairs, he was prosperous, and at the commencement of the war, in 1861, he had become the largest landowner, with one exception, in the county of Orange. He lived to be upward of ninety years of age, dying about 1870; but his mental faculties failed before his bodily strength abated, and he never fully realized the great changes that the war had produced in the Southern States.

Josiah Turner, Jr., was a student at the Caldwell Institute, then located at Greensboro, and afterward at the University of North Carolina. He studied law under Chief Justice Nash and Judge Bailey, and was admitted to the Bar about 1845. The friends and the influence of his father at once gave him a fine opening in his profession. From his entrance into public life he was a remarkable and unique personality. He had inherited great courage, and had a tenacity of purpose that could never be shaken. He possessed a certain sort of humor, a bold conception and a resolute courage, and while always maintaining self-possession, he loved a conflict and was in his element in scenes of high excitement. He had but little regard for nice observances or for proprieties, but was honest and fearless in the expression of his views, always self-assertive, aggressive and often obstreperous. Not at all gifted as a declaimer, he spoke slowly, coolly and without passion; often most illogically, but always with a view to effect. At that period Orange County, before Alamance was cut off, was Democratic, but Mr. Turner adhered, along with Governor Graham and the other distinguished Whigs of Hillsboro, to that party, and became an ardent opponent of the Democratic Party. At the election in August, 1854, however, the Whigs succeeded in carrying the county, and Governor Graham was elected to the Senate, and Hon. S. F. Phillips and Josiah Turner, Jr., were elected to the House of Commons. At the succeeding election, in 1856, Mr. Turner became a candidate for the State Senate, but was defeated by Mr. Paul C. Cameron, formerly a Whig, but who had then joined the Democratic Party; for on the rise of the American, or Know Nothing, Party the Whig Party had been largely dissipated, the majority going to the new organization,

•

and others allying themselves with the Democratic Party. Governor Graham, Governor Morehead and other Whig leaders in North Carolina refused to worship the new idols, and the old party of Harrison, Clay and Taylor made its last appearance in the National Convention held in Baltimore, and endorsed the nomination previously made by the American Party of Millard Fillmore for President, Governor Graham having served as secretary of the navy in his cabinet, and having been the Whig nominee for Vice-President at the preceding election.

David Reid's proposed constitutional amendment, providing for free suffrage, the removal of the requirement of the ownership of fifty acres of land as a qualification of a voter for a State senator, had passed the legislature of 1854, but was to be again voted upon by the legislature of 1856; and the landowners, who had given Governor Graham a majority of thirty-three over Colonel Cad Jones in 1854, gave Mr. Cameron a majority of sixty-six over Turner in 1856, although Mr. Cameron, along with the Democratic Party, was pledged to make free suffrage a part of the constitution by passing it through the legislature a second time, as was then required.

In 1858 Mr. Cameron and Mr. Turner were again pitted against each other as candidates for the Senate, but now suffrage had been extended, and those who owned no land were in the ascendant, and Turner was in his natural element. The opposition to Governor Ellis, who had been nominated by the Democrats, was led by Duncan K. MacRae, also a Democrat, who ran on the platform of "a division of the proceeds of the sale of the public lands," and as the heterogeneous mass following his leadership was somewhat like those who had fled to the cave of Abdullam-Turner could make his own platform. Mr. Cameron was an able debater, and displayed great powers of eloquence and strong, good sense in discussing the issues of the day, but he was no favorite with the floaters and the unstable, and there was besides a strong undercurrent of apprehension that the Democracy was tending to secession, which worked to his disadvantage and drew support from him. Mr. Turner's campaign was entirely char-

acteristic of him; and perhaps no better illustration of his *ad captandum* style of campaigning can be given than an incident in the discussion at Chapel Hill. He forced from Mr. Cameron an admission that if elected he would vote for Hon. Thomas L. Clingman for United States senator; and then he threw up his hands in holy horror at the idea of the election to the Senate of a murderer who had lured to his destruction in the Black Mountain his old friend and teacher at the University, Dr. Elisha Mitchell, who had recently met his death by a fall in establishing claims disputed by General Clingman concerning the altitude of that mountain.

The result of the election showed the "irony of fate," and Mr. Cameron, through the political effect of free suffrage, was defeated by 160 majority.

During these years Mr. Turner, although never a hard student of the law, nor concerning himself much about the learning of his profession, had built up a considerable practice at the Bar, and was a great power in the county courts; and, indeed, he had gained reputation in several adjoining counties, making a successful defense to an indictment for retailing upon the "main street in Roxboro" by proof that there was no "Main Street," but only a road leading from Hillsboro to South Boston.

In 1860 Mr. Turner and Dr. Pride Jones were candidates for the Senate. The opposition to Democracy was then united under the name of the "Constitutional Union Party," which nominated Hon. John Bell for President on the platform of "the Union, the Constitution and the enforcement of the laws." In State matters, Hon. John Pool had been nominated for governor by the Whigs, the issue being the *ad valorem* platform, taxing everything from "tin cups up to negroes according to their true value," for slaves between twelve and fifty years were subject only to the capitation tax imposed on free males between twenty-one and forty-five years of age.

Although Dr. Jones had much personal popularity, the feeling in Orange County was strongly in favor of the Union, and Mr. Turner was again successful. In the Senate he was a warm ad-

herent of the Union, and violent in his opposition to measures proposed by the Democratic Party. That legislature, however, submitted to the people the question of whether a convention should be held for the purpose of seceding from the Union. In Orange County the feeling was strongly for the Union, and Governor Graham and Captain John Berry were elected as delegates by a majority of 1000, and similarly in other counties conservative candidates were elected by large majorities, although the call for the convention to assemble was defeated by only a few hundred majority in the whole State. But it was defeated, and the convention at that time did not assemble. Two months later, however, Fort Sumter was bombarded, and President Lincoln issued his call for troops to invade the seceded States, apportioning a quota to the State of North Carolina, and this, together with the conduct of the Republicans at the North, who would accept no offer made in the peace conference held in Washington City, left to those in the South who had so long hoped to avert the threatened war between the sections no alternative except alone the choice of the side on which they would fight. The determination of the people of North Carolina to cast their fortunes with the South became instantaneously almost unanimous; and Mr. Turner, like the other former Union men, yielded to the inevitable, and he at once became a member of the Guilford Grays, then serving in Fort Macon. He, however, did not long remain there, but became active in raising a company of cavalry, of which he was elected the captain, being commissioned September 10, 1861, when the company became Company K of the Second Cavalry. At first the battalion of which Company K was a part served at Hertford and at Edenton, and in December the regiment was assembled at New-Bern. On the 14th of March, 1862, it took part in the battle of New-Bern, Companies A, E and K being dismounted and under the command of Colonel Z. B. Vance, of the Twenty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, as we learn from the sketch of Major William A. Graham, who was then first lieutenant of Company K, and who, recounting the affairs in which the company was engaged, states in the Regimental Histories:

“On the 14th of April Lieutenant-Colonel Robinson, with portions of Companies D. E. F, I and K, was at Gillett’s, in Onslow County. The attack was made on horseback against the infantry in house and in a lot surrounded by stake and rider-rail fence, with a deep ditch on the outside. Lieutenant-Colonel Robinson was wounded and captured. He never returned to the regiment. Captain Turner, Company K, was severely wounded and disabled from further service in the field.”

His wounds preventing his return to active duty, Captain Turner resigned on November 8, 1862. Indeed, at the election for members of the Confederate Congress, in 1862, he had been elected a representative in Congress, and in 1864 he was again elected to the same position, and he served in that body all during the war and until the overthrow of the Confederate States. Although Captain Turner had promptly responded to the call of the State for troops in her defense, yet he ever cherished his hostility to the Democratic Party, and was no admirer of President Davis, and was not a zealous supporter of the measures proposed by the administration for the conduct of the war; and he thought with many others that President Davis should have ended the war by accepting the best terms that could have been obtained from the Federal Government before the opening of the campaign in the spring of 1865. After the war was ended, Captain Turner ardently desired an early restoration of the State to the Union; and, moreover, he was animated by a long-treasured animosity toward the Democratic Party. When the convention met in 1865, he made an application for pardon, which he himself described in a public speech at Raleigh as “an indictment of the Democratic Party.” He had not antagonized Governor Holden in his acts as provisional governor, but as an election¹ for governor was ordered by the convention, he used his influence to bring out as a candidate for governor Jonathan Worth, the treasurer of the State, who had been a Union man and was then more conservative in his views than Governor Holden. Governor Holden had been before the war a Democrat, and for many reasons was distasteful to Mr. Turner, who disdained to court his friendship. An election was held in November for members of Congress, and Mr. Turner was elected to represent his district in the United States House

of Representatives at that time, but the Congress denied to the State any right of representation, and he was not admitted to his seat. Governor Worth was elected, and was installed as governor, and in recognition of Mr. Turner's services he appointed him president of the North Carolina Railroad Company, which position he held for two years. The State was reconstructed in 1867 and 1868, and at the election in April, 1868, Mr. Turner was elected State senator from Orange County, but his disabilities had never been removed, and he was not allowed to take his seat as senator, but at the special session of the legislature, in July, 1868, his seat was declared vacant, and a new election ordered to be held in November, at which Major John W. Graham was elected.

In November of 1868 Mr. Turner purchased the *Raleigh Sentinel*, a daily paper which had been established by Mr. Pell, for which he gave notes for the purchase money. Governor Holden was now governor of the State under the election held in April, 1868, and the Republicans were in absolute control of all the departments of the government, and Mr. Turner was bitterly hostile to that party, perhaps mingling personal resentment with political hostility. From the beginning of his editorial career he became a thorn in the side of Governor Holden and his party friends. For this work he was admirably fitted by his characteristics, and his standpoint being one of animosity toward the Secessionists, he was the better able to gather to his support those who had not warmly sympathized with the Confederate cause.

The enfranchisement of the negroes, the outrages of the Republican legislature, the dissipation of every valuable asset belonging to the State, the issue of \$20,000,000 of special tax bonds, many of which found their way to houses of vice in New York, the riot and rapacity that marked that evil period of our history, and the low character of the persons who had risen to political consequence in the turmoil of that eventful and revolutionary era afforded him texts for his daily editorials, which he used without mercy in assailing the State administration. He soon became famous throughout the State for his fierce denunciation of "scallawaggers and carpet-baggers" and for the descriptive names which

he invented and applied to the prominent actors in the carnival of excesses which the Republicans inaugurated. Becoming an object of their inveterate hatred, he became equally recognized as the champion of the white people who composed the Conservative Party, and fearlessly he pursued his course unmoved by constant threats and regardless of personal peril.

At length, in 1870, on account of excesses committed by members of the Ku Klux Klan, as alleged, Governor Holden organized a force of State troops under the command of a Colonel Kirk, who had gained notoriety as a desperado in the Civil War along the borders of this State and Tennessee, and in July he arrested many citizens of Alamance and Caswell, and declared those counties in a state of insurrection, and proclaimed martial law in them, and proposed to try the prisoners by military courts, some officers having been appointed for that purpose. Application had been made to the chief justice for a writ of Habeas Corpus on behalf of some of these prisoners, which Colonel Kirk refused to recognize, and the governor having communicated to Judge Pearson that the prisoners were held under his authority, the chief justice declared that "the judiciary was exhausted;" and the prisoners were kept by Kirk for the governor to do his will with.

All of these proceedings were the subject of fierce denunciation on the part of Editor Turner, who, being advised that Governor Holden would, when ready, arrest him, dared the governor to do it. He was bold and defiant to the last degree. Finally, early in August, a few days before the election, as Mr. Turner was entering a railroad car at Hillsboro to return to Raleigh, a detachment of Kirk's force seized him and hurried him off to the military camp at Yanceyville, where he was confined, along with the Hon. John Kerr and many others of the most reputable citizens of that part of the State. In the meanwhile, the *Sentinel* was continued on the same bold line that it had so long pursued, T. B. Kingsbury, the associate editor, conducting the paper during the incarceration of Mr. Turner. Application had, however, been made to Hon. George W. Brooks, United States district judge, for a writ of Habeas Corpus in behalf of all these prisoners, and

he had issued the writ, directing it to be returned before him at Salisbury. The arrest of Mr. Turner caused wild excitement throughout the State, adding greatly to the furor occasioned by the arrests which had been previously made, and it was with difficulty that the Conservative leaders, Bragg, Graham and Merri-
mon could restrain the people from rising. But Judge Brooks's writ was obeyed, and nothing appearing to justify the arrest and detention of the prisoners, Judge Brooks, at the hearing at Salisbury, promptly discharged them, and Mr. Turner returned to his home at Hillsboro. He was accompanied by Governor Graham, who had been one of his counsel. There a great demonstration awaited him, which was in accord with the spirit that prevailed throughout the State. He was met at the depot by a great concourse of citizens, who placed him and Governor Graham in the carriage of the latter, which the people drew to the town, a distance of nearly a mile, carrying them to the court-house yard, which was illuminated with bonfires; and then a great jollification ensued, many speeches being made, the occasion being one of the most memorable in the annals of the State. And so likewise, on Mr. Turner's arrival at Raleigh, a similar ovation was given him, and he was drawn by the people in an open carriage to the court-house, where a great demonstration was made in his honor.

The election had been held and resulted in the complete defeat of Governor Holden's administration. Mr. Turner was the hero of the day, and the whole State wished to do him honor, recognizing that he had been the most powerful factor in rescuing public affairs from the dominion of the "carpet-baggers and scallawaggers." Mr. Turner had the satisfaction, upon the assembling of the legislature in November, of seeing Governor Holden impeached and turned out of office. The legislature promptly awarded him the contract for public printer, and his paper attained a large circulation. In 1872 he was unanimously tendered the nomination for Congress from the Wake district, which he declined. It has been suggested that his declination was based on an expectation that he might be elected to the United States

Senate. But while in the then condition of public matters, he might have served the people well in the Federal House, it was not expedient to send a man of his characteristics to represent the State in the Senate, and he was not thought of by the people in that connection. Divergencies soon appeared between him and some of the Conservative leaders. The same spirit which had led him to so boldly antagonize the Republican leaders now brought him into conflict with his Conservative associates.

In 1872 the *News* was started also at Raleigh, and the establishment of this paper was a cause of irritation to Mr. Turner, and he became intemperate in his course as a political editor, which resulted in the withdrawal from him of many who fully appreciated the work he had performed, but did not regard that he was a safe and prudent director of a party seeking to administer the affairs of the State. It was a common saying that he "was good to pull down, but not to build up." He gradually lost popular favor. In 1874 he desired the nomination for Congress and asked it, his claims being supported by a solid delegation from Orange County, but the tide had now turned, and Hon. Joseph J. Davis was nominated. The next year, however, Mr. Turner and Governor Graham were chosen as delegates from Orange County to the State convention to amend the constitution, but unfortunately Governor Graham died before the convention met. For Governor Graham, Mr. Turner had the highest personal regard and the warmest admiration, and Governor Graham was the only man in the State whose counsel and advice he cared for; and after Governor Graham's death Mr. Turner lost his balance wheel and became still more erratic in his political course.

In the constitutional convention, Hon. A. W. Tourgee, who had been a judge of the Superior Court from 1868 to 1874, and was the last of the carpet-baggers, was a member from Guilford County. Judge Tourgee was indiscreet enough to compare the "carpet-bagger" in his mission at the South to our Saviour, who went about doing good and caring for the poor. Mr. Turner stated, however, that he proposed to show that the great prototype of the member from Guilford was a very different person

from the one he named, and sent forward and asked the clerk to read: "Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him, 'Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence and given to the poor?' This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein."

At Judge Tourgee's request, the shades had been pulled down, as he was suffering from his eyes; and now, at a preconcerted signal from Turner, every shade went up, that all might see the discomfiture and writhing of his adversary.

During the time of Mr. Turner's great popularity he could easily have procured sufficient funds to pay for the press and good will of the *Sentinel*, which he had bought on time, but he was no financier, and could not be brought to accept any offer for his paper. Opposition had grown up, and he no longer had control of his party. He became estranged from many former friends, some of whom had suffered pecuniary loss by endorsing his notes, and his paper was sold to pay the purchase money still due on it, and he became almost an Ishmaelite as to those who had been associated with him in former years.

In 1876 he became a candidate against Major John W. Graham for the State Senate. A bitter campaign ensued, there being thirty-three joint discussions between them, but Major Graham was elected by over a thousand majority. Two years later, however, Mr. Turner ran again for the House, and succeeded in being elected. Encouraged by this success Mr. Turner the following November became a candidate for Congress against Hon. Joseph J. Davis, announcing himself as an independent, and relying on Republican support, but he failed of election. Taking his seat in the House, his course was very erratic. He manifested a special antipathy to the speaker, Hon. John M. Moring, whom he denominated as a "gander head," and his conduct was so obstreperous that at length the body, worn out by his unruly and unseemly proceedings, was driven to expel him as a member.

In 1884 he became a candidate for Congress against Hon. William R. Cox, but was defeated; and then he retired from public

view until 1894, when he offered to take charge of the Populist Party, but his offer was not accepted by the managers of that organization.

However, by a resolution passed in March, 1895, when the Populist Party was in control of the Assembly, the auditor and secretary of State were authorized to re-examine the account of Mr. Turner as public printer for the year 1871 and 1872 and ascertain if there was an unpaid balance due him according to the written contract with the State. Under this resolution something over \$4000 was paid to him, alleged to be due by difference of measurement between "em quad" and "quad em" under the contract of 1870.

Mr. Turner now ceased to be a factor in politics, and for several years before his death had not registered or voted, though occasionally he would appear at public speakings and discuss issues that had passed away fifteen or twenty years before.

In 1856 Mr. Turner married Miss Sophia Devereux of Raleigh, who died September 25, 1880, leaving four children, of whom three survived him. His son, Thomas D. Turner, who had been successful in business, died in 1898, and by his will devised the income from his estate for the use and benefit of his father. This afforded him a competency in his declining years. His death occurred on the 26th of October, 1901, at the age of nearly four-score years, and his body is interred in St. Matthew's Churchyard at Hillsboro.

Mr. Turner rendered the State and the people of North Carolina great service. He had many excellent qualities and many virtues, and it should be remembered that extreme men, smarting under disappointment, are apt to be erratic in their political course.

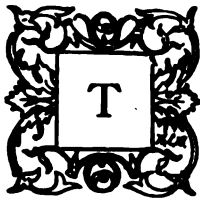
In the memorial adopted by the bar in May, 1902, it was said of him: "In his capacity as editor of the *Sentinel* he was a man of the times and for the times, doing his work boldly, strenuously and successfully, and thus at the most trying period of its existence he made a great figure in the history of the State."

S. A. Ashe.



JOHN WILLIAMS

"Above all things, integrity is the portion of judges and their proper virtue."—*Lord Bacon.*



THE first settlers of Orange County came from Northern colonies. Many of them were Scotch-Irish or Quakers from Pennsylvania. They obtained grants for small bodies of land, and seldom owned slaves. In 1755 there were only about fifty slaves in Orange. It was otherwise in Granville. That county was filled up by an overflow from Virginia. The settlers brought many slaves with them, and large tracts of land were taken up. In 1755 about one-third of the population was slave.

Among these early settlers were the Mitchells, the Bullocks, the Satterwhites, the Hendersons, the Williamses, the HARRISES, the Hickses and the Taylors.

In the spring of 1756 Rev. Hugh McAden visited the Nut Bush section, and thus records his impressions: "I found them a cheerful people, without the regular preaching of the Gospel, and in a situation that might be expected, with abundance of wealth and full leisure for enjoyment." Governor Martin in 1772 passed through Granville and Bute on his way from Hillsboro to New-Bern, and writes thus of these counties: "They have a great pre-eminence, as well with respect to the soil and its cultivation as to the manners and condition of the inhabitants, in which last

respect the difference is so great that one would be led to think them people of another region."

John Williams, the father of the subject of this sketch, came from Hanover County, Virginia, to Granville, then Edgecombe, about 1745, probably with his brother-in-law, Samuel Henderson, and located on Nut Bush. He seems to have been a large land-owner, for during the year 1753 he conveyed to others 1727 acres.

John, oldest son of John and Mary Williams, was born in Hanover County, Virginia, about 1732. He appears to have attained his majority in April, 1753. It is not probable that he was in his young manhood a carpenter. Of course, boys and young men, sons of new settlers, were forced by their circumstances to become Jacks of all trades. When there were a number of sons, they apportioned the work among themselves according to the special aptitude of each. The tradition is that John Williams, while engaged in making boards for his father, threw down his rip-saw and declared that he would do no more of that kind of work, but would become a lawyer.

It is certain that his education was limited, as was that of nearly all of his neighbors. His cousin, Richard Henderson, studied law under him, and the earliest court record now to be found at Oxford, the trial docket of the County Court for the May term, 1763, shows that both were doing a large practice at that time. This indicates that John Williams had been a practicing lawyer for a number of years. On November 12, 1759, he married Agnes Keeling, widow, daughter of William Bullock and sister of Leonard Hendly Bullock. Mrs. Williams, then, was of one of the most prominent families of Granville.

The records of the courts in which he practiced show that John Williams did a large business until his elevation to the bench. That, as a general rule, is the best test of the capabilities of a lawyer. This practice was not confined to the County Courts. He figures largely upon the dockets of the Superior Court. He is said to have been a man of undaunted courage, unquestioned integrity, sound judgment and excellent common sense. Nor was this all; he had unusual personal attractiveness. Judge Iredell

thought him one of the most agreeable men in the world, and throughout his whole section he was noted for his hospitality and benevolence. His acquaintance with general as well as legal literature continued throughout his life to be limited both by his tastes and his opportunities. In his legal career, however, he held his own in competition with the able lawyers who then traveled from court to court—men such as Hooper, Burke, Nash, Kinchen and others.

His first appearance in public life was as deputy attorney-general for the district of Hillsboro in 1768. As such, he, on May 1 of that year, signed the order under which Herman Husbands and William Butler were to have been removed from the Hillsboro to the New-Bern or Wilmington jail. This act involved personal consequences that could not have been foreseen at the time.

The Regulators always constituted themselves a special providence to watch over and protect their idol, Herman Husbands. No man ever injured him without incurring their vengeance, and to this rule John Williams was not an exception.

In 1770 the court-house at Hillsboro was located very near the northern line of the present court square, about midway of that line. The square itself occupied the southeast corner, made by the intersection of King and Churton streets. In the southwest corner was the store of Johnston & Thackston; in the northeast corner was Ralph MacNair, while to the east of the court square was John Dowell. Immediately over the intersection of these streets was the market-house. Diagonally across King Street from the court-house, and in a northeasterly direction, was a tavern, set back thirty yards from the street. The court-house was a plain, barn-like structure of one story, and placed on pillars a little high from the ground. It was approached by a flight of steps to a narrow platform in front of the door, which opened to the north. The judge's bench was at the south end of the house, and its windows were simple openings in the unceiled walls, protected by plank shutters.

The Superior Court for the district opened on Saturday, September 22d, Judge Richard Henderson alone on the bench, and

then adjourned until Monday. Sunday the Regulators came from far and near, and, pursuing their usual tactics, went into camp about a mile from the town. Early the next morning, Monday, the 24th, they came in great numbers, and went up and down the streets hallooing and shouting and making a great tumult. Judge Henderson opened court at 11 o'clock. "Immediately the house was filled as close as one could stand by another, some with clubs, others with whips or switches, and few or none without some weapon." Jeremiah Fields, as spokesman for the crowd, came forward and told the judge that he had something to say before the business should proceed. On the judge telling him to speak on, he said that they had come to see that their cases were tried and that they had justice; that the court had not dealt justly with them at the preceding term; that the jury drawn by the County Court were not impartial, and they must have others to try their cases. In a half hour Judge Henderson succeeded in pacifying them, and they retired and stood outside in groups, as if consulting among themselves. It was then that John Williams came up.

He had probably left home the day before, had spent the night on the way, had just arrived and now, having left his horse at the tavern, was, unsuspecting of danger, on his way to the court-house. He was drawing near that when he was set upon and beaten with clubs and sticks. He saved his life only by fleeing and taking refuge in a neighboring store. This was but the first step in the grotesque orgy. So, throwing consequences to the winds, the Regulators proceeded to administer this "wild justice" to all the officers and officials whom they could catch. They did catch Thomas Hart, Alexander Martin, Michael Holt, John Luttrell and others, and whipped them severely; while John Gray, Thomas Lloyd, Francis Nash, John Cooke, Tyree Harris and others saved themselves from the same fate by flight.

Edmund Fanning sought safety on the bench with the judge, but that day there was no divinity that hedged him about. They seized Fanning, and, dragging him from thence down the full length of the court-house, they beat him as they dragged him, his life being saved by the entanglements that ensued from the

desire of each man to strike his haughty and hated but now helpless foe. Bruised and bleeding, with one eye near knocked out, he, at the front door, broke loose from them and took refuge in the store of Johnston & Thackston.

Meantime the thoughts of Judge Henderson were much engaged upon his own protection. "But," writes he, "it was not long before James Hunter and some other of their chieftains came and told me not to be uneasy, for that no one should hurt me, on proviso I would set and hold court to the end of the term. I took advantage of this proposal, and made no scruple at promising what was not in my intention to perform; for the terms they would admit me to hold court on were that no lawyer, the King's attorney (Henry Pendleton) excepted, should be admitted into court, and that they would stay and see justice impartially done. In about four or five hours their rage seemed to subside a little and they permitted me to adjourn court, and conducted me with great parade to my lodgings [the tavern above mentioned]. Colonel Fanning, whom they had made a prisoner of, was, in the evening, permitted to return to his house on his word of honor to surrender himself next day. At about 10 o'clock that evening I took an opportunity of making my escape by a back way, and left poor Colonel Fanning and the little borough in a wretched situation." The next morning Fanning appeared before them, according to promise. Though many of them wished to put him to death, better counsels prevailed, and they spared his life upon condition that he run until out of their sight. With their arch enemy thus disposed of, they spent the remainder of the day in drunken revelry. After wrecking his house and destroying his property, the whole body of them adjourned to the court-house, and, electing their own judge, sheriff and clerk (the latter Robinson York, a doctor of physic), they proceeded to adjudicate the cases on the docket according to their own ideas of justice, and made thereon the ribald and profane entries which remain unto this day.

The terrified merchants and others of the inhabitants had fled in the midst of the turmoil, leaving their property to the tender

mercies of the mob. They contented themselves, however, with stoning the houses and breaking the windows. They left the town on Wednesday, and seem to have taken with them no spoils except £200 of Fanning's. This theft they afterward bitterly denied.

John Williams was one of the Proprietors of Transylvania. He was present when the formal treaty with the Cherokees was made at the Sycamore Shoals of the Watauga, March 17, 1775. He, however, went no farther than John Sevier's, but, with Thomas Hart, commenced his journey home on the 22d.

He was one of the delegates from Granville in the Provincial Congress that met in Hillsboro August 21, 1775. He seems not to have taken a prominent part in the proceedings. September 25, 1775, he was agent of the Transylvania Company to reside in the colony until April 12, 1776. He arrived at Boonesboro in December, 1775, and returned home in September, 1776. While in the colony he wrote a letter to the Proprietors, which, while demonstrating his undoubted business capacity, shows also that he was a man of much more culture than the world now gives him credit for having been.

He was a member of the House of Commons in 1777 and in 1778. At the first session of the General Assembly of 1778 he was unanimously elected speaker of the House of Commons. Two weeks later, April 28th, he was elected a delegate to the Continental Congress. This position seemed uncongenial to him, so February 1, 1779, he resigned it, and on May 9th was elected a judge of the Superior Court, *vice* A. Maclaine, declined. He occupied this position more than twenty years, and until his death, in October, 1799.

His reputation as a judge has suffered on account of the relentless antagonism of a few of the cleverest lawyers of his day; this antagonism, however, being directed also against the other members of the court, Judges Ashe and Spencer. John Hay of Fayetteville and Archibald Maclaine of Wilmington were the leaders in this attack. They resorted first to anonymous pamphlets and newspaper articles, trying to create an overwhelming public sentiment

against the judges. Failing there, formal charges were presented to the legislature. These charges were considered in a joint meeting of the two Houses of the Assembly in January, 1787. The General Assembly not only exonerated the judges from all blame by a two-thirds vote, but thanked them for their long and faithful services. Judges Spencer and Williams, at their own request, were allowed to make an oral defense before the joint meeting of the two Houses. As one of the general charges against them was their undignified bickering on the bench, this common defense indicated a purpose to live together in amity thereafter.

There can be no doubt that the dilatoriness of the courts was due in a great degree to the failure of the judges to attend promptly and work faithfully after the court had opened. Five or six hours a day is not a good day's work, and these hours were sometimes spent in unseemly wrangling between the bench and some of the bar. We may admit this without in any sense justifying a prosecution that "was conceived in spleen and conducted with such headstrong passion that after the charges were made evidence was wanting to uphold them."

Unjust and splenetic as it was, the effect of this prosecution on the judges was good. Thereafter they were more prompt in their attendance and more faithful in their labors.

The court as then constituted was certainly able, but not learned, and Judge Williams was not so good a lawyer as either of his associates. His fundamental defect was the lack of a legal mind—that sense of logical proportion without which no man can be a first-rate lawyer. Some men with good memories, by faithful study, do, to some extent, obviate this defect. Judge Williams was not a student, not in any sense a bookman; but he was better than this—a man of sound judgment, unquestioned integrity and unclouded honor.

In April, 1799, while, with Judges Taylor and McCoy, presiding over the District Court at Hillsboro, he became ill. He was carried to his home in Granville County, where he, in much suffering, lingered until the last of October. Then he died.

He left a large estate, several well-tended farms and many

slaves. His home, Montpelier, beautifully situated one mile southwest of the little village named for him, Williamsboro, was always the abiding place of a delightful hospitality and an overflowing benevolence. It may be truly said of him that his neighbors bore the strongest testimony to his kindness of heart and to his integrity—those who knew him best, loved best.

His wife, surviving him something over three years, died in the spring of 1803. In his will, as he devised and bequeathed to her the bulk of his estate, he made to her the tenderest acknowledgment of what she had been to him.

By her he had only one child, Agatha, who, on October 12, 1775, married Colonel Robert Burton and by him had a numerous progeny. Colonel Burton was born in Mecklenburg County, Virginia, October 20, 1747; was an officer in the war of the Revolution, a member of the Continental Congress, 1787-88, a commissioner to run the dividing line between North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia in 1801, and died May 31, 1825, leaving nine children surviving him.

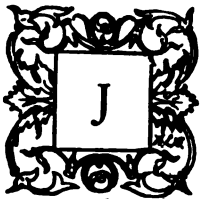
Authorities: Records in Hillsboro and Oxford; 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, 19 Colonial Records; McRee's "Life of Iredell."

Frank Nash.





JONATHAN WORTH



JONATHAN WORTH, son of David and Eunice Worth, was born in Guilford County, North Carolina, November 18, 1802. He received a fair English education at the neighboring old-field schools, being much indebted to William Reynolds, the benefactor of his neighborhood as a teacher, for correct instruction in English grammar and arithmetic. At the age of eighteen years he was sent to the academy at Greensboro for two and a half years, and distinguished himself for diligence and proficiency in his studies. His father being unable to continue him longer at school, he took a school near the residence of Judge Murphey, in Orange County, and commenced the reading of law under the direction of this talented and eminent lawyer. On October 20, 1824, he married Martitia Daniel, a niece of Judge Murphey, and in December following obtained a license to practice law; and afterward settled at Asheboro, North Carolina.

Owing to extreme diffidence and the total absence of anything like oratorical flourish, others, not more learned, took the lead of him in practice. Notwithstanding his great need of professional gains, his painful diffidence made him almost prefer to lose a fee rather than make a speech. After lingering at the Bar for years with few clients, he determined, in 1830, as a means of overcoming his repugnance to public speaking, to become a candidate for the

Portrait—see frontispiece.

legislature, hoping the canvass might give him more assurance. He was elected ahead of all his competitors, and the next year was again a candidate and was re-elected. At this last session he offered resolutions denouncing nullification, which, after a stormy debate, passed the House by a large majority.

In the beginning of 1831 he resolved to quit politics and devote himself to his profession. He soon went into a lucrative practice and paid off all his debts, and steadily accumulated property till the year 1840, when he was almost forced again to become a candidate for a seat in the Senate of the State legislature on the Harrison ticket. He was elected by an enormous majority.

At the session of 1840 the leading legislative measure was the putting in operation of a system of common schools. He was made chairman of the joint committee on education, and as such drew up and reported a bill which passed both houses, all the prominent features of which remained unchanged, until the system of common schools was broken up by the late war.

He was always an ardent admirer of Henry Clay. In 1841 he opposed the Hon. A. Rencher for Congress, and was beaten. Both claimed to be supporters of Mr. Clay. Worth charged that certain acts of his opponent indicated a meditated defection from the support of Clay. He failed to convince the district, which was almost unanimous for Clay, that his suspicions as to the defection of his opponent were well founded.

He now applied himself diligently to the practice of his profession. In 1845 a convention of delegates from the counties composing his congressional district nominated him for Congress. He accepted the nomination, entered the field, and was beaten by his competitor, General Alfred Dockery.

In the above words Governor Worth described a part of his life when asked to do so by his friend, John H. Wheeler. He never finished it. The fragment is interesting as his own words, but is inadequate as a description of well-rounded life as full of success and honor as that of the subject of this sketch.

The Worths came to North Carolina from Nantucket, and were nearly all Quakers. The family was characterized by the qualities

of industry, thrift, devotion to principle, and the fear of God. Consequently, they were successful, not only in a material way, but also in obtaining the confidence, respect and admiration of all those with whom they came in contact. They were men of firm mold, were given to forming their own opinions, and then living up to them. Like all strong men, they had enemies, but none who could say anything to their discredit. It was of this stock that Jonathan Worth sprang, and of which he was the most distinguished representative.

His father, Dr. David Worth, was a physician of reputation in his section. His mother was Eunice Gardner of Guilford County. He was the eldest of twelve children, nine of whom lived to old age. His ancestry dates back to the early settlement of North America, three of his progenitors, John Carver, John Tilley and John Howland, having signed the "Mayflower" compact, while another ancestor, Christopher Hussey, came with Winthrop's company in 1630.

As a student at Caldwell Institute in Greensboro, at that time one of the best schools in the State, he became a proficient Latin student, and read the language with ease all his life. As has been seen, he continued his studies under Judge Murphey, who then lived at "The Hermitage" and conducted a small private law school. Association with this scholarly man was of great benefit to him, and as a teacher he received that training which has always been thought of the greatest advantage to a student of law. While here he laid the foundations of an accurate and clear knowledge of the law. And here also he met his future wife, the niece and ward of Judge Murphey.

Passing over his first experience at the bar, it is seen that his candidacy for the House of Commons had given him the needed confidence in his own powers, and had also taught the people that he was a man of character and attainment beyond the ordinary. He never became an eloquent speaker, if oratory be the test, but he was clear and direct, and spoke with a good deal of force, and consequently was convincing. Besides the part he played in the anti-nullification debate, he was unusually prominent

for a member at his first session. With nine others he voted against a series of resolutions endorsing President Jackson's administration. This excited a great deal of feeling, and they were abused almost as traitors.

With success in his profession came a great increase in influence, at first in Randolph County, but gradually extending over the State. (Never what might be called a profound or brilliant lawyer, he was exact, painstaking and unusually practical.) A more methodical person it would be hard to imagine. Every detail of a matter intrusted to him received the closest personal attention. His office practice became very large, and he had a large number of clients outside the State. And as a lawyer he was very successful. In addition to the practice of his profession, he was interested in many business enterprises. He was prominent in the movement to open a railroad to the Chatham coal-fields, and was a large shareholder in a plank road from Fayetteville to Salem. He also engaged in industrial enterprises and had a large turpentine tract in Moore County. His plantations were well managed, and his slaves devotedly attached to him. Their welfare was always in his mind, and though a firm master, he was a very kind and considerate one.

His ability was so well recognized that his friends and relations constantly sought his advice, and, an unusual thing, followed it. Apart from business, his correspondence was immense.

In his family he appeared at his best. He was a devoted husband, and no father could have been more tender to his children or more watchful of their best interests.

His mother was a Quaker, but he never became a member of any religious denomination. His wife was a Presbyterian, and her children were reared in the same faith.

In appearance, he was a small, slight man, with keen eyes and an alert expression. The *Charleston Chronicle*, in 1867, described him as "a quiet little old gentleman sharp as a briar, and with a well of wisdom at the root of every gray hair." Quiet he was, but with decided opinions, which he did not hesitate to express, often with temper. He was just, and yet this same temper

occasionally caused him to be a little harsh in his judgment of his political opponents. A devoted Whig, the Democracy signified to him all that was dangerous in government. He believed its doctrines subversive of the Constitution and of all good government. And for the most of his life he fought it with all his power.

His life bears the strongest testimony to what can be accomplished by ambition, perseverance and devotion to principle. This last was the keynote of his life, public and private. And this fact was generally recognized in North Carolina. He was no genius. Simply a fine type of an able and honest gentleman, who thought "a good name rather to be chosen than great riches," and who used the talents given him to their fullest extent. After all, this is the finest kind of genius for a public man.

But it is not from his private nor yet his professional life that he deserves grateful remembrance from the State, fine as they were and deserving of record. It is as a public officer. As has been noted, he was enthusiastic in politics. He soon became influential in the councils of the Whig Party, and took an active part in all campaigns. His early legislative service has been noticed. One other fact deserves further remark. As chairman of the committee on education, against bitter opposition, he secured the adoption of the Federal population as the basis for the public schools. This greatly increased the number and efficiency of the schools. He was an earnest advocate of public education, having ideas on the subject far in advance of most of the public men of the time in North Carolina. Possibly this was in part due to the influence of Judge Murphey. At the same session he was elected a trustee of the University. This position he held for twenty-eight years.

For many years he was clerk and master in equity for Randolph County, resigning in 1858 to accept a nomination to the State Senate.

He was elected, and as a member did what he considered the most important public act of his life. During the years of Democratic rule the North Carolina railroad had been entirely under

the control of that party, and there was considerable dissatisfaction in the State at its management. Mr. Worth now moved that a committee be appointed to investigate its affairs. This was done, and he was made chairman. The investigation caused intense excitement and much ill-feeling. Mr. Charles F. Fisher, the president of the road, formerly a close friend and ardent admirer of Mr. Worth, wished to challenge him, but was prevented by the advice of his friends, who knew that Mr. Worth was opposed to dueling, and would not be moved in his convictions by public sentiment. The investigation, if it accomplished nothing else, had the effect of causing a more careful management of the corporate interests of the State.

Mr. Worth was intensely devoted to the Union, and saw with alarm the progress of disunion sentiment in the State and in the South. But he, like those of similar opinions, was powerless to avert the impending crisis and the consequent struggle. In 1860 he was again a candidate for the Senate, and at the same time supported Bell and Everett. Elected, when the General Assembly met he was one of the most determined opponents of the secession majority. Deeply he regretted his membership, but thought it would be wrong to resign in the midst of the crisis. So he remained in his place fighting for a vain hope. He opposed a convention, and canvassed Randolph against it, and was sustained by a large anti-convention majority. When the extra session was held, in May, 1861, after the fall of Sumter, he still voted against a convention, and when it was called, declined to be a candidate in spite of the wishes of his friends. But reflection convinced him that war must come, and there was no doubt in his mind of the side he preferred and would choose. Accordingly he at once began to urge the men of Randolph to volunteer and assist the South in presenting an unbroken front to the enemy. Indeed, he thought this was the only way that a long war could be avoided.

Never in favor of the war, or, in fact, of any war, he always hated it and longed for peace. Opposed to the Confederate administration, he was a loyal citizen and acted as such throughout the entire war, declining to take any part in the peace movement

in 1863 and again in 1864. In 1862 he was again sent to the Senate, but soon afterward was elected by acclamation public treasurer by the Legislature, and resigned from the Senate to accept. In the latter position he served with ability and fidelity until the close of the war, and in spite of the difficulties of the position, won golden opinions for his skill and the judicious management of his office. It is hard to understand fully now the difficulty of the great problems which faced him, increased tenfold by the financial legislation of the war period, which was not based on scientific principles. And yet the legislators cannot be blamed for this, for they were unskilled and wanting in experience, and it would have been a difficult matter, even with experience, to make "bricks without straw" as they were compelled to do. Issues of treasury notes were followed by issues of bonds to the amount of millions of dollars of each. Many of the acts left it in the discretion of the treasurer when to make the issues, and even if they should be made at all. Nothing illustrates more clearly the implicit confidence reposed in him. To show the magnitude of the financial operations of the State in war, and of which Mr. Worth had almost the entire charge, it may be well to mention that during the period of the war a total of \$20,400,000 in treasury notes was authorized, and of this \$8,507,847.50 was issued; \$3,261,511.25 was withdrawn later, leaving in circulation at the close of the war \$5,246,326.25. Bonds were issued to the amount of \$13,121,500. By his skill and care Mr. Worth succeeded in redeeming a large amount of bonds, materially reducing thereby the State debt. As might have been expected, he devoted all his care and thought to the duties of the office, and with a salary that did not come near the amount of his expenses, he labored until the downfall of the State government. Just before Raleigh was occupied by the enemy, on April 13, 1865, he was placed by Governor Vance in charge of the State archives, which he carried westward, first to Company Shops and later to Greensboro. After General Schofield took command of the Department of North Carolina, he brought them back to Raleigh.

Soon after W. W. Holden was appointed provisional governor

of the State he requested Mr. Worth to become provisional treasurer of the State. This also carried with it the duties of a financial agent, who should collect the scattered property belonging to the State. The ordinary duties of treasurer were, to a large extent, stopped by the lack of funds, but there was a considerable amount of property to be collected. While the War Department of the United States paid some of the expenses of the provisional government, it made no provision for the payment of the expenses of the convention which was soon to meet, and it seemed that in spite of the impoverished condition of the people, a tax would have to be levied for the purpose. Mr. Worth and Governor Holden realized that this would not do, and resolved that enough of the State property should be recovered to prevent the necessity. Much of the property had already been lost, having been seized by the agents of the United States Treasury or stolen by individuals. Contrary to the advice of Governor Holden, who feared the result of interference, Mr. Worth resolved to save for the State some property by appealing to Washington after the treasury agents had refused to surrender what had been collected. Accordingly he saw Secretary Seward and Secretary McCullough, and the latter authorized him to collect for the State all the "ungathered debris," and, at the same time, ordered his agents not to be too "inquisitorial" in their search. A large amount of rosin and cotton was collected, some of the latter being found in South Carolina and Georgia. From the sale of this the sum of \$150,000 was realized. After the expenses of the convention and other incidental expenses were paid, there still remained a balance of about \$40,000.

To understand clearly the condition of affairs in the State, some knowledge of the policy of the United States Government toward the seceded States is necessary. Before the death of Mr. Lincoln he had formulated a plan of reconstruction, based upon the indestructibility of the States, and prepared, the day of his assassination, the proclamation for North Carolina. Upon his death, President Johnson followed the plan with a few minor changes in the amnesty proclamation. By the terms of the original proc-

lamation of amnesty, amnesty was granted to those who had taken part against the United States, who would take the oath of allegiance to the United States. This restored rights of property, except in slaves and except where legal proceedings for confiscation had been instituted. Fourteen classes of persons were excepted from the benefits of this proclamation. These included the executive and diplomatic officers of the Confederacy, those who left the service of the United States to aid the Confederacy, the governors of the seceded States, all military and naval officers in the Confederate service whose rank was above that of colonel and lieutenant, respectively, and all who voluntarily took part in aid of the Confederacy whose property exceeded in taxable value \$20,000. The last two classes were added to the original ones by President Johnson as a punishment of the classes he believed were responsible for the war. Any person belonging to an excepted class could make application to the President for a special pardon, and a promise of liberal executive clemency was extended.

The amnesty proclamation was followed by another proclamation providing for the restoration of North Carolina, and appointing William W. Holden provisional governor. This proclamation and appointment were based upon the war power of the President as commander-in-chief of the army and navy of the United States. It gave the provisional governor so appointed power to prescribe the necessary rules for the calling and assembling of a convention whose delegates should be chosen by the portion of the population that was loyal to the United States. The convention was given authority to exercise all powers necessary to restore the State to her constitutional relations with the Federal government, and to present such a republican form of government as would entitle the State to the guarantee of the United States against invasion, insurrection and domestic violence. It was also directed to prescribe the qualifications for electors and for holders of office. The proclamation itself prescribed as qualifications for electors and delegates to the convention that they should have taken the amnesty oath as provided in the President's proclamation, and that

they should be voters qualified by the State constitution in force previous to May 20, 1861. Persons belonging to the excepted classes who were unpardoned could not vote or hold a seat in the convention.

Under this proclamation Governor Holden had called a convention and provided for the election to be held in September. The convention met in October, and remained in session three weeks. During this time ordinances were passed declaring the secession ordinance of May 20, 1861, null and void from the beginning, abolishing slavery, and repudiating the war debt of the State. The latter matter would not have been acted on at this session except for a telegram from the President demanding repudiation. This was sent in response to one from Governor Holden stating that the convention was involved in a bitter discussion of the subject. This was a misstatement of fact, utterly without foundation, and was, in part, a cause of the defeat of Governor Holden a month later. The convention provided for the election of a full set of State and county officers and of members of Congress.

Before the adjournment of the convention, fifty-three of the delegates joined in a call to Governor Holden to become a candidate for governor at the approaching election. The convention was thoroughly anxious for a restoration of the Union, but the majority had no confidence in Mr. Holden and refused to join in the call. He accepted the nomination thus offered and became a candidate.

The administration of Governor Holden not meeting with approval generally, both on account of his extreme unpopularity and because of his conduct of the office, which was, in some instances, at least, very partizan, many influential men looked about for a candidate to oppose him. Largely through the influence of Josiah Turner and ex-Governor William A. Graham, both of whom had been instrumental in securing his election as treasurer in 1862, Mr. Worth was decided upon as the most suitable person to run. In every way he was a fit choice. From his record he should have been more acceptable to the North than his opponent, and in the

State, as the result showed, the people greatly preferred him. Mr. Worth was very doubtful of the wisdom of accepting the nomination. Many of his friends were opposed to his becoming a candidate, believing that he could not be elected, and thinking it bad policy to oppose Mr. Holden. Others were under such obligations to the latter that they could not oppose him. But careful consideration of the matter convinced him that it would be wise to accept, and he accordingly did so, resigning, at the same time, the office of provisional treasurer.

When the campaign opened, the *Standard* began the most bitter attacks upon Mr. Worth, accusing him of being the tool of the "Secession Party" and an original Secessionist himself. The fact that he was opposed to the repudiation of the war debt at the first session of the convention was an additional ground of attack. Every possible means to excite prejudice against him was employed, but without success, and he was elected with a majority of about 6000 votes. The election was held on November 9th, but the provisional government did not terminate at once. Finally, the last week in December, despite the efforts of Mr. Holden to induce the President to continue it, it ceased, and Governor Worth, who had already taken the oath of office, before the adjournment of the General Assembly, assumed the duties of governor. The President was at first greatly disappointed at the result of the election, accepting the judgment of Mr. Holden and the *Standard* that it was a "Confederate" victory as the correct one. But later he learned the real condition of affairs and recognized that Governor Worth was truly desirous of a restoration of the Union along the lines laid down in the North Carolina proclamation of May 29th.

In the meantime, the General Assembly had met and ratified the thirteenth amendment, prohibiting slavery in the United States. The body was, like the convention, composed largely of former Whigs. A majority were adherents of Governor Worth. William A. Graham and John Pool were elected to the United States Senate, the former having never received his pardon. Most of the session was spent in filling the offices within the appointment

of the legislature. The same anxiety which had been shown by the convention for a speedy restoration of the Union was evinced by the legislature. In both bodies the membership was, for the most part, composed of those who had never favored secession until there was no hope of preserving the Union without making war on the other Southern States, but who had then favored a vigorous prosecution of the war waged in self-defense.

The position in which Governor Worth now found himself was one full of difficulty, and requiring the greatest tact and care. Unfriendly factions had to be reconciled, the political moves of a faction bitterly hostile to him and to every one opposed to them had to be watched, a suspicious administration in Washington reassured and the hostile North kept satisfied. All of these but the last he accomplished. That, however, was beyond the power of a Southern man to perform, if mindful of the people he represented. And Governor Worth now was representative of the mass of the people. This fact, too, they recognized. In 1866 no one would accept a nomination against him, and although Alfred Dockery, at the advice of Mr. Holden, was voted for by the faction, soon to become the Republican Party, Governor Worth was re-elected by a very large majority.

In this election the proposed fourteenth, or Howard, amendment was one of the issues. This was, in a sense, the basis of the reconstruction policy of Congress. In brief, it was as follows: The first section defined as citizens of the United States all persons born or naturalized therein. The States were forbidden to make or enforce any law abridging the privileges or immunities of such citizens. The second section provided for the apportionment of representation among the several States according to the population, and provided further, that when the right to vote was denied to any male inhabitants of the proper age, except for participation in rebellion, or other crime, the basis of representation should be reduced in the proportion that the number of those disfranchised should bear to the whole number of male citizens. The third section provided that no person should be a senator or representative in Congress or hold any civil or military office under

the United States or any State who, having taken the oath to support the Constitution of the United States, as an officer or legislator, had afterward engaged in rebellion against the United States or given aid and comfort to the enemies thereof. It was also provided that Congress might, by a vote of two-thirds in each House, remove such disability. The fourth section affirmed the validity of the public debt of the United States, and forbade the assumption of the war debts of the Southern States. It also declared all claims against the United States for the loss or emancipation of slaves null and void. The fifth gave congress the power to enforce the provisions of the article by appropriate legislation. Governor Worth was opposed to the ratification of this amendment, and in his message of 1866 advised its rejection. The State was also opposed, and the legislature rejected it by large majorities in both Houses. The chief objection was to the third section, putting under a ban nearly every man of even neighborhood prominence in the South.

In the summer of 1866 the convention met again and recast the State constitution. The work of rewriting it was largely in the hands of B. F. Moore, one of the most learned lawyers in the State. The new constitution included most of the old, with some changes. The various amendments adopted from time to time since 1835 were incorporated in the main body of the instrument, and a compact and excellent constitution was the result. But there was much dissatisfaction in the State at the convention touching the fundamental law of the State, on the ground that the convention was the creature of the President of the United States, called for a particular purpose, which had been accomplished at its first session. Former Chief Justice Ruffin and former Justice Manly were the foremost in opposition to its ratification by the people, and, largely through their efforts, it was defeated. Governor Worth was in favor of its ratification because of the superiority of the instrument, and because he thought that the argument against the authority of the convention supported the Congressional theory of the status of the governments of the lately seceded States.

Lack of space will not permit an extended account of his multitudinous duties as governor. One of the matters over which he earnestly labored was to defend the civil authority against the encroachments of the military power. He also may be given credit in large part for the securing of the admission of negro testimony, in spite of the opposition of those who were soon after to favor unqualified negro suffrage, and who formed the nucleus of the Republican Party in the State. Everything that he could do in honor to secure the restoration of North Carolina to her normal relations to the Union was done. And meanwhile certain politicians, whose only consistency had been in the frequency of their change of opinion when self-interest dictated it, slandered him and covered him with abuse. But he was not the man to be influenced by such attacks, and pursued his own course regardless of their opposition.

When the reconstruction acts were passed, he at first favored an attempt to bring them before the Supreme Court of the United States for a decision as to their constitutionality. But acting on the advice of Judge Thomas Ruffin, he consulted former Justice Curtis, at that time a practicing lawyer in Massachusetts, who agreed with Judge Ruffin that any effort of the kind would be futile. Consequently, Governor Worth declined to join with several other Southern governors who were preparing to make the attempt. In addition to the doubt of any good result from the attempt, Governor Worth felt that he was not authorized to take any action without the consent of the General Assembly, and he did not feel justified in calling an extra session.

Briefly, the reconstruction acts were to this effect. The preamble of the first act, that of March 2, 1867, declared that no legal State governments or adequate protection for life or property existed in the "rebel States." The act then provided that these States should be divided into five military districts under an officer not below the rank of brigadier-general, and made subject to the military authority of the United States. With South Carolina, North Carolina formed the second district. The commander of each district was required to protect all persons in their rights

and to suppress insurrection, disorder and violence. In the punishment of offenders he was authorized to allow the local civil tribunals to take jurisdiction; or, if he deemed it necessary, to organize military commissions for the purpose. All interference with such tribunals by State authority was declared void. It was provided further that the people of any of the said States should be entitled to representation when they should have framed and ratified a constitution in conformity with the Constitution of the United States. This constitution was to be framed by a convention elected by the male citizens of the State, regardless of race, color or previous condition, with the exception of those persons disfranchized for participation in rebellion or for felony. All persons on whom disabilities would be imposed by the proposed fourteenth amendment to the Federal Constitution were disqualified from holding a seat in the convention or from voting for members. The constitutions thus framed, and providing that all persons whom the act made electors should enjoy the elective franchise, must then be approved by Congress. When representatives from any State were admitted to their seats by Congress, the preceding portions of the act would become inoperative for such State. Until the completion of this reconstruction, the existing civil governments were declared provisional, and liable at any time to modification or abolition. This was passed over the veto of the President. On March 23, 1867, a supplementary act was passed which provided that the district commanders should cause a registration to be made of all male citizens who could take a required oath as to their qualifications as electors. An election of delegates to a convention should then be held by the commanders. For the sake of giving the appearance of following the will of the people, the question of holding a convention was submitted at the same time. It was further provided that unless a majority of the registered voters took part in the election, and a majority in favor of the convention resulted, no convention should be held. Provision was made for boards of election, composed only of those who could take the "iron-clad" oath. To ratify the constitutions thus framed, a majority of the voters registered was necessary.

This bill was also vetoed by the President and passed over his veto.

After the adjournment of Congress, Attorney-General Stanberry sent to the President an interpretation of the acts which lessened considerably the power of the military commanders. Congress met again in July and passed another supplementary act interpreting the former acts. This gave the military commanders full power to make any removals from office that they might see fit. The registration boards were authorized to go behind the registration oath whenever they might think it necessary. This act, likewise, received the veto of the President, but was passed over it.

General Daniel E. Sickles was placed in command of the second military district in March, 1867. He reposed the greatest confidence in Governor Worth's judgment, and frequently consulted him, even having him come to Charleston as his guest for the purpose. He was convinced of his sincerity, and consulted him in regard to every appointment for North Carolina, and usually accepted his advice. But there was much in the carrying out of the congressional policy that he could not approve, and he often expressed himself fully to General Sickles and the President.

When General Canby took command, there was a different condition of affairs, for he was utterly regardless of the wishes of the people of the State, and equally regardless of their laws. But Governor Worth, in one instance at least, succeeded in doing the State a service with him. By his vigorous protests he prevented the appointment of A. W. Tourgee as a judge of the Superior Court, and secured the appointment of Colonel Clinton A. Cilly, who made an excellent officer.

Registration was carried on rapidly both of negroes and whites. There was strong opposition to the admission of the negro to the franchise. A plan was suggested that if the whites should all register and then refrain from voting the convention might be defeated. Governor Worth favored this scheme, and repeatedly urged the people to register. Immediately after the passage of the Reconstruction Act in March, Governor Holden, Judge

Settle and others held a convention and formed the Republican Party in North Carolina, and they advocated the adoption of these reconstruction measures. The convention received a majority of the registered voters, and the Republicans elected a large majority of the delegates, only thirteen Conservatives being chosen. Among the Republican delegates were thirteen negroes and fifteen Northern men, later known as "carpet-baggers." Not a member of either party had hitherto been known in the State in a political way. This was the body that was to reconstruct the fundamental law of the State.

A constitution was framed based largely upon the constitutions of the various Northern States. This was due to the "carpet-baggers," who dominated the body and who desired to engraft "Northern civilization" upon the body politic. The convention provided for the election of State and county officers and of members of Congress, and also provided for the submission of the new constitution to the people. The Republicans nominated W. W. Holden for governor and the Conservatives nominated Z. B. Vance. The latter declined, and Thomas S. Ashe was selected to head the ticket.

Governor Worth was approached in regard to being a candidate, but refused to consider it, not desiring the position, and feeling that another candidate would have a better chance of success. The issue dividing the people was chiefly the adoption of the proposed constitution conferring suffrage on the negroes, who, however, were allowed to vote at the election, while thousands of white men were disfranchised.

The election resulted in a Republican victory. Most of the North Carolinians chosen were laboring under disabilities, but these were removed by Congress on the same day that the new constitution was approved. An act was passed declaring the State entitled to representation whenever the legislature should ratify the fourteenth amendment. Governor Holden called the legislature into session, and on July 1, 1869, took the oath of office. The facts of his assuming control can best be told by quoting the following protest sent to him by Governor Worth :

"Governor W. W. Holden, Raleigh, North Carolina.

"SIR: Yesterday morning I was verbally notified by Chief Justice Pearson that, in obedience to a telegram from General Canby, he would, to-day, at 10 o'clock A.M., administer to you the oaths required preliminary to your entering upon the discharge of the duties of civil governor of the State, and that thereupon you would demand my office.

"I intimated to the judge my opinion that such proceeding was premature, even under the reconstruction legislation of Congress, and that I should probably decline to surrender the office to you. At sundown yesterday evening I received from Colonel Williams, commandant of this military post, an extract from General Orders No. 12, of General Canby, as follows:

(Extract.)

"To facilitate the organization of the new State government, the following appointments are made: To be governor of North Carolina, W. W. Holden, governor elect, *vice* Jonathan Worth, removed. To be lieutenant-governor, Tod R. Caldwell, original vacancy. To take effect July 1st, on the meeting of the General Assembly of North Carolina.'

"I do not recognize the validity of the late election under which you and those co-operating with you claim to be invested with the civil government of the State.

"You have no evidence of your election save the certificate of a major-general of the United States Army. I regard all of you as, in effect, appointees of the military power of the United States, and not as deriving your power from the consent of those you claim to govern.

"Knowing, however, that you are backed by military force here, which I could not resist if I would, I do not deem it necessary to offer a futile opposition, but vacate the office without the ceremony of actual eviction, offering no further opposition than this my protest.

"I would submit to actual expulsion in order to bring before the Supreme Court of the United States the question as to the constitutionality of the legislation under which you claim to be the rightful governor of the State if the past action of that tribunal furnished any hope of a speedy trial.

"I surrender the office to you under what I deem military duress, without stopping, as the occasion would well justify, to comment upon the singular coincidence that the present State government is surrendered as without legality to him whose own official sanction but three years ago proclaimed it valid.

"I am very respectfully,

"JONATHAN WORTH,

"Governor of North Carolina."

The severe labors of his position had told upon Governor Worth greatly, and he was far from well. Entire recovery never came again. Had he been a younger man and lived, there would doubtless have been for him in later years more honors at the hands of a grateful State. But his work was done, and he died at "Sharon," his Raleigh home, on September 5, 1869, and was buried in Oakwood Cemetery in that city. His life work is thus summed up in the monument above his grave in Oakwood Cemetery:

"LEGISLATOR, CHIEF FINANCIAL OFFICER
AND GOVERNOR OF HIS NATIVE STATE.
FAITHFUL IN ALL."

Governor Worth and his wife, Martitia (Daniel) had eight children: Rosana Cornelia, who married John McNeill, of Cumberland County; Lucy Jane, who married Joseph John Jackson, of Chatham County; David Gaston, who married Miss Julia Stickney, of Sandy Hill, New York; Eunice Louisa, who died unmarried; Elvira Evelynna, who married Samuel Spencer Jackson, of Chatham County, December 25, 1856; Mr. Jackson died in 1875; and two years later she married Samuel Walker, who died within three months. In 1883 she married Mr. E. N. Moffit.

The sixth child was Sarah Corinne, who married Dr. William Roberts, of Edenton, and becoming widowed, she married Dr. Hamilton C. Jackson, of Chatham; Adelaide Ann, who married William Henry Bagley, of Perquimans; and Mary Martitia, who died unmarried.

J. G. de Rouhac Hamilton.



In 1832, when just twenty-one years of age, Dr. Worth had the good fortune to be united in marriage to Sarah, a daughter of Peter Dicks, Esq., and his wife was indeed a helpmeet to him in life. Noted for her goodness and piety, and a woman of great practical sense, she exerted a beneficial influence not merely in the family circle, but among all who were so fortunate as to be brought into association with her. She was widely known and greatly esteemed for her superior excellence and for those fine traits of character that were so admirably blended in her person; and during her life she was the object of the loving devotion of her husband and family.

Having settled in Montgomery County, Dr. Worth engaged in farming, and became successful in that vocation; but in addition his enterprising spirit led him also to engage in mining for gold and likewise merchandising. Some years later he moved his residence to Randolph County and established a general store at Asheboro, which drew to it a large trade, and by his honest dealing and fair trading he won the esteem and good will of all the people of that section. A man of humane feelings, sympathetic and kindly in his disposition, and active and energetic, he befriended those with whom he came in contact, and was esteemed generally by the entire community. He wielded a strong influence, which year by year grew more potent as the worth and stability of his character became more firmly established by the tests of experience and the passage of time.

On the formation of the Whig Party, like his elder brother, Jonathan Worth, who was a leading lawyer and interested in political matters, Dr. Worth himself followed the leadership of Henry Clay, and attached himself to that party.

He was a man of sound common sense and vigorous intellect, and possessed a clear conception of public questions. Not gifted as an orator, he was forceful in the presentation of his views, and united in a remarkable degree humor and homely illustrations to a sincerity of purpose that drew men to him. His integrity of character inspired confidence, while his genial good nature won popular regard, which was strengthened by his business qualifica-

tions, his plain and direct manner of discussing public matters and his superior understanding of all the details which he elucidated. His first appearance in public life was as senator for the district composed of Moore and Montgomery, in the year 1842; and he was re-elected in 1844 and again in 1848. This last session was one of the most important in the annals of the State, and Dr. Worth threw his influence in favor of the beneficent legislation of that day. Particularly did he support the measures of that session for the betterment of the free schools, and he voted for the appropriation by the State of \$2,000,000 for the construction of the North Carolina Railroad, and otherwise cooperated with the progressive men of that Assembly.

Although a Union man up to the time that hostilities broke out, in 1861, yet when the conflict came, his sympathies were with his people, and toward the end of the war between the States he was at one time the commanding officer of the Seventy-sixth Regiment, then known as the Sixth Reserves, being the Senior Reserves, which was organized in November, 1864. In the controversies that came after the war he supported his brother, Jonathan Worth, for governor, and antagonized the Reconstruction measures of 1867.

In the excited period of 1869 and 1870 he was strongly opposed to the Holden administration, and at the election in August, 1870, he was elected senator from Randolph and Moore counties. That was a most interesting period of political action. The treasury was empty. A multitude of bad laws unsuited to the people of the State had been passed by the Republican legislature of 1868, and Governor Holden was impeached by the House of Representatives for declaring the counties of Alamance and Caswell in insurrection and subverting the constitution of the State. The old State debt amounted to some \$16,000,000, and the bonds issued by the preceding legislature amounted to an equal sum. There was no hope in the impoverished condition of the people, whose means and resources had been swept away by the great war, to pay even a moderate interest on the full debt or to provide for paying the principal. Dr. Worth was a practical man, and

took a judicious and correct view of the various measures that came up for consideration. As a senator he gave his vote for the conviction of the impeached governor; and he addressed himself toward securing the repeal of the existing bad legislation and the enactment of new laws that would be of advantage to the people of the State. In particular was he solicitous to bring about a fair and equitable adjustment of the State debt, and he introduced a bill in the Senate on that subject, which passed the House also, but the creditors were not content to accept the terms offered and the measure was inoperative. Dr. Worth's course in the Senate so commended him to his constituents that at the next election he was returned to that body, and again he made a most excellent legislator.

Treasurer Jenkins resigning his position as treasurer of the State, Governor Brogden tendered that position to Dr. Worth, and being nominated by the Democrats in 1876, he was elected to that office for a term of four years.

Indeed, in the Democratic convention there seemed to be but one opinion as to who should be nominated for State treasurer, and that was but the reflex of the general thought pervading the State. He was nominated by acclamation, and his name added strength to the ticket. Colonel Kenan, who was on the same ticket for attorney-general, has remarked that "Dr. Worth's name was one of the strongest names that was ever on a State ticket in North Carolina, and he was in the fight in the memorable campaign. He held the affections and highest regard of every man with whom he came in contact, and was loved in official circles."

That campaign, indeed, was a memorable and important one. The white people of the State had obtained possession of the legislature amid the excitement of the Kirk War in 1870. They had lost ground by their abortive effort to call a convention in 1871, and were defeated in the State election of 1872, although still holding control of the legislature. In 1874 the great issue of social equality tended largely to consolidate the whites, and two years later a governor and State officers were for the first time elected by the Democratic people. To that result Dr. Worth

contributed largely. His name added strength to the ticket, and tended to allay apprehensions as to what the Democratic administration might do if entrusted with power.

Indeed, in sober, staid North Carolina, so little given to quick confidences, no man whose life had not displayed, in rare degree, both financial ability and personal integrity could have been thus chosen to take charge of the financial affairs of the State at a time of so much difficulty and embarrassment. Dr. Worth did not disappoint the expectation of his friends. In his office he displayed unusual administrative capacity, and, drawing to his aid an efficient corps of clerks, he transacted the growing affairs of his department with promptness and efficiency. His honesty of character, in speech as well as in dealings, now became proverbial, and he stood in financial circles as the embodiment of that sentiment which before the war had won for the State the name of "honest old North Carolina."

He again urged the adoption of measures to adjust the State debt, and had the satisfaction of being the chief instrument, as State treasurer, in bringing about the final settlement of the debt on such a fair and equitable basis that, with but few exceptions, it was satisfactory to all the bondholders, as well as agreeable to the people of the State. By his advice, also, the tax laws were so revised and amended as to produce a sufficiency of revenue for public purposes without being oppressive and burdensome to the taxpayers. He was a firm friend of economy in public affairs, and by his wise administration of financial matters, without any great increase in taxation, during his term as treasurer the State went forward in the great work of public education and enlarging the public charities. In all the notable advance that was made during the splendid administration of Governor Jarvis, Dr. Worth, who was a member of the Governor's Council, and who was on a footing of most cordial friendship and intimacy with Governor Jarvis, had his full share; and these two gentlemen labored together for the attainment of those objects which made that administration the most brilliant and most fruitful in public benefits that has occurred in the history of the State.

Re-elected to his office in 1880, he served altogether more than eight years as treasurer of the State.

In 1885, at the end of Jarvis's administration, all of the State officers who had been first elected in 1876 gave place to other deserving and meritorious party leaders. Under that administration the State had enjoyed a period of repose and of great prosperity, and its close was signalized by a State exposition, held at Raleigh for six weeks in the fall of 1884, that at once was an evidence of the advance in industrial lines and the general diffusion of wealth among the people.

On retiring from his office, whose duties he had so satisfactorily performed, Dr. Worth applied himself with vigor to his private affairs. But few men in the State were more successful in business. To a sound judgment he united capacity and great energy, and at the time of his death he was at the head of a number of the soundest institutions in North Carolina. He was president of the Bank of Randolph and of the Southern Stock Mutual Fire Insurance Company. He engaged in cotton manufacturing, and was the proprietor of the Worth Manufacturing Company, which operated large cotton mills at Worthville and Central Falls, in Randolph County. His industrial enterprises were extensive and very successful, and Dr. Worth was one of the wealthiest men of his section of the State.

Notwithstanding Dr. Worth's great age, his mind up to the very day of his death was perfectly clear, and he continued to direct the management of his affairs to the very last with intelligence and a discriminating judgment.

Chief among Dr. Worth's traits of character was his sincerity. He abhorred duplicity. Simple and unostentatious in his tastes, his course was ever marked by candor and directness. As a public man he was patriotic, and all his aims were to benefit the people and the State. As he himself once expressed it: "My earnest wish has been to be useful to the State." And not merely did he serve the people well by a prompt and faithful discharge of his high trust as treasurer of the State, but the benefit that resulted from the proverbial honesty of his character was in itself a distinct

service. Its influence was very beneficial on others, while its effect was honorable to the people and to the State.

As a friend and citizen, Dr. Worth was unselfish, disinterested, of wide sympathies and zealous in behalf of those men and of those purposes in which he became interested. He inherited the simple life and the simple faith of his Quaker ancestry. But it was not until he was well advanced in years that he made a public profession of religious conviction. The occasion is even now well remembered. It was some twenty-five years before his death that a Quaker revival meeting was held in the Presbyterian Church in Asheboro. Dr. Worth had been attending, and becoming deeply interested, he attended night and day. After a week of this service, he arose before the congregation, and all eyes were turned to his well-known form. With great emotion, he audibly repeated the familiar verse:

"Just as I am, without one plea,
But that thy blood was shed for me,
And that Thou biddest me come to Thee,
Oh! Lamb of God, I come, I come."

There was not a dry eye in the house, for all knew well what that profession meant by such a man as Dr. Worth. He went home, and calling his family together, led them in prayer; and such a prayer as it was, said one of those who was present, can never be forgotten. A few months before his death a minister of the Word, one of his own faith, a Quaker, spent ten days with him in his home, and he had him to go into his room daily and read the Bible to him and pray with him, and the tears would roll down his furrowed cheeks as his frame was swept by emotion.

Thus were his last days spent, and he passed away in the early morning of April 5, 1900, in the ninetieth year of his age, having enjoyed through life the esteem and regard of his fellow-citizens more thoroughly than usually falls to the lot of man.

S. A. Ashe.



JOSEPH ADDISON WORTH



JOSEPH ADDISON WORTH was the third son of Dr. David and Eunice Worth, and was born in Guilford County, North Carolina, on the 4th of March, 1820. His ancestors were of sturdy but peace-loving Quaker stock, his great-great-great-grandfather coming to the American colonies from England in the reign of Charles II., and settling at Nantucket. His grandfather, Daniel Worth, was born in Massachusetts on the 10th day of February, 1739, in the reign of George II., and in early manhood he settled in Guilford County, where he died on the 10th of July, 1830.

Joseph Addison Worth received the ordinary common-school teaching and training within the reach of people of moderate means in those days, and his quick mind was fruitful soil for the strenuous labors of the village pedagogue, though he was never a book lover. His practical nature found scope in "doing things."

Young Addison Worth was reared in the discipline and tenets of the Society of Friends, but when only twenty years of age love proved more powerful than the Quaker faith, and he forfeited his religious birthright by marrying, on the 20th of August, 1840, Fatima Walker, a fair girl outside of the Friends, and throughout a life companionship of more than fifty years she gave him no cause to repent his choice.

Joseph Addison Worth moderately prospered for a few years

after his marriage, but a country neighborhood was a "pent-up Utica" to his restless physical and mental activities, and in 1852 he removed with his small family to Fayetteville, North Carolina, to better his fortunes. Here he engaged in business with varying success for many years, first with the late Joseph Utley, under the firm name of Worth & Utley; next with the late William P. Elliott, as Worth & Elliott; subsequently being head of the grocery house of Worth, Wightman & Company, successors to the late Henry L. Myrover, a leading wholesale merchant.

Mr. Worth was the soul of energy, and possessed a great store of hard common sense; and one of his chief characteristics was to find a way to overcome apparently insurmountable obstacles. During the war he was the most important business man in Fayetteville. He carried much on his shoulders. The Confederate arsenal there became a great arsenal of construction; and there being a dearth of material, and everything having to be created, the advice and assistance of Mr. Worth, who was so eminently practical, were often invaluable. He was freely consulted by Colonel F. L. Childs, the energetic commanding officer of the arsenal, and his assistant, the editor-in-chief of this work, and was always found ready to promote the government work by his best and most unselfish endeavors. In those times of difficulty and tribulation Mr. Worth was irrepressible in his zeal, in his cheerfulness, in his good humor and hopefulness. When one was dismayed by adverse circumstances, a consultation with Mr. Worth restored good heart, and usually opened a practicable way to surmount the obstacles. His information was extensive and very serviceable. Always busy, his big heart was yet full of human sympathy. No one in distress ever appealed to him in vain. To the poor and needy he was an almoner, and his life in those days was a benefaction to the community. To alleviate suffering was a chief care, and he even grew poppies to afford a supply of opium, and he otherwise addressed himself to supplying necessaries of which the people were deprived because of the blockade of the Confederate ports.

The general paralysis of industrial and mercantile effort after the Civil War directed Addison Worth's energies into other fields,

and he found fitting exercise for them in the arduous and responsible position of general agent of a line of steamers plying between Fayetteville and Wilmington, two of which were the *Governor Worth*, named in honor of his brother, and the *Hurt*. He speedily mastered all the details of the boating business thoroughly, and during all the years of his service, which lasted to within a short time of his death, he gave unqualified satisfaction.

In 1875 the Democrats of Cumberland County selected Joseph Addison Worth as the man pre-eminently fitted to lead the party as a candidate for a seat in the constitutional convention against the late Judge R. P. Buxton, a leading and influential member of the Republican Party. Mr. Worth was in no sense a politician, but he accepted the task assigned to him as he did every other duty demanded at his hands by his fellow-citizens. His campaign was one of the most extraordinary in the political annals of Cumberland County. Making no pretensions to oratory, posing not as a public speaker, Mr. Worth made a canvass which attracted large crowds wherever he appeared. His speeches bubbled with wholesome humor, sparkled with keen wit and flashed with sarcasm, while they showed a full realization of all the important issues which were involved. He was defeated; at that time it was a matter of course. He and his friends knew that he was leading a "forlorn hope;" but in spite of defeat he came out of the contest crowned with honors.

Joseph Addison Worth was a man of powerful physique, about 5 feet 10 inches in height, with broad shoulders and massive frame, and was somewhat plethoric in habit. He had a finely developed head and a strong face, a square jaw, betokening force of character, and heavy, black, beetling eyebrows. His character was in consonance with his physical characteristics. He was bold, aggressive, and in his walk and conversation set forth the Quaker's "yea and nay"—and that was the end of it.

A remarkable instance of his shrewdness, and also of the singular temperament of the man, was brought out during the days of Reconstruction, when North Carolina was part of the military district of General Canby, with headquarters at Charles-

ton, South Carolina. A Federal officer had been sent with a force of soldiers to take command of the post of Fayetteville. His reputation had preceded him as an overbearing, tyrannical official, as a hater of the South, and above all as cherishing malevolent feelings against the people of Fayetteville for their devotion to the Confederate cause. To the astonishment and dismay of every one, Mr. Worth sought this officer out, approached him with marked cordiality, and invited him to make his house his headquarters. There he invited prominent people to meet him, had on the sideboard good wine or whiskey for his refreshment, provided evening card parties for his amusement, and, in short, extracted the claws of this dangerous animal, who, during his administration of the affairs of the post, was as harmless as a lamb, with one exception, which his host could not control. The friends of Mr. Worth, who had either sorrowfully deprecated his course or violently execrated it, came afterward to thank him for his real service in behalf of the well-being of the community. He passed it by in his candid, offhand manner. "It was nothing," he said; "the tiger was loose, and I just caged him."

Mr. Worth's home life was very happy. In his household there was no friction. The children were trained to obedience by love and not from fear. He was master of the roof-tree; but while not an uxorious husband, he left the management of all domestic affairs to his wife, whom he called among his friends "the Madam."

Joseph Addison Worth was not a religious man in the sense of being a churchman, for he was rarely seen at the services of any denomination. But no man had more reverence for God and the truths of Holy Writ, and his biographer once heard him in scathing words rebuke a young man for dealing lightly with sacred things. His wife was a zealous and conscientious member of the Presbyterian Church, and his children were reared in that faith.

Joseph Addison Worth was faithful to his friends, and followed the advice of Polonius to Laertes :

"The friends thou hast, and their adoption tried,
Grapple them to thy soul with hooks of steel."

Nothing was too good in his eye for a valued friend, and nothing too kindly for a needy neighbor. He was very hospitable, as befitted him, coming from the breed and blood that he did; but his hospitality was without ostentation or parade. He used to say: "I want my friends to come in on me without any 'frills.'"

Mr. Worth was very fond of a game of whist, and rarely passed an evening without his "rubber." He used to relate with no little gusto the anecdote of the reply of Talleyrand to the young man who sneeringly said that he had never taken the trouble during life to learn to play cards: "Ah! young man, what a desolate old age is before you!"

The subject of this sketch had issue by his marriage the following children: Albert, a brave Confederate soldier, after the war a skilled steamboat captain, now a resident of Elizabeth City, North Carolina; Miriam, who became Mrs. Duncan O'Hanlan, now dead; Louisa, who married Mr. Anders of Bladen County, also dead; John, who succeeded him for a time as agent of the steamers, who has passed away; Katherine, now Mrs. Thomas Murphy of Salisbury; Irene, now Mrs. J. S. Moody, wife of a distinguished rector of an Episcopal Church; Augusta, now Mrs. N. A. Sinclair, wife of State Senator Sinclair, and a leading member of the Fayetteville bar; Stephen G., fish commissioner in the service of the government at Beaufort. Two boys died in infancy.

Joseph Addison Worth died at his home on Haymount, the beautiful western suburb of Fayetteville, on the 8th of February, 1893, after a period of declining health, aged seventy-three years. The writer, who had known him intimately for many years, never knew him to be false to his convictions of right or recreant to the honesty of his manhood. He once said, when both he and his friends knew that the end was not far off: "My life has been but a poor affair, I fear, and when I go hence perhaps I carry not full sheaves. But," he went on after a pause, with something of his old smile on his wan face, and in his homely way of talk, "I've always tried to better things around me."

And the world was the better for his having lived.

J. H. Myrover.

died in 1844. He had a family of twelve children, of whom Governor Jonathan Worth was the third and the oldest to reach maturity, while Barzillai, the subject of this sketch, was the youngest. The other children were: Ruth, who married Sidney Porter, of Connecticut, and lived in Greensboro, where a number of her descendants reside; Miriam, who married Barnabas Coffin and lived in Indiana; John Milton Worth; Evelynna Worth, who married Nathan Davis, of Richmond, Ind.; Louisa Worth, who married William Clark, of Randolph County, and moved to Indiana; Thomas Clarkson Worth, who married Carolina Arthur, of Nantucket; and Joseph Addison Worth.

Dr. David Worth, having lost the first two of his children in infancy because the nearest physician was thirty miles away, and realizing that some medical knowledge would be of service to him in bringing up a family, purchased a few good medical books, and read them with so much success that in time he deemed himself qualified to practice, and to this end went (in his sulky), in 1815, to Philadelphia and spent the summer. On his return he practiced with great success the remainder of his life, and stood high with all physicians, having just pretensions to distinction.

Dr. Worth was interested in all good and public enterprises, and, despite his profession, which made his an arduous life, he was chosen to serve his country in the legislatures of 1820, 1822 and 1823.

Barzillai Gardner was reared with a family of nine brothers and sisters on his father's plantation, receiving his early education in the neighborhood school, promoted by his father, Dr. Worth. At the age of eighteen he was sent for two years to the New Garden School, since known as Guilford College. On his return from this institution, in 1842, he took charge of Dr. John Milton Worth's business, who at that time was serving a term at Raleigh as senator from Moore and Montgomery counties. On his brother's return from his term of service he brought a daguerreotype of himself, and Mr. Worth was so pleased with it that he at once decided it was a profession that suited him could he but find means wherewith to secure the necessary training. The doctor

agreed to advance his brother the money, and he went immediately to Raleigh to learn the art from an operator by the name of Smily. It proved to be no easy art, and it was not until two years of patient application and perseverance that he was able to master it sufficiently to make it in any sense remunerative.

He went on to Philadelphia to secure better instructions, and finally succeeded so far as to reimburse his brother and have, after all expenses were met, his first thousand dollars. He now felt himself equipped to marry and begin life in earnest. On June 26, 1845, he was united to Miss Mary E. Carter of Davie County, North Carolina, one of a family of this name in Virginia of great prominence. She was also a granddaughter of Judge Archibald De Bow Murphey, a distinguished jurist of this State. Two years after his marriage he began merchandising in the little village of New Salem, in Randolph County. Here two children were born to him. After three years spent in this place, he moved to Ashboro and became a partner in a general merchandising business with his brother, Jonathan Worth.

Dr. T. C. Worth, a brother four years his senior, having removed to Wilmington to take the agency of the Cape Fear Steamboat Company, running between Wilmington and Fayetteville, believing this to be a very superior opening, advised him to come there. He accepted the proposition, and removed to the city in the fall of 1853. The firm of T. C. and B. G. Worth was then formed, and continued until the year 1862, when Dr. Worth fell a victim to yellow fever during the great epidemic of that fall. Both brothers had made wills, providing that the survivors (for the better settlement of all business) should continue for a year. During their partnership (which was a shipping and commission business) they were part owners and agents for two schooners, named the *Myrover* and the *Lilly*, sailing between Wilmington and New York; also two sailing to Philadelphia, called the *William L. Springs* and the *David Foust*. They were part owners and agents for the steamers *Hurt* and *Flora McDonald*, fine iron boats, which did a very successful business on the Cape Fear River between Fayetteville and Wilmington up to the close of the Civil War.

Dr. Worth, during the period of this partnership, endorsed drafts on a cotton spinner in Baltimore for a friend to the extent of \$30,000. The firm on which they were drawn failed, and he became responsible for that amount. To try and save himself as best he could, he attended the sale of the two cotton mills, and bought them in at \$30,000, the Commercial Bank of Wilmington furnishing the money. During the year succeeding his death, and acting under the terms of wills which both had made, the firm now making money rapidly (such as it was in 1863), Mr. B. G. Worth paid off the entire indebtedness to the bank, and secured the whole interest in the Baltimore property for the heirs of his brother, and at the close of the war went on to Baltimore and succeeded in selling the property for \$45,000. Thus what had seemed a great calamity proved a blessing in the end. The firm, being large shippers of peanuts, had great quantities stored in Wilmington. After the first year of the Civil War there arose a demand for oil which would be suitable for running the cotton mills of the South. Mr. Worth conceived the idea of using their large stock of peanuts in the manufacture of oil, and to this end secured a press and began the experiment in a small way. It proved a success and was better than anything on the market. He began the sale of it at three dollars a gallon and at the close of the war it readily brought thirty dollars a gallon, and was used extensively, being shipped to every part of the South during the entire Civil War. The large profits accruing from this oil business enabled Mr. Worth to take up the notes held against the T. C. Worth estate, and thus secured the valuable Baltimore property.

In 1866 Mr. Worth decided to make a change in his business, and he went to New York in the fall of that year and formed a partnership with Mr. C. B. Dibble of Granby, Connecticut, investing all his means in a general commission business, which was prosperous for a time.

In 1870, upon the death of Mr. N. G. Daniel, of the firm of D. G. Worth and N. G. Daniel, and at the instance of D. G. Worth, he returned to Wilmington (leaving his name in the firm of

Dibble, Worth & Company), and formed the partnership of Worth & Worth, composed of D. G. Worth and B. G. Worth. In the early part of 1872 the firm of Dibble, Worth & Company were forced to suspend business. Being liable for the debts of the concern, and the failure proving a bad one, he went immediately to New York and spent about a year, assuming the responsibility of winding up this business. The indebtedness was so great that a compromise was agreed upon, and after exhausting the resources of the firm and all his personal means, he was still under an indebtedness of about thirty-seven thousand dollars, of so sacred a character that he felt it must be paid. The business of Worth & Worth prospered, and this debt was paid off in about ten years, leaving him free to start life over.

While this failure was a most distressing event, the many kindnesses shown him personally were among the most cherished memories of his life.

On November 23, 1897, Mr. D. G. Worth died, and again the firm name was changed, a corporation being formed under the style of "The Worth Company," composed of B. G. Worth and the heirs of D. G. Worth. B. G. Worth was named president and C. W. Worth manager. Thus he has been in business in this city for fifty-two years, with the exception of four years spent in New York.

This sketch of the business life of Mr. Worth indicates that there had been but little time left him for official service as a citizen, and yet it would not be true to infer that his duty in this particular had been neglected. He served the county of New Hanover several years as one of the commissioners, and he has been largely interested in the public schools, serving as a committeeman a number of years, and as a citizen of probity and influence he has been a large factor in whatever cause he considered for the welfare of the city and State, giving material aid to public enterprises for developing business and prosperity. And in public matters his intelligent, sound judgment made him influential in directing public sentiment for the good of the community. His voice and influence were for the right, regardless of popularity, a

characteristic of the Worth family, so well known and esteemed in the State, and derived from a strong ancestry, driven from their England home to find freedom to worship God according to the dictates of their conscience.

Mr. Worth has been a wise counselor and friend to the young men of the city, his example of rugged honesty teaching the beauty of a character strong in honor and righteousness, and his kind words and cheerful willingness to help them when such help meant everything, has made him loved and esteemed by the many recipients of his kindness.

Perhaps his fondness for the soil has been a great factor for good that should be considered. He made it his business to have a good garden, and it has been his delight to work in it in the early morning, and he has been proud to exhibit the fine fruit and vegetables he cultivated in his garden, and his experiments resulted in the successful cultivation in the winter of lettuce, and probably led to the general cultivation of this favorite spring edible, which has become a large source of revenue in this region from carload shipments to Northern markets, and no doubt but this employment in his garden has been important in keeping him vigorous and strong in his old age.

But the crown upon the head of this venerable merchant and citizen will be "the crown of righteousness which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give him at that day." And the crowning glory of this useful life is his life in the church.

Mr. Worth united with the First Presbyterian Church very soon after his removal to Wilmington in 1853. In December, 1858, he was ordained a ruling elder, and continued in this office until his removal to New York in 1866. On his return from New York, in 1870, he was re-elected to the office, and is now the senior elder of the session. He was the superintendent of the Sunday-school for many years, and after he retired from this position taught a class of young men until infirmity compelled him reluctantly to retire from active service in the school. His sound judgment, even-tempered disposition, his open, kindly manner, and, above all, his unassuming, modest deportment, has made him the object of

reverence and love to his pastor, his brother elders and the members of his own church and congregation and to all the churches of the vicinity. He has always, taking into consideration his ability, been the most liberal contributor to the church and its various causes and necessities, and he states that the Lord has given it all back, and more. Such has been the life of this honored citizen, man and Christian. Nature's nobleman, a Christian gentleman—who can estimate the value of such a life to the community, to the church and even to the State? How shall we call it? Has it been successful? Let the words of the Master answer these questions.

“But it shall not be so among you, but whosoever will be great among you let him be your minister, and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.”

Mr. B. G. Worth had seven children. Jonathan died in infancy. Archibald Carter married Lizzie Anderson, and resides in New Jersey. Cornelia Murphy married George R. French. William Elliott married Miss Nelly Shay, of New York. Mary Jane Worth married Wm. J. Woodward. Joseph B. Worth married Miss Brink, and resides at Petersburg, Va. Julia Ada Worth married Graham Herring, of Clinton.

C. H. Robinson.

June
 daughter of the late Wm. Brink
 first married to Wm. Woodward, N.C.



once with the best in his class, and graduated in 1853 with the first-honor men.

His life at the University was marked by more than scholarship, though that naturally was his first ambition. It was from the beginning a life of purity and of quiet, immovable adherence to what he understood to be his duty. He was loyal to the faculty and the government of the institution. He was an active and interested member of the Dialectic Society, a genial and popular companion to his comrades and a very steady friend. One could always calculate upon David Worth's standpoint in all important occurrences, because he was always known to be for law and order. The anecdotes still told by those who knew him in college are of a piece with his life in maturity, and show him a quiet, self-controlled youth, but with a high and firm spirit, which sustained him well on occasions when others flinched and went down.

Immediately after his graduation he married Miss Julia A. Stickney, and in this partnership secured his domestic happiness and prosperity for life. He began his business life in Randolph County, in connection with his father. In 1861 he removed to Wilmington, and was superintendent of government salt works there during the Civil War. Afterward he entered the commission business in Wilmington in partnership with Mr. N. G. Daniel, and on Mr. Daniel's death, in 1870, the firm of Worth & Worth was formed, and has enjoyed to this day a long and honorable career in that city.

David Worth was a man successful in all his undertakings. He took first distinction as a student; as a man of business he held the same rank. His plain sincerity and honesty of purpose were manifest, and it was soon understood that the firm of Worth & Worth meant business conducted not only on the best business methods, but on the fairest and most unselfish lines. Here was a man to swear to his own hurt and not change. More than financial success he valued the confidence and esteem of his associates and the community in which he had made his home, and more than public applause he valued the approval of his own conscience. His

rule for his own life was a short one: "Do the right thing." It was a passion with him to be "right." In the days of the "Filibusters," long since gone out into oblivion and dust, when ardent adventurers planned a military invasion of Cuba, an armed vessel of theirs on the way to Cuban waters stopped at Wilmington to coal. Worth & Worth was the only firm able to supply the sudden demand. The coal, however, was refused, could not be had at any price nor for any solicitor, because the day was a day which David Worth loved to honor. The Cuban expedition was broken off, and the sympathizers with the desperate undertaking found some consolation in hurling sarcastic epithets at the "pious Presbyterian" who had foiled them by his steady adherence to the fourth commandment.

In this refusal Mr. Worth was well known to have been actuated by no political principles for or against the Cuban promoters. He steadily kept clear all of his life of political engagements. In many important trusts he cheerfully served his fellow-men, but he avoided the undertaking of public duties for which he had no taste and had made no special preparation, and which would have drawn him out of the line of work he had marked out for himself. He was a keen, far-seeing man of affairs. He loved the marts of trade, and bent his energies to the building up and conducting of a great commercial business, where his experience, sagacity and integrity formed ever-increasing assets.

He was a member of the Wilmington Chamber of Commerce and of the Produce Exchange, being president of both at various times, and also president of the Navasso Guano Company for years. He was a member of several other city organizations and of the Board of Aldermen. To the prosperity of Wilmington he was always warmly devoted. For years a trustee of the State University, to this venerable institution his heart always turned with filial affection, giving it substantial as well as loving support. His annual visits to Chapel Hill at the University commencements were hailed by the old friends, who loved as he did to resort to those groves sacred to the memory of early youth and unbroken friendship. How firm his manly figure, how cordial his smile,

how bright his eye as he recalled those days—leaning against the old Davie poplar, strolling from one well-remembered resort to another or sitting at some old friend's table, reawakening the old college traditions and jokes, and the old college faculty.

All three of his sons who grew to manhood and its duties he rejoiced to send to the University to enjoy the same superior advantages. Of these sons Charles William, the oldest, still conducts the Worth firm, with the Worth reputation for integrity and ability; the second, George Clarkson, is a missionary from the Southern Presbyterian Church to China. James Spencer, who bore the name of his father's special college friend, died, alas! untimely.

In all the work of life David Worth was ever the calm, unassuming, public-spirited citizen of large, liberal views, giving generously and giving quietly. To the University, to the Y. M. C. A. and to the Orphans' Home of the synod his gifts were not altogether unknown, but from his hand in private flowed a steady stream of benevolence known only to its objects. In the Presbyterian Church, where he had been an active member almost from boyhood, he was a pillar of strength and loyalty. For years he was an office-bearer as deacon and as elder. The depth, sincerity and liberality of his religion no man could doubt, and he counted it a special blessing that all his sons knelt at the same altar with their parents. That their second son, Dr. George Worth, should have chosen to do missionary work in a heathen land was an added crown to their lives.

This well-rounded life continued in active and successful service full forty years. "In the long run and the large view, prosperity and the service of God are bound together. That is the idea of life and what our sense of justice seems to demand." We like to select certain characters and say of them with pride, "He was a typical North Carolinian"—a phrase that has come to mean a man not given to much talking, modest, brave, unpretentious, perhaps unambitious, but immensely serviceable when called into action. North Carolina has had and still has many such men. They have made her character and she is known by it.

His health had begun to fail two years before his death. Characteristically he set his house in order and awaited the final summons. After months of suffering borne with patient submission to the will of God, on the evening of November 21, 1897, he was released.

No common mourning was made for him. From every part of his native State, and from others, came warm testimony to the value of his life and example. The press was unanimous in paying loving and beautiful tributes to his memory. In the southeastern part of North Carolina, especially in the city of Wilmington, so long his home, public meetings of respect and lamentation were held by the citizens of every church, class and profession. No tokens of the universal sense of heavy loss were wanting. On the day of his funeral an immense procession followed all that was mortal of him to Oakdale Cemetery; the fine spirit that had informed the clay had sprung to its home in the bosom of its God, leaving in the hearts of the mourners

"An undying image there enshrined,
A sense of nobleness in humankind
Experience cannot dim, nor time destroy."

Mrs. C. P. Spencer.



served the Government as the United States Commissioner. He was a strong advocate of education and temperance.

William H. Worth was born on the 13th of July, 1839, in the county of Guilford, about seven miles south of Greensboro, and was raised amid rural surroundings. His earliest education was received at a Free School near his birth-place, and he later spent two years, 1854-1856, in New Garden Boarding School, which is now Guilford College, an institution for higher education established under the auspices of the Society of Friends. After leaving New Garden, Mr. Worth worked as a carpenter to pay for his tuition. In 1860 he was clerk for J. M. Worth & Co. at the village of Company Shops, now Burlington, in Alamance County, N. C. In 1861 he entered the machine shops of the North Carolina Railroad Company at the same place. Being a member of the Society of Friends, he took no part in the war between the States which immediately followed.

From 1866 to 1870 he was Assessor of Internal Revenue for the Third North Carolina District. After this he purchased a farm near Kinston, in Lenoir County, and there remained for nineteen years. When the Farmers' Alliance first organized in his section of the State, Mr. Worth identified himself with that body, and became Business Sub-Agent for the Alliance to which he belonged. Later he was made Business Agent of Lenoir County. In 1889 he became State Business Agent, and held the office until December 31, 1894, when he resigned to qualify as public Treasurer of North Carolina, having been elected to that post by the people of the State. During the five years that Mr. Worth served the Farmers' Alliance as State Business Agent his purchase in goods and supplies aggregated \$1,827,530, and with his sales of products ran to an amount of more than \$2,000,000. Upon the death of State Treasurer Donald W. Bain, Colonel S. McD. Tate was appointed successor to that gentleman by the Governor. At the succeeding election Colonel Tate received the Democratic nomination for the remaining half term (two years), but was defeated by Mr. Worth, who was on the Fusion ticket as a representative of the Populist Party, of which he was a mem-

ber. At the succeeding regular election Mr. Worth was elected for a full term of four years. During his term as Treasurer he held the respect of all the parties. Upon the close of his term it was discovered that through the defalcation of a trusted clerk the Treasury had been robbed of many thousands of dollars. When this came to his knowledge, Mr. Worth not only made over his entire property to cover the loss and protect his bondsmen, but, to complete the payment, he also secured from members of his household property upon which there was no legal claim whatever. By this act of honor and self-sacrifice neither the State nor any of the Treasurer's bondsmen were losers, though the result of years of toil was thereby swept from the possession of Mr. Worth to make good the shortage of another.

In practice and precept Mr. Worth stands firmly for the cause of temperance, and is also a believer in Prohibition. He is a close student of the Bible, and is also interested in biography. He is an advocate of popular education, and has been a trustee of Guilford College since 1899.

The maiden name of Mr. Worth's wife was Miss Sallie M. Henley. To her he was married on the 25th of April, 1872, and he is the father of four children, Hiram B.; Eunice, who married Charles D. Roberts; Ruth, who married Charles W. Petty; and Annie Henley Worth.

S. A. Ashe.



•
•







